THE WORKS
OF
Mr. William Shakespear.
VOLUME the THIRD.

LONDON:
Printed for Jacob Tonson in the Strand, MDCCXIV.
Volume the Third.

Containing,

Twelfth-Night: Or, What you will.

The Winter's Tale.

King John.

King Richard II.

Henry IV. Part I.
TWELFTH-NIGHT;
OR,
What You will.
A
COMEDY.
Dramatis Personæ.

O'sino, Duke of Illyria.
Sebastian, a young Gentleman, Brother to Viola.
Antonio, a Sea-Captain, Friend to Sebastian.
Valentine,
Curio,
Sir Toby Belch, Uncle to Olivia.
Sir Andrew Ague-cheek, a foolish Knight, pretending to Olivia.
A Sea-Captain, Friend to Viola.
Fabian, Servant to Olivia.
Malvolio, a fantastical Steward to Olivia.
Clown, Servant to Olivia.

Olivia, a Lady of great Beauty and Fortune, beloved by the Duke.
Viola, in love with the Duke.
Maria, Olivia's Woman.

Priest, Sailors, Officers, and other Attendants.

SCENE a City on the Coast of Illyria.

TWELFTH.
TWELFTH-NIGHT;

OR,

What You will.

ACT I. SCENE I.

SCENE The Palace.

Enter the Duke, Curio, and Lords.

Duke.

If Music be the Food of Love, play on,
Give me excess of it; that surfeiting
The Appetite may sicken, and so die.
That Strain again, it had a dying Fall:
O, it came o'er my Ear, like the sweet
Sound
That breaths upon a Bank of Violets,
Stealing, and giving Odour. Enough, no more;
'Tis not so sweet now, as it was before.
O Spirit of Love, how quick and fresh art thou!
That, notwithstanding thy Capacity
Receiveth as the Sea, Nought enters there,
Of what validity and pitch so e'er,
But falls into Abatement, and low Price,

A 4
Even in a Minute: so full of Shapes is Fancy,
That it alone is high fantastical.

Cur. Will you go hunt, my Lord?
Duke. What, Curio?
Cur. The Hart.

Duke. Why so I do, the noblest that I have:
O when mine Eyes did see Olivia first,
Methought she purg'd the Air of Pestilence;
That Infant was I turn'd into a Hart,
And my Desires like fell and cruel Hounds,
E'er since pursue me. How now, what News from her?

Enter Valentine.

Val. So please my Lord, I might not be admitted,
But from her Hand-maid do return this Answer:
The Element it self, 'till seven Years hence,
Shall not behold her Face at ample View;
But like a Cloystref s she will vailed walk,
And water once a Day her Chambers round,
With Eye-offending Brine: All this to season
A Brother's dead Love, which she would keep fresh
And lasting in her sad Remembrance.

Duke. O she that hath a Heart of that fine Frame,
To pay this Debt of Love but to a Brother,
How will she love, when the rich golden Shaft
Hath kill'd the Flock of all Affections else
That live in her? When Liver, Brain, and Heart,
These sovereign Thrones, are all supply'd, and fill'd
Her sweet Perfections with one self-same King:
Away before me, to sweet Beds of Flowers,
Love Thoughts lye rich, when canopy'd with Bowers.

[Exeunt.

SCENE II. The Street.

Enter Viola, a Captain and Sailors.

Vio. What Country, Friends, is this?
Cap. This is Illyria, Lady.
Vio. And what should I do in Illyria?
My Brother he is in Ephesus.
Perchance he is not drown'd; what think you, Sailors?

Cap.
Cap. It is perchance that you your self were fav'd.
Vio. O my poor Brother! And so perchance may he be.
Cap. True, Madam; and to comfort you with Chance,
Affair your self, after our Ship did split,
When you, and that poor Number saved with you,
Hung on your driving Boat: I saw your Brother,
Most provident in Peril, bind himself,
Courage and Hope both teaching him the Practice,
To a strong Mast that liv'd upon the Sea,
Where like Orion on the Dolphin's Back,
I saw him hold Acquaintance with the Waves,
So long as I could see.

Vio. For saying so, there's Gold:
Mine own Escape unfoldeth to my Hope,
Whereto thy Speech servest for Authority,
The like of him. Know'st thou this Country?
Cap. Ay, Madam, well; for I was bred and born.
Not three Hours Travel from this very Place.
Vio. Who governs here?
Vio. What is his Name?
Cap. Orsino.
Vio. Orsino! I have heard my Father name him,
He was a Batchelor then.

Cap. And so is now, or was so very late;
For but a Month ago I went from hence,
And then 'twas fresh in Murmurs, as you know;
What great ones do, the less will prattle of,
That he did seek the Love of fair Olivia.
Vio. What's she?

Cap. A virtuous Maid, the Daughter of a Count;
That dy'd some twelve Months since, then leaving her
In the Protection of his Son, her Brother,
Who shortly also dy'd; for whose dear Love,
They say, she had abjur'd the Sight
And Company of Men.
Vio. O that I serv'd that Lady,
And might not be deliver'd to the World,
Till I had made mine own Occasion mellow;
What my Estate is.
Cap. That were hard to compass,
Because she will admit no kind of Suit,
No, not the Duke's.

Vio. There is a fair Behaviour in thee, Captain;
   And tho' that Nature with a beauteous Wall
Doth oft close in Pollution; yet of thee,
I will believe, thou haft a Mind that suits
With this thy fair and outward Chiaracter.
I prethee, and I'll pay thee bounteously,
Conceal me what I am, and be my Aid,
For such Disguise as haply shall become
The Form of my Intent. I'll serve this Duke,
Thou shalt present me as an Eunuch to him,
It may be worth thy Pains; for I can sing,
And speak to him in many sorts of Musick,
That will allow me very worth his Service.
What else may hap, to Time I will commit,
Only shape thou thy Silence to my Wit.

Cap. Be you his Eunuch, and your Mute I'll be.
When my Tongue blabs, then let mine Eyes not see.

Vio. I thank thee; lead me on.          [Exeunt.

SCENE III. Olivia's House.

Enter Sir Toby, and Maria.

Sir To. What a Plague means my Neice to take the Death
of her Brother thus? I am sure Care's an Enemy to Life.

Mar. By my Troth, Sir Toby, you must come in earlier
a-Nights; your Neice, my Lady, takes great Exceptions
to your ill Hours.

Sir To. Why let her except, before excepted.

Mar. Ay, but you must confine your self within the
modest Limits of Order.

Sir To. Confine? I'll confine my self no finer than I am;
these Clothes are good enough to drink in, and so be these
Boots too; and they be not, let them hang themselves in
their own Straps.

Mar. That quaffing and drinking will undo you; I heard
my Lady talk of it Yesterdad, and of a foolish Knight
that you brought in one Night here, to be her Wooer?

Sir To,
What you will.

Sir To. Who, Sir Andrew Ague-check?
Mar. Ay, he.
Sir To. He's as tall a Man as any's in Illyria.
Mar. What's that to th'Purpose?
Sir To. Why, he has three thousand Ducats a Year.
Mar. Ay, but he'll have but a Year in all these Ducats: He's a very Fool, and a Prodigal.
Sir To. Fie, that you'll say so: He plays o'th' Viol-de-Gambo, and speaks three or four Languages Word for Word without Book, and hath all the good Gifts of Nature.
Mar. He hath indeed, almost natural; for besides that he's a Fool, he's a great Quarreler; and but that he hath the Gift of a Coward to allay the Gilt he hath in Quarrelling, 'tis thought among the Prudent, he would quickly have the Gift of a Grave.
Sir To. By this Hand they are Scoundrels and Subtractors that say so of him. Who are they?
Mar. They that add moreover, he's drunk nightly in your Company.
Sir To. With drinking Healths to my Neice: I'll drink to her as long as there is a Passage in my Throat, and Drink in Illyria. He's a Coward and a Coward that will not drink to my Neice 'till his Brains turn o'th' Toe like a Parish Top. What Wench? Castiliano vulgo; for here comes Sir Andrew Ague-face.

Enter Sir Andrew.

Sir And. Sir Toby Belch! How now, Sir Toby Belch?
Sir To. Sweet Sir Andrew.
Sir And. Bless you, fair Shrew.
Mar. And you too, Sir.
Sir To. Accost, Sir Andrew, accost.
Sir And. What's that?
Sir To. My Neice's Chamber-maid.
Sir And. Good Mistress Accost, I desire better Acquaintance.
Mar. My Name is Mary, Sir.
Sir And. Good Mistress Mary Accost.
Sir To. You mistake, Knight: Accost is, from her; board her, woo her, affaire her.
Sir And.
Sir And. By my Troth, I would not undertake her in this Company. Is that the Meaning of Accost?

Mar. Fare you well, Gentlemen.

Sir To. And thou let her part so, Sir Andrew, would thou might it never draw Sword again.

Sir And. And you part so, Mistress, I would I might never draw Sword again. Fair Lady, do you think you have Fools in Hand?

Mar. Sir, I have not you by th' Hand.

Sir And. Marry but you shall have, and here's my Hand.

Mar. Now, Sir, Thought is free: I pray you bring your Hand to th'Buttery Bar, and let it drink.

Sir And. Wherefore, Sweet Heart? What's your Metaphor?

Mar. It's dry, Sir.

Sir And. Why, I think so: I am not such an Ass, but I can keep my Hand dry. But what's your Jeth?

Mar. A dry Jeth, Sir.

Sir And. Are you full of them?

Mar. Ay, Sir, I have them at my Finger Ends: Marry, now I let go your Hand, I am barren. [Exit Maria.

Sir To. O Knight, thou lack'st a Cup of Canary: When did I see thee so put down?

Sir And. Never in your Life, I think, unless you see Canary put down: Methinks, sometimes I have no more Wit than a Christiant, or an ordinary Man has; but I am a great Eater of Beef, and I believe that do's harm to my Wit.

Sir To. No Question.

Sir And. And I thought that, I'd forswear it. I'll ride home, to Morrow, Sir Toby.

Sir To. Pour-quey, my dear Knight?

Sir And. What is pour-quey? Do, or not do? I would I had bestowed that time in the Tongues, that I have in Fencing, Dancing, and Bear-baiting: O had I but follow'd the Arts.

Sir To. Then hadst thou had an excellent Head of Hair.

Sir And. Why, would that have mended my Hair?

Sir To. Past Question, for thou seest it will not cool my Nature.

Sir And.
Sir And. But it becomes me well enough, do'st not?
Sir To. Excellent, it hangs like Flax on a Dittyaff; and I hope to see a Housewife take thee between her Legs, and spin it off.

Sir And. Faith I'll home to Morrow, Sir Toby, your Neice will not be seen, or if she be, it's four to one she'll none of me: The Duke himself here hard by, wooes her.

Sir To. She'll none o'th' Duke, she'll not match above her Degree, neither in Estate, Years, nor Wit; I have heard her swear. Tut, there's Life in't Man.

Sir And. I'll stay a Month longer. I am a fellow o'th' strangest Mind i'th' World: I delight in Masks and Revels sometimes altogether.

Sir To. Art thou good at these Kick-shaws, Knight?
Sir And. As any Man in Illyria, whatsoever he be, under the Degree of my Betters, and yet I will not compare with an old Man.

Sir To. What is thy Excellence in a Galliard, Knight?
Sir And. Faith, I can cut a Caper.

Sir To. And I can cut the Mutton to't.

Sir And. And I think I have the Back-trick, simply as strong as any Man in Illyria.

Sir To. Wherefore are these things hid? Wherefore have these Gifts a Curtain before 'em? Are they like to take Dust, like Mistris Moll's Picture? Why dost thou not go to Church in a Galliard, and come home in a Coranto? My very Walk should be a Jig! I would not so much as make Water but in a Sink-a-pace: What dost thou mean? Is it a World to hide Virtues in? I did not think, by the Excellent Constitution of thy Leg, it was form'd under the Star of a Galliard.

Sir And. Ay, 'tis strong, and it does indifferent well in a flame-colour'd Stocken. Shall we set about some Revels?

Sir To. What shall we do else; were we not born under Taurus?

Sir And. Taurus? That's Sides and Heart.

Sir To. No, Sir, it is Legs and Thighs. Let me see thee Caper; Ha, higher: Ha, ha, excellent. [Exeunt.

SCENE
SCENE IV. The Palace.

Enter Valentine, and Viola in Man's Attire.

Val. If the Duke continue these Favours towards you, Cesario, you are like to be much advanc'd; he hath known you but three Days, and already you are no Stranger.

Vio. You either fear his Humour, or my Negligence, that you call in question the Continuance of his Love. Is he inconstant, Sir, in his Favours?

Val. No, believe me.

Enter Duke, Curio, and Attendants.

Vio. I thank you: Here comes the Duke.

Duke. Who saw Cesario, hoa?

Vio. On your Attendance, my Lord, here.

Duke. Stand you a while aloof. Cesario, Thou know'st no less, but all: I have unclasp'd To thee the Book even of my secret Soul. Therefore, good Youth, address thy Gate unto her, Be not deny'd Acces, stand at her Doors, And tell them, there thy fixed Foot shall grow Till thou have Audience.

Vio. Sure, my noble Lord, If she be so abandon'd to her Sorrow As it is spoke, she never will admit me.

Duke. Be clamorous, and leap all civil Bounds, Rather than make unprofited Return.

Vio. Say I do speak with her, my Lord, what then?

Duke. O then, unfold the Passion of my Love, Surprize her with Discourse of my dear Faith; It shall become thee well to act my Woes; She will attend it better in thy Youth, Than in a Nuncio's of more grave Aspect.

Vio. I think not so, my Lord.

Duke. Dear Lad, believe it: For they shall yet belie thy happy Years, That say thou art a Man: Diana's Lip Is not more smooth, and rubious; thy small Pipe Is as the Maiden's Organ, shrill and found, And all is semblative a Woman's Part.
What you will.

I know thy Constellation is right apt
For this Affair: Some four or five attend him,
All if you will; for I my self am best
When left in Company. Prosper well in this,
And thou shalt live as freely as thy Lord,
To call his Fortunes thine.

Vio. I'll do my best
To woo your Lady; yet a barful Strife,
Who e'er I woo, my self would be his Wife. [Exeunt.

SCENE V. Olivia's House.

Enter Maria, and Clown.

Mar. Nay, either tell me where thou hast been, or I will not open my Lips so wide as a Bristle may enter, in way of thy Excuse; my Lady will hang thee for thy Absence.

clo. Let her hang me; he that is well hang'd in this World needs fear no Colours.

Mar. Make that good.

clo. He shall see none to fear.

Mar. A good Lenten Answere: I can tell thee where that Saying was born, of I fear no Colours.

clo. Where, good Mistress Mary?

Mar. In the Wars, and that may you be bold to say in your Foolery.

clo. Well, God give them Wisdom that have it; and thofe that are Fools let them ufe their Talents.

Mar. Yet you will be hang'd for being so long absent, or be turn'd away; is not that as good as a hanging to you?

clo. Many a good Hanging prevents a bad Marriage; and for turning away, let Summer bear it out.

Mar. You are resolute then?

clo. Not so neither, but I am resolv'd on two Points.

Mar. That if one break the other will hold; or, if both break, your Gaskings fall.

clo. Apt in good Faith, very apt: Well, go thy way, if Sir Toby would leave Drinking, thou wert as witty a Piece of Eve's Flesh, as any in Illyria.

Mar.
March. Peace, you Rogue, no more o' that: Here comes my Lady; make your Excuse wisely you were best.

Enter Olivia and Malvolio.

Clo. Wit, and't be thy will, put me into good Fooling; those Wits that think they have thee, do very oft prove Fools; and I that am sure I lack thee, may pass for a wise Man. For what says Quintapalus, Better a witty Fool than a foolish Wit. God bless thee, Lady.

Oli. Take the Fool away.

Clo. Do you not hear, Fellows, take away the Lady.

Oli. Go to, y'area a dry Fool; I'll no more of you; besides you grow dishonest.

Clo. Two Faults, Madonna, that Drink and good Counsel will amend; for give the dry Fool Drink, then is the Fool not dry. Bid the dishonest Man mend himself; if he mend, he is no longer dishonest, if he cannot, let the Botcher mend him. Any thing that's mended is but patch'd: Virtue that transgresses is but patch'd with Sin, and Sin that amends is but patch'd with Virtue. If that this simple Sillogism will serve, so; if it will not, what Remedy? as there is no true Cuckold but Calamity, so Beauty's a Flower: The Lady bad take away the Fool, therefore I say again, take her away.

Oli. Sir, I bad them take away you.

Clo. Misprision in the highest Degree. Lady, Cucullus non facit monachum; that's as much as to say, I wear not motley in my Brain: Good Madonna, give me leave to prove you a Fool,

Oli. Can you do it?

Clo. Dexterously, good Madonna.

Oli. Make your Proof.

Clo. I must catechize you for it, Madonna, good my Mouse of Virtue answer.

Oli. Well, Sir, for want of other Idleness, I'll hide your Proof.

Clo. Good Madonna, why mourn'st thou?

Oli. Good Fool, for my Brother's Death.

Clo. I think his Soul is in Hell, Madonna.

Oli. I know his Soul is in Heav'n, Fool.
Clo. The more Fool you, Madona, to mourn for your Brother's Soul being in Heav'n: Take away the Fool, Gentlemen.

Oli. What think you of this Fool, Malvolio, doth he not mend?

Mal. Yes, and shall do, 'till the Pangs of Death shake him. Insfirmity, that decays the Wife, doth ever make better the Fool.

Clo. God fend you, Sir, a speedy Insfirmity, for the better increasing your Folly: Sir Toby will be sworn that I am no Fox, but he will not pass his Word for two Pence that you are no Fool.

Oli. How say you to that, Malvolio?

Mal. I marvel your Ladyship takes Delight in such a barren Rascal; I saw him put down the other Day with an ordinary Fool that has no more Brains than a Stone. Look you now, he's out of his Guard already; unless you laugh and minster Occasion to him, he is gagged. I protest I take these wise Men that crow so at these fet kind of Fools, no better than the Fools Zanies.

Oli. O you are sick of Self-love, Malvolio, and taste with a distemper'd Appetite. To be generous, guiltles; and of free Disposition, is to take those things for Birdbolts that you deem Cannon-Bullets: There is no Slander in an allow'd Fool, though he do nothing but rail; nor no railing in a known discreet Man, though he do no-thing but reprove.

Clo. Now Mercury indulge thee with Learning, for thou speak'st well of Fools.

Enter Maria.

Mar. Madam, there is at the Gate a young Gentleman much desires to speak with you.

Oli. From the Count Orsino is it?

Mar. I know not, Madam, 'tis a fair young Man, and well attended.

Oli. Who of my People hold him in delay?

Mar. Sir Toby, Madam, your Uncle.

Oli. Fetch him off I pray you, he speaks nothing but Madman: Fie on him. Go you, Malvolio; if it be a Suit
Suit from the Count, I am sick, or not at home. What you will to dismiss it. [Exit Malvolio.

Now see, Sir, how your fooling grows old, and People dislike it.

Clo. Thou hast spoke for us, Madona, as if thy eldest Son should be a Fool: whose Scull gave cram with Brains, for here comes one of thy Kin has a most weak Pia mater.

Enter Sir Toby.

Oli. By mine Honour half drunk. What is he at the Gate, Uncle?

Sir To. A Gentleman.

Oli. A Gentleman? What Gentleman?

Sir To. 'Tis a Gentleman here. A Plague o'these pickle Herring: How now, Sot?

Clo. Good Sir Toby.

Oli. Uncle, Uncle, how have you come so early by this Lethargy?

Sir To. Letchery, I defce Letchery: There's one at the Gate.

Oli. Ay marry, what is he?

Sir To. Let him be the Devil and he will, I care not: Give me Faith, say I. Well, it's all one. [Exit.

Oli. What's a drunken Man like, Fool?

Clo. Like a drown'd Man, a Fool, and a Madman: One Draught above hear makes him a Fool, the second mads him, and a third drowns him.

Oli. Go thou and seek the Coroner, and let him fit o'my Uncle; for he's in the third Degree of Drink; he's drown'd; go look after him.

Clo. He is but mad yet, Madona, and the Fool shall look to the Madman. [Exit Clown.

Mal. Madam, yond young Fellow swears he will speak with you. I told him you were sick, he takes on him to understand so much, and therefore comes to speak with you. I told him you were asleep, he seems to have a Fore-knowledge of that too, and therefore comes to speak with you. What is to be said to him, Lady? he's fortified against any Denial.
What you will.

Oli. Tell him he shall not speak with me.
Mal. Ha's been told so; and he says he'll stand at your Door like a Sheriff's Post, and be the Supporter to a Bench, but he'll speak with you.
Oli. What kind o' Man is he?
Mal. Why, of Mankind.
Oli. What manner of Man?
Mal. Of very ill Manners; he'll speak with you, will you or no.
Oli. Of what Personage and Years is he.
Mal. Not yet old enough for a Man, nor young enough for a Boy; as a Squash is before 'tis a Peascod, or a Coddling when 'tis almost an Apple: 'Tis with him in standing Water, between Boy and Man. He is very well-favour'd, and he speaks very shrewishly; one would think his Mother's Milk were scarce out of him.
Oli. Let him approach: Call in my Gentlewoman.
Mal. Gentlewoman, my Lady calls.

[Exit.

Enter Maria.

Oli. Give me my Vail: Come, throw it o'er my Face; We'll once more hear Orsino's Embassy.

Enter Viola.

Vio: The honourable Lady of the House, which is she?
Oli. Speak to me, I shall answer for her: Your Will?
Vio. Most radiant, exquisite, and unmatchable Beauty — I pray you tell me if this be the Lady of the House, for I never saw her. I would be loath to cast away my Speech; for besides that it is excellently well penn'd, I have taken great Pains to con it. Good Beauties, let me sustain no Scorn; I am very Compliment, even to the least finifter Utige.
Oli. Whence came you, Sir?
Vio. I can say little more than I have studied, and that Question's out of my Part. Good gentle one, give me modest Assurance, if you be the Lady of the House, that I may proceed in my Speech.
Oli. Are you a Comedian?
Vio. No, my profound Heart; and yet, by the very Fangs of Malice, I swear, I am not that I play. Are you the Lady of the House?

Oli.
Twelfth-Night: Or,

Oli. If I do not usurp my self, I am.

Vio. Most certain, if you are she, you do usurp your self; for what is yours to bellow, is not yours to reserve; But this is from my Commission. I will on with my Speech in your Praife, and then shew you the Heart of my Message.

Oli. Come to what is important in't: I forgive you the Praife.

Vio. Alas, I took great Pains to study it, and 'tis poetical.

Oli. It is the more like to be feign'd. I pray you keep it in. I heard you were fawcy at my Gates, and allow'd your Approach, rather to wonder at you than to hear you. If you be not mad, be gone; if you have Reafon, be brief; 'tis not the time of the Moon with me, to make one in fo skipping a Dialogue.

Mar. Will you hoift Sail, Sir, here lyes your way.

Vio. No, good Swabber, I am to hull here a little longer. Some mollification for your Giant, sweet Lady: Tell me your Mind, I am a Messenger.

Oli. Sure you have some hideous Matter to deliver, when the Curtesie of it is so fearful. Speak your Office.

Vio. It alone concerns your Ear. I bring no Overture of War, no Taxation of Homage; I hold the Olive in my Hand: My Words are as full of Peace as Matter.

Oli. Yet you began rudely. What are you? What would you?

Vio. The Rudeness that hath appear'd in me have I learn'd from my Entertainment. What I am, and what I would, are as secret as a Maiden-head; to your Ears, Divinity; to any others, Prophanation.

Oli. Give us the Place alone. [Exit Maria. We will hear this Divinity. Now, Sir, what is your Text?

Vio. Most sweet Lady.

Oli. A comfortable Doctrine, and much may be said of it. Where lyes the Text?

Vio. In Orjina's Bosom.

Oli. In his Bosom? In what Chapter of his Bosom?

Vio. To answer by the Method, in the first of his Heart. Oli,
What you will.

Ol. O, I have read it; it is Herefie. Have you no more to say?

Vio. Good Madam let me see your Face.

Ol. Have you any Commision from your Lord to nego-ciate with my Face? You are now out of your Text; but we will draw the Curtain, and shew you the Picture. Look you, Sir, such a one I was this present: Is't not well done?

[Vio. Unveiling.

Vio. Excellently done, if God did all.

Ol. 'Tis in grain, Sir, 'twill endure Wind and Weather.

Vio. 'Tis Beauty truly blest, whose red and white
Nature's own sweet and cunning Hand laid on:
Lady, you are the cruellest She alive,
If you will lead these Graces to the Grave,
And leave the World no Copy.

Ol. O, Sir, I will not be so hard-hearted: I will give out divers Schedules of my Beauty. It shall be inventoried, and every Particle and Utensil labell'd to my Will. As,

Item, two Lips indifferent red. Item, two grey Eyes, with Lids to them. Item, One Neck, one Chin, and so forth. Were you feat hither to praise me?

Vio. I see you what you are, you are too proud;
But if you were the Devil, you are fair.
My Lord and Master loves you: O such Love
Could be but recompenc'd, tho' you were crown'd
The Non-parcil of Beauty.

Ol. How does he love me?

Vio. With Adorations, fertile Tears,
With Groans that thunder Love, with Sighs of Fire.

Ol. Your Lord do's know my Mind, I cannot love him;
Yet I suppose him Virtuous, know him Noble,
Of great Estate, of fresh and stainless Youth;
In Voices well divulg'd, free, learn'd, and valiant,
And in Dimenion, and the Shape of Nature,
A gracious Person; but yet I cannot love him;
He might have took his Answer long ago.

Vio. If I did love you in my Master's Flame,
With such a Suff'ring, such a deadly Life,
In your Denial I would find no Sense:
I would not understand it.

Oli. Why, what would you do?

Vio. Make me a Willow Cabin at your Gate,
And call upon my Soul within the House;
Write loyal Cantos of condemned Love,
And sing them loud even in the Dead of Night:
Hollow your Name to the reverberate Hills,
And make the babbling Gossip of the Air
Cry out, Oli'cis: O you should not rest
Between the Elements of Air and Earth,
But you should pity me.

Oli. You might do much:

What is your Parentage?

Vio. Above my Fortunes, yet my State is well;
I am a Gentleman.

Oli. Get you to your Lord;
I cannot love him: Let him send no more,
Unless, perchance, you come to me again,
To tell me how he takes it; fare you well:
I thank you for your Pains; spend this for me.

Vio. I am no Fee'd-post, Lady; keep your Purse:
My Master, not my self, lacks Recompence.
Love make his Heart of Flint, that you shall love,
And let your Fervour like my Master's be,
Plac'd in Contempt: Farewel, fair Cruelty. [Exit.

Oli. What is your Parentage?

Above my Fortunes, yet my State is well:
I am a Gentleman— I'll be sworn thou art.
Thy Tongue, thy Face, thy Limbs, Actions, and Spirit,
Do give thee five-fold Blazon— not too fast— Soft, Soft,
Unless the Master were the Man. How now?
Even so quickly may one catch the Plague?
Methinks I feel this Youth's Perfections,
With an invisible and subtile Stealth
To creep in at mine Eyes. Well, let it be—
What hoa, Malvolio.

Enter Malvolio.

Mal. Here, Madam, at your Service.

Oli. Run after that same peevish Messenger;
The Duke's Man; he left this Ring behind him.
What you will.

Would I, or not: Tell him, I'll none of it.
Defile him not to flatter with his Lord.
Nor hold him up with Hopes; I am not for him:
If that the Youth will come this way to Morrow,
I'll give him Reason for't by thee, Malvolio.
Mal. Madam, I will.

Oli. I do I know not what, and fear to find
Mine Eye too great a Flatterer for my Mind:
Fate, shew thy Force, our selves we do not owe;
What is decreed must be; and be this so.

ACT II. SCENE I.

SCENE The Street.

Enter Antonio and Sebastian.

Ant. W I L L you stay no longer? Nor will you not
that I go with you?

Seb. By your Patience, no: My Stars shine darkly over
me; the Malignancy of my Fate, might perhaps distem-
per yours; therefore I crave of you your leave, that I
may bear my Evils alone. It were a bad recompence for
your Love, to lay any of them on you.

Ant. Let me yet know of you, whither you arebound.

Seb. No sooth, Sir, my determinate Voyage is meer ex-
travagancy: But I perceive in you so excellent a Touch of
Modesty, that you will not extort from me what I am
willing to keep in; therefore it charges me in Manners
the rather to express my self: You must know of me
then Antonio, my Name is Sebastian, which I call'd Rodo-
rigo; my Father was that Sebastian of Messaline, whom I
know you have heard of. He left behind him, my self,
and a Sister, both born in one Hour; if the Heav'n's had
been pleas'd, would we had so ended: But you, Sir, al-
ter'd that, for some Hours before you took me from the
Breach of the Sea, was my Sister drown'd.

Ant.
Ant. Alas the Day!

Seb. A Lady, Sir, tho' it was said she much resembled me, was yet of many accounted beautiful; but tho' I could not with such estimable Wonder over-far believe that, yet thus far I will boldly publish her, she bore a Mind that Envy could not but call fair: She is drown'd already, Sir, with salt Water, tho' I feen to drown her Remembrance again with more.

Ant. Pardon me, Sir, your bad Entertainment.

Seb. O good Antonio, forgive me your Trouble.

Ant. If you will not murther me for my Love, let me be your Servant.

Seb. If you will not undo what you have done, that is, kill him whom you have recover'd, defire it not. Fare ye well at once, my Bosom is full of Kindness, and I am yet so near the Manners of my Mother, that upon the least occasion more, mine Eyes will tell Tales of me: I am bound to the Duke Orsino's Court; farewel. [Exit.

Ant. The gentleness of all the Gods go with thee. I have made Enemies in Orsino's Court, Else would I very shortly see thee there: But come what may, I do adore thee so, That Danger shall seem Sport, and I will go. [Exit.

SCENE II.

Enter Viola and Malvolio at several Doors.

Mal. Were not you e'en now with the Countess Olivia?

Vio. Even now, Sir; on a moderate pace, I have since arriv'd but hither.

Mal. She returns this Ring to you, Sir; you might have sav'd me my Pains, to have taken it away your self. She adds moreover, that you should put your Lord into a desperate Assurance, she will none of him. And one thing more, that you be never so hardy to come again in his Affairs, unless it be to report your Lord's taking of this: Receive it so.

Vio. She took the Ring of me, I'll none of it.

Mal.
What you will.

Mal. Come, Sir, you peevishly threw it to her, and her
Will is, it should be so return'd: If it be worth stooping
for, there it lyes in your Eye; if not, be it his that finds
it. [Exit.

Vio. I left no Ring with her; what means this Lady?
Fortune forbid my Outside have not charm'd her!
She made good view of me, indeed so much,
That sure methought her Eyes had lost her Tongue,
For she did speak in starts distractedly:
She loves me sure, the cunning of her Passion
Invites me in this churlish Messenger.
None of my Lord's Ring? Why, he sent her none.
I am the Man—If it be so as 'tis,
Poor Lady, she were better love a Dream.
Disguise, I see thou art a Wickedness,
Wherein the pregnant Enemy does much.
How easie is it, for the proper false
In Womens waxen Hearts to set their Forms!
Alas, our Fraiety is the Cause, not we,
For such as we are made, if such we be.
How will this fade? My Master loves her dearly,
And I, poor Monster, fond as much on him;
And she, mistaken, seems to dote on me:
What will become of this? As I am a Man,
My State is desperate for my Master's Love;
As I am Woman, now alas the Day,
What thriftless Sighs shall poor Olivia breathe?
O Time, thou must untangle this, not I,
It is too hard a Knot for me t'untie. [Exit.

SCENE III. Olivia's House.

Enter Sir Toby and Sir Andrew.

Sir To. Approach Sir Andrew: Not to be a-bed after
Midnight, is to be up betimes, and Diluculo surgere, thou
know'st it.

Sir And. Nay, by my troth, I know not: But I know,
to be up late, is to be up late.

Sir To. A false Conclusion: I hate it as an unfill'd Can;
to be up after Midnight, and to go to Bed then, is early; so
Vol. III. B
that to go to Bed after Midnight, is to go to Bed besimes.
Does not our Life consist of the four Elements?
Sir And. 'Faith so they say, but I think it rather consists of Eating and Drinking.
Sir To. Th'art a Scholar, let us therefore eat and drink.
Marian I say, a stoop of Wine.

Enter Clown.

Sir And. Here comes the Fool, 'faith.
Clo. How now my Hearts? did you never see the Picture of we three?

Sir To. Welcome Ais, now let's have a Catch.
Sir And. By my troth, the Fool has an excellent Breast.
I had rather than forty Shillings I had such a Leg, and so sweet a Breath to sing as the Fool has. Insooth thou wast in very gracious fooling last Night, when thou spokst of Pigrepsinitus, of the Vapidus passing the Equinoctial of Equidus; 'twas very good 'faith: I lent thee six Pence for it; Lemon, hadst it?

Clo. I did impetosely thy gratillity; for Malvolio's Nose is no Whip-stock. My Lady has a white Hand, and the Mirmidons are no Bottle-Alc Houfes.
Sir And. Excellent: Why this is the best fooling, when all is done. Now a Song.
Sir To. Come on, there is six Pence for you. Let's have a Song.
Sir And. There's a Tetril of me too; if one Knight give a——.
Clo. Would you have a Love-song, or a Song of good Life?

Sir To. A Love-song, a Love-song.
Sir And. Ay, ay; I care not for good Life.

Clown sings.

O Mistress mine, where are you roaming?
O stay and hear, your true Love's coming,
That can sing both high and low.

Trip no further, pretty Sweeting,
Journey end in Lovers meeting,
Every wise Man's Son both know.

Sir And.
What you will.

Sir And. Excellent good, 'faith.
Sir To. Good, good.

Clo. What is Love, 'tis not hereafter,
Present Mirth hath present Laughter:
What's to come, is still unsure.
In delay there lies no Plenty,
Then come kiss me sweet and twenty:
Youth's a Stuff will not endure.

Sir And. A mellifluous Voice, as I am a true Knight.
Sir To. A contagious Breath.

Sir And. Very sweet and contagious, 'faith.
Sir To. To hear by the Nose, it is Dulce in Contagion.
But shall we make the Welkin dance indeed? Shall we rouze the Night-Owl in a Catch, that will draw three Souls out of one Weaver? Shall we do that?

Sir And. And you love me, let's do't: I am a Dog at a Catch.

Clo. Byr Lady, Sir, and some Dogs will catch well.

Sir And. Most certain: Let our Catch be, Thou Knave.
Clo. Hold thy peace, thou Knave, Knight. I shall be constrain'd in't, to call thee Knave, Knight.

Sir And. 'Tis not the first time I have constrain'd one to call me Knave. Begin, Fool; it begins, Hold thy peace.

Clo. I shall never begin, if I hold my Peace.

Sir And. Good 'faith: Come, begin. [They sing a Catch. Enter Maria.

Mar. What a Catterwauling do you keep here? If my Lady have not call'd up her Steward, Malvolio, and bid him turn you out of Doors, never trust me,

Sir To. My Lady's a Catayan, we are Politicians, Malvolio's a Peg-a-Ramsay, and Three merry Men be we. Am not I Conlanguinous? Am not I of her Blood! Tilly Valley, Lady! There dwelt a Man in Babylon, Lady, Lady.

Clo. Befrew me, the Knight's in admirable Fooling.

Sir And. Ay, he does well enough if he be dispo'sd, and so do I too: He does it with a better Grace, but I do it more natural.

Sir To. O Twelfth Day of December. [Singing.

Mar.
Mar. For the love o’God, peace.

Enter Malvolio.

Mal. My Masters, are you mad? Or what are you? Have you no Wi’, Manners, nor Honesty, but to gabble like Tinkers at this time of Night? Do ye make an Ale-house of my Lady’s House, that ye squeak out your Coziers Catches without any mitigation or remorse of Voice? Is there no respect of Place, Persons, nor Time in you?

Sir To. We did keep time, Sir; in our Catches. Strike up.

Mal. Sir Toby, I must be round with you. My Lady bade me tell you, that she harbours you as her Uncle; she’s nothing ally’d to your Disorders. If you can separate your self and your Misdemeanors, you are welcome to the House: If not, and it would please you to take leave of her, she is very willing to bid you farewell.

Sir To. Farewel, dear Heart, since I must needs be gone.

Mar. Nay, good Sir Toby.

Clo. His Eyes do shew his Days are almost done.

Mal. Isn’t even so?

Sir To. But I will never die.

Clo. Sir Toby, there you lie.

Mal. This is much Credit to you.

Sir To. Shall I bid him go?

Clo. What and if you do?

Sir To. Shall I bid him go, and spare not?

Clo. O no, no, no, you dare not.

Sir To. Out o’tune, Sir, ye lie: Art thou any more than a Steward? Dost thou think, because thou art virtuous, there shall be no more Cakes and Ale?

Clo. Yes, by Saint Anne; and Ginger shall be hot i’th’ Mough too.

Sir To. Thou’rt i’th’ right. Go, Sir, rub your Chain with Crums. A Scoop of Wine, Maria.

Mal. Mistress Mary, if you priz’d my Lady’s Favour at any thing more than Contempt, you would not give means for this uncivil Rule; she shall know of it, by this Hand.

Mar. Go shake your Ears.
Sir And. 'Twere as good a Deed as to drink when a Man's a Hungry, to challenge him to the Field, and then to break Promise with him, and make a Fool of him.

Sir To. Don't, Knight, I'll write thee a Challenge: or I'll deliver thy Indignation to him by word of Mouth.

Mar. Sweet Sir Toby, be patient for to Night; since the Youth of the Duke's was to Day with my Lady, she is much out of quiet. For Monsieur Malvolio, let me alone with him: If I do not gall him into a naughty word, and make him a common Recreation, do not think I have wit enough to lye straight in my Bed: I know I can do it.

Sir To. Possess us, possess us, tell us something of him.

Mar. Marry, Sir, sometimes he is a kind of a Puritan!
Sir And. O, if I thought that, I'd beat him like a Dog.
Sir To. What, for being a Puritan? thy exquisite Rebecca, dear Knight.

Sir And. I have no exquisite Reason for't, but I have Reason good enough.

Mar. The Devil a Puritan that he is, or any thing constantly but a Time-pleaser, an affection'd As, that Cons State without Book, and utters it by great swears. The best persuaded of himself: So cram'd, as he thinks, with Excellencies, that it is his ground of Faith, that all that look on him, love him; and on that Vice in him will my Revenge find notable Cause to work.

Sir To. What wilt thou do?

Mar. I will drop in his way some obscure Epistles of Love, wherein, by the colour of his Beard, the shape of his Leg, the manner of his Gate, the expressure of his Eye, Forehead, and Complexion, he shall find himself most feelingly personated. I can write very like my Lady your Neice, on a forgotten matter we can hardly make distinction of our Hands.

Sir To. Excellent, I smell a Device.

Sir And. I have't in my Nose too.

Sir To. He shall think by the Letters that thou wilt drop that they come from my Neice, and that she is in Love with him.
Mar. My Purpose is indeed a Horse of that Colour, 
Sir And. And your Horse now would make him an As; 
Mar. As, I doubt not. 
Sir Ant. O 'twill be admirable. 
Mar. Sport royal, I warrant you: I know my Physick 
will work him him. I will plant you two, and let the 
Fool make a third, where he shall find the Letter: Ob- 
terve his Construction of it: for this Night to Bed, and 
dream on the Event. Farewel. [Exit: 
Sir To. Good Night, Penthjilea. 
Sir And. Before me, she's a good Wench. 
Sir To. She's a Beagle, true bred, and one that adores 
me; what o'that? 
Sir And. I was ador'd once too. 
Sir To. Let's to Bed, Knight: Thou hadst need send for 
more Mony. 
Sir And. If I cannot recover your Neice, I am a foul 
way out. 
Sir To. Send for Mony, Knight; if thou haft her not 
it b'end, call me Cut. 
Sir And. If I do not, never trust me, take it how you 
will. 
Sir To. Come, come, I'll go burn some Sack, 'tis too late 
to go to Bed now: Come, Knight, come, Knight. 
[Exeunt; 

SCENE IV. THE PALACE.

Enter Duke, Viola, Curio, and others. 

Duke. Give me some Musick; now good morrow, 
Friends:
Now good Cesario, but that peice of Song, 
That old and antick Song we heard last Night; 
Methought it did relieve my Passion much, 
More than light Airs, and recollected Terms 
Of these most brisk and giddy-paced Times. 
Come, but one Verse. 

Cur. He is not here, so please your Lordship, that 
should sing it. 

Duke. Who was it? Cur.
Cur. Este the Jefer, my Lord, a Fool that the Lady
Olivia's Father took much delight in. He is about the
Houle.

Duke. Seek him out, and play the Tune the while.

[Music]

Come hither, Boy; if ever thou shalt Love,
In the sweet Pangs of it, remember me;
For such as I am, all true Lovers are,
Unstaid and skittish in all Motions else,
Save in the constant Image of the Creature
That is belov'd. How dost thou like this Tune?

Vio. It gives a very Eccho to the Seat
Where Love is thron'd.

Duke. Thou dost speak masterly.

My Life upon't, young tho' thou art, thine Eye
Hath staid upon some Fav'our that it loves:
Hath it not, Boy?

Vio. A little, by your Fav'our.

Duke. What kind of Woman is't?

Vio. Of your Complexion.

Duke. She is not worth thee then. What Years, my Faith?

Vio. About your Years, my Lord.

Duke. Too old, by Heav'n; Let st'll the Woman take
An elder than her self, so wears she to him;
So sways she level in her Husband's Heart.
For, Boy, however we do praise our selves,
Our Fancies are more giddy and unfirm.
More longing, wavering, sooner lost and worn,
Than Womens are.

Vio. I think it well, my Lord.

Duke. Then let thy Love be younger than thy self,
Or thy Affection cannot hold the bent:
For Women are as Roses, whose fair Flower
Being once display'd, doth fall that very hour.

Vio. And so they are: Alas, that they are so,
To die, even when they to Perfection grow!

Enter Curio and Clown.

Duke. O Fellow come, the Song we had last night,
Mark it, Cesario, it is old and plain;
The Spinster's and the Knitters in the Sun,
And the free Maids that weave their Thread with Bones;
Do use to chant it: it is silly sooth,
And dally with the Innocence of Love,
Like the old Age.

Clo. Are you ready, Sir?

SONG.

Come away, come away, Death,
And in sad Cypress let me be laid;
Fly away, fly away, Breath,
I am slain by a fair Cruel Maid.
My Shroud of white, stuck all with Yew, O prepare it.
My part of Death no one so true did share it.

Not a Flower, not a Flower sweet,
On my black Coffin let there be brawn:
Not a Friend, not a Friend greet
My poor Corps, where my Bones shall be thrown.
A thousand thousand Sighs to save, lay me O where
Sad true Lover never find my Grave, to weep there.

Duke. There's for thy Pains.
Clo. No Pains, Sir. I take pleasure in singing, Sir.
Duke. I'll pay thy Pleasure then.
Clo. Truly, Sir, and Pleasure will be paid one time, or other.

Duke. Give me now leave, to leave thee.
Clo. Now the melsnchilly God protect thee, and the
Taylor make thy Doublet of changeable Taffata, for thy Mind is a very Opal. I would have Men of such
Constancy put to Sea, that their Business might be every thing, and their intent every where, for that's it that al-
ways makes a good Voyage of nothing. Farewel. [Exit.

Duke. Let all the rest give place. Once more, Cefario,
Get thee to yond fame Sovereign Cruelty:
Tell her my Love, more noble than the World,
Prizes not quantity of dirty Lands,
The Parts that Fortune hath bestow'd upon her,
Tell her I hold as giddily as Fortune:

But
But 'tis that Miracle, and Queen of Jems
That Nature pranks her in, attracts my Soul.

Vio. But if she cannot love you, Sir.

Duke. It cannot be so answer'd.

Vio. Sooth but you must.

Say that some Lady, as perhaps there is,
Hath for your Love as great a pang of Heart
As you have for Olivia: You cannot love her;
You tell her so; Must she not then be answer'd?

Duke. There is no Woman's Sides
Can bide the beating of so strong a Passion.
As Love doth give my Heart: No Woman's Heart
So big to hold so much; they lack retention.
Alas, their Love may be call'd Appetite:
No motion of the Liver, but the Paltal,
That suffers Surfeit, Cloyment, and Revolt;
But mine is all as hungry as the Sea,
And can digest as much; make no compare
Between that Love a Woman can bear me,
And that I owe Olivia.

Vio. Ay but I know —

Duke. What dost thou know?

Vio. Too well what love Women to Men may owe;
In faith they are as true of Heart, as we.
My Father had a Daughter lov'd a Man
As it might be, perhaps, were I a Woman,
I should your Lordship.

Duke. And what's her History?

Vio. A blank, my Lord: She never told her Love;
But let Concealment, like a Worm 'tis Bud,
Feed on her damask Cheek: She pin'd in thought,
And with a green and yellow Melancholy,
She sate like Patience on a Monument,
Smiling at Grief. Was not this Love indeed?
We Men may say more, swear more, but indeed
Our friends are more than will; for still we prove
Much in our Vows, but little in our Love.

Duke. But dy'd thy Sister of her Love, my Boy?

Vio. I am all the Daughters of my Father's House,
And all the Brothers too —— and yet I know not——
Sir, shall I to this Lady?
Duke. Ay, that's the Theam.
To her in haste; give her this jewel: Say,
My Love can give no place, bid no deny. [Exeunt.

SCENE V.
Enter Sir Toby, Sir Andrew, and Fabian.

Sir To. Come thy ways, Signior Fabian.
Exe. Nay, I'll come; if I lose a scruple of this Sport;
let me be boil'd to Death with Melancholly.

Sir To. Wouldn't thou not be glad to have the niggardly
rascally Sheep-biter, come by some notable Shame?
Exe. I would exu't Man; you know he brought me out
of Favour with my Lady, about a Bear-baiting here.

Sir To. To anger him we'll have the Bear again, and we
will: fool him black and blue shall we not, Sir Andrew?

Sir And. And we do not it's pity of our Lives.

Enter Maria.

Sir To. Here comes the little Villain: How now, my
Nettle of India?

Mar. Get ye all three into the Box-tree; Malvolio's co-
ming down this Walk, he has been yonder 'th' Sun practi-
sing Behaviour to his own Shadow this half hour. Observe
him for the love of Mockery; for I know this Letter will
make a Contemplative Ideot of him. Close, in the Name
of Jesting, lye thou there; for here comes the Trout that
must be caught with tickling. [Exit.

Enter Malvolio.

Mal. 'Tis but Fortune, all is Fortune. Maria once told
me she did affect me, and I have heard her self come thus
near, that she the fancy, it should be one of my Com-
p'lexion. Besides, she uses me with a more exalted Re-
spect, than any one else that follows her. What should I
think on't?

Sir To. Here's an over-weaning Rogue.

Fab. Oh peace: Contemplation makes a rare Turkey-
Cock of him; how he jets under his advanc'd Plumes.

Sir And. 'Slife, I could so beat the Rogue.

Sir To. Peace, I say.

Mal.
Mal. To be Count Malvolio.
Sir To. Ah Rogue!
Sir And. Pistol him, Pistol him.
Sir To. Peace, peace.
Mal. There is Example for't: The Lady of the Stracy married the Yeoman of the Wardrobe.
Sir And. Fie on him, Jezebel.
Fab. O peace, now he's deeply in; look how Imagination blows him.
Mal. Having been three Months married to her, sitting in my State.
Sir To. O for a Stone-how to hit him in the Eye.
Mal. Calling my Officers about me, in my branch'd Velvet Gown; having come from a Day-bed, where I have left Olivia sleeping.
Sir To. Fire and Brimstone!
Fab. O peace, peace.
Mal. And then to have the Humour of State; and after a demure Travel of Regard, telling them I know my place. as I would they should do theirs—To ask for my Uncle Toby—
Sir To. Bolts and Shackles!
Fab. Oh peace, peace, peace; now, now.
Mal. Seven of my People with an obedient Start make out for him: I frown the while, and per chance wind up my Watch, or play with some rich Jewel. Toby approaches, Courtesies there to me.
Sir To. Shall this Fellow live?
Fab. Tho' our Silence be drawn from us with Cares, yet peace.
Mal. I extend my Hand to him thus; quenching my familiar Smile with an austere regard of Controul.
Sir To. And does not Toby take you a blow o' th' Lips then?
Mal. Saying, Uncle Toby, my Fortunes having cast me on your Neice, give me this Prerogative of Speech—
Sir To. What, what?
Mal. You must amend your Drunkenness.
Sir To. Out, Scab!
Fab. Nay, patience, or we break the Sinews of our Plot.
Mal.
Mal. Besides, you waste the Treasure of your Time; with a foolish Knight——

Sir And. That's me, I warrant you.

Mal. One Sir Andrew.

Sir And. I knew 'twas I, for many do call me Fool.

Mal. What Employment have we here?[Taking up a Letter. Fab. Now is the Woodcock near the Gin.

Sir To. Oh peace! Now the Spirit of Humours intimate reading aloud to him!

Mal. By my Life this is my Lady's Hand: These be her very C's, her U's, and her T's, and thus makes she her great P's. It is, in Contempt of question, her Hand.

Sir And. Her C's, her U's, and her T's; why that?

Mal. To the unknown below'd, this, and my good Wishes; Her very Phrases: By your leave, Wax. Soft! and the Im-pressure her Lucrece, with which she uses to seal; 'tis my Lady: To whom should this be?

Fab. This wins him. Liver and all.

Mal. Love knows I Love, but who, Lips do not move, no Man must know. No Man must know——What follows? The Number's alter'd——No Man must know——If this should be thee, Malcolm?

Sir To. Marry hang thee, Brock!

Mal. I may command where I adore, but Silence, like a Lucrece Knife,

With bloody stirs my Heart doth gore, M. O. A. I. doth stye my Life.

Fab. A Fuzzy Riddle.

Sir To. Excellent Wench, say I,

Mal. M. O. A. I. doth stye my Life——Nay, but first let me see——let me see——

Fab. What a dish of Poison has she dress'd him?

Sir To. And with what Wing the Stallion checks at it?

Mal. I may command, where I adore. Why she may command me: I serve her, she is my Lady. Why this is evident to any formal Capacity. There is no obstruction in this——and the end — what should that Alphabetical position portend? If I could make that resemble something in me? Softly——M. O. A. I.——

Sir To. O, cy! make up that, he is now at a cold Scent.

Fab.
What you will. 37

Fab. Sowter will cry upon't for all this, tho' it be as rank as a Fox.

Mal. M. — Malvolio — M. — why that begins my Name.

Fab. Did not I say he would work it out, the Cur is excellent at Faults.

Mal. M. But then there is no confonancy in the Sequel; that suffers under Probation: A should follow, but O does.

Fab. And O shall end, I hope.

Sir To. Ay, or I'll cudgel him, and make him cry O.

Mal. And then I. comes behind.

Fab. Ay, and you had any Eye behind you, you might see more detraction at your Heels, than Fortunes before you.

Mal. M. O. A. I. — This Simulation is not as the former — And yet to crush this a little, it would bow to me, for every one of these Letters is in my Name. Soft, here follows Prose — If this fall into thy hand, revolve. In my Stash I am above thee, but be not afraid of Greatness; some are born Great, some achieve Greatness, and some have Greatness thrust upon them. Thy Fates open their Hands, let thy Blood and Spirit embrace them; and to inure thy self to what thou art like to be, cast thy humble Slough, and appear fresh. Be opposite with a Kinism, surly with Servants: Let thy Tongue tang Arguments of State; put thy self into the Trick of Singularity. She thus advises thee, that fights for thee. Remember who commanded thy yellow Stockings, and wish'd to see thee ever cross-garter'd. I say remember; go to. thou art made, if thou desirest to be so: If not, let me see thee a Steward still, the Fellow of Servants, and not worthy to touch Fortune's Fingers. Farewell. She that would alter Services with thee. The fortunate and happy Day-light and Champaign discovers not more: This is open. I will be proud, I will read politicke Authors, I will baffle Sir Toby, I will wash off gros Acquaintance, I will be point devile, the very Man. I do now spoil my self, to let Imagination jade me; for every Reason excites to this, that my Lady loves me. She did commend my yellow Stockings of late, she did praise my Leg, being cross-garter'd, and in this she
manifests her self to my Love. and with a kind of In-
junction drives me to these Habits of her liking. I thank
my Stars, I am happy: I will be strange; stout, in yellow
Stockings and crofs-garter’d, even with the swiftnes of
putting on. Love, and my Stars be praised. Here is yet a
Poffcript. Thou canst not chafe but know who I am; if thou
entertainest my Love, let it appear in thy smiling. thy Smiles
become thee well. Therefore in my Preffence still smile, Dear
my Sweet, I prethee. Love, I thank thee; I will smile, I
will do every thing that thou wilt have me. [Exit.

Fab. I will not give my Part of this Sport for a Pension
of Thousands to be paid from the Sophy.

Sir To. I could marry this Wench for this Device.

Sir And. So could I too.

Sir To. And ask no other Dowry with her, but such an
other Jeft.

Enter Mars.

Sir And. Nor I neither.

Fab. Here comes my noble Gull-catcher.

Sir To. Wilt thou fet thy Foot o’my Neck?

Sir And. Or o’mine either?

Sir To. Shall I play my Freedom at Tray-trip, and be-
come thy Bond-slave?

Sir And. I’faith, or I either?

Sir To. Why thou haft put him in such a Dream, that
when the Image of it leaves him, he must run mad.

Mar. Nay, but fay true, does it work upon him?

Sir To. Like Aqua-vita with a Midwife.

Mar. If you will then fee the Fruits of the Sport, mark
his first approach before my Lady: He will come to her
in yellow Stockings, and ’tis a Colour she abhors; and
crofs-garter’d, a Fashion she detests: And he will smile
upon her, which will now be so unsuitable to her Dispo-
sition, being addicted to Melancholy, as she is, that it can-
not but turn him into a notable Contempt: If you will
fee it, follow me.

Sir To. To the Gates, Tartar, thou most excellent Devil
of Wit.

Sir And. I’ll make one too. [Exit.

A C T
ACT III. SCENE I.

SCENE A Garden.

Enter Viola, and Clown.

Vio. SAVE thee, Friend, and thy Mufick: Doft thou live by the Tabor?

Clo. No, Sir, I live by the Church.

Vio. Art thou a Churchman?

Clo. No such matter, Sir, I do live by the Church: For I do live at my House, and my House doth stand by the Church.

Vio. So thou mayst say the King lyes by a Beggar, if a Beggar dwell near him: Or the Church stands by thy Tabor, if thy Tabor stand by the Church.

Clo. You have said, Sir: To see this Age! A Sentence is but a chev'ril Glove to a good Wit; how quickly the wrong side may be turned outward.

Vio. Nay, that's certain; they that dally nicely with Words, may quickly make them wanton.

Clo. I would therefore my Sister had no Name, Sir.

Vio. Why, Man?

Clo. Why, Sir, her Name's a word, and to dally with that word, might make my Sister wanton: But indeed, Words are very Rascals, since Bonds disgrac'd them.

Vio. Thy Reason, Man?

Clo. Troth, Sir, I can yield you none without Words, and Words are grown so false, I am loath to prove Reason with them.

Vio. I warrant thou art a merry Fellow, and careless for nothing.

Clo. Not so, Sir, I do care for something; but, in my Conscience, Sir, I do not care for you: If that be to care for nothing, Sir, I would it would make you invisible.

Vio. Art not thou the Lady Olivia's Fool?

Clo. No indeed, Sir, the Lady Olivia has no Folly, she will keep no Fool, Sir, 'till she be married; and Fools are as like Husbands, as Pitchers are to Herrings, the Husband's the
the bigger: I am indeed not her Fool, but her Corrupter of Words.

Vio. I saw thee late at the Duke Orsino's.

Clo. Foolery, Sir, does walk about the Orb like the Sun; it shines every where. I would be sorry, Sir, but the Fool should be as oft with your Master, as with my Mistress; I think I saw your Wisdom there.

Vio. Nay, and thou pass upon me, I'll no more with thee. Hold, there's Expences for thee.

Clo. Now love, in his next Commodity of Hair, send thee a Beard.

Vio. By my troth, I'll tell thee, I am almost sick for one, though I would not have it grow on my Chin. Is thy Lady within?

Clo. Would not a pair of these have bred, Sir?

Vio. Yes, being kept together, and put to use.

Clo. I would play Lord Pandarbus of Phrygia, Sir, to bring a Cressida to this Troylus.

Vio. I understand you, Sir, 'tis well begg'd.

Clo. The matter I hope is not great. Sir; begging, but a Beggar: Cressida was a Beggar. My Lady is within, Sir. I will confer to them whence you come; who you are, and what you would be out of my Welkin, I might say Element, but the word is over-worn.

[Vio. This Fellow is wise enough to play the Fool,
And to do that well craves a kind of Wit:
He must observe their Mood on whom he Jesks,
The Quality of the Persons, and the Time;
And like the Haggard, check at every Feather
That comes before his Eye. This is a practice
As full of Labour as a Wise-man's Art:
For Folly that he wisely shews, is fit;
But wise Mens Folly fall'n, quite taints their Wit.

Enter Sir Toby and Sir Andrew.

Sir To. Save you, Gentleman.

Vio. And you, Sir.

Sir And. Dieu vous guerd Monsieur.

Vio. Et vous aussi, vostre serviteur.

Sir And. I hope, Sir, you are; and I am yours.
Sir To. Will you encounter the House, my Neice is desirous you should enter, if your Trade be to her.

Via. I am bound to your Neice, Sir; I mean, she is the Lift of my Voyage.

Sir To. Taste your Legs, Sir, put them to motion.

Via. My Legs do better understand me, Sir, than I understand what you mean by bidding me taste my Legs.

Sir To. I mean to go, Sir, to enter.

Via. I will answer you with Gate and Entrance, but we are prevented.

Enter Olivia and Maria.

Most excellent accomplish'd Lady, the Heav'n's rain Odours on you.

Sir And. That Youth's a rare Courtier! rain Odours well.

Via. My Matter hath no Voice, Lady, but to your own most pregnant and vouchsafed Ear.

Sir And. Odours, pregnant and vouchsafed: I'll get 'em all three ready.

Oli. Let the Garden Door be shut, and leave me to my hearing. [Exeunt Sir Toby, Sir Andrew, and Maria.

Give me your Hand, Sir.

Via. My Duty, Madam, and most humble Service.

Oli. What is your Name?

Via. Cesario is your Servant's Name, fair Princess.

Oli. My Servant, Sir? 'Twas never merry World, since lowly feigning was call'd Complement:

Y are Servant to the Duke Orsino, Youth.

Via. And he is yours, and his must needs be yours: Your Servant's Servant is your Servant, Madam.

Oli. For him I think not on him: For his Thoughts, Would they were Blanks, rather than fill'd with me.

Via. Madam, I come to whet your gentle Thoughts On his behalf.

Oli. O, by your leave, I pray you; I bade you never speak again of him. But would you undertake another Suit, I had rather hear you to solicit that, Than Mufick from the Spheres.

Via. Dear Lady.

Oli.
Oli. Give me leave, I beseech you: I did send
After the last Enchantment you did hear,
A Ring in Chase of you. So did I abuse
My Self, my Servant, and I fear me, you;
Under your hard Construction must I fit,
To force that on you in a shameful cunning,
Which you knew none of yours. What might you think?
Have you not sen mine Honour at the Stake,
And baited it with all th' unmuzzled Thoughts
That tyrannous Heart can think? To one of your receiving
Enough is shewn; a Cypress, not a Bosom,
Hides my poor Heart. So let us hear you speak.

Vio. I pity you.

Oli. That's a degree to Love.

Vio. No not a grice: For 'tis a vulgar Proof
That very oft we pity Enemies.

Oli. Why then methinks 'tis time to smile again;
O World, how apt the poor are to be proud?
If one should be a prey, how much better
To fail before the Lion, than the Wolf; [Clock strikes.
The Clock upbraids me with the wase of Time.
Be no: afraid, good Youth, I will not have you;
And yet when Wit and Youth is come to harvest,
Your Wife is like to reap a proper Man:
There lyes your way, due West:

Vio. Then Westward home:
Grace and good Disposition attend your Ladyship.
You'll nothing, Madam, to my Lord by me?

Oli. Stay; I prethee tell me what thou thinkest of me?

Vio. That you do think you are not what you are.

Oli. If I think so, I think the fame of you.

Vio. Then think you right: I am not what I am.

Oli. I would you were, as I would have you be.

Vio. Would it be better, Madam, than I am,
I wish it might, for now I am your Fool.

Oli. O what a deal of Scorn looks beautiful,
In the Contempt and Anger of his Lip!
A murderous Guilt shews not it self more soon,
Than Love that would seem bid: Love's Night is Noon.

Cesario,
Cesario, by the roses of the spring,
By maid-hood, honour, truth, and every thing,
I love thee so, that maugre all thy pride,
Nor wit, nor reason can my passion hide.
Do not extort thy reasons from this clause,
For that I woo, thou therefore hast no cause:
But rather reason thus with reasonetter
Love sought, is good; but given unsought, is better.

Vio. By innocence I swear, and by my youth,
I have one heart, one bosom, and one truth,
And that no woman has, nor never none
Shall mistress be of it, save I alone.
And so adieu, good madam, never more
Will I my master’s tears to you deplore.

Oli. Yet come again; for thou perhaps may’t move
That heart, which now abhors to like his love, [Exeunt.

Scene II. Olivia’s house.

Enter Sir Toby, Sir Andrew, and Fabian.

Sir And. No faith, I’ll not stay a jot longer.
Sir To. Thy reason, dear venom, give thy reason.
Fab. You must needs yield your reason, Sir Andrew.
Sir And. Marry, I saw your niece do more favours to
the Duke’s serving-man, than ever she bestowed on me,
I saw’t i’th orchard.
Sir To. Did she see thee the while, old boy, tell me
that?
Sir And. As plain as I see you now.
Fab. This was a great argument of love in her to-
ward you.
Sir And. ’Slight! will you make an as o’me?
Fab. I prove it legitimate, sir, upon the oaths of ju-
gament and reason.
Sir To. And they have been grand jury-men, since be-
fore Noah was a sailor.
Fab. She did shew favour to the youth in your sight,
only to exasperate you, to awake your dormouse valour, to
put fire in your heart, and brimstone in your liver. You
should then have acosted her, and with some excellent jests,
fire new
fire new from the Mint, you should have bang’d the Youth into Dumbness. This was look’d for at your Hand, and this was baulk’t. The double gilt of this Opportunity you let Time wash off, and you are now fail’d into the North of my Lady’s Opinion, where you will hang like an Mickle on a Dutchman’s Beard, unless you do redeem it by some Attempt, either of Valour or Policy.

Sir And. And’t be any way, it must be with Valour, for Policy I hate: I had as lief be a Brownist, as a Politician.

Sir To. Why then build me thy Fortunes upon the Bases of Valour. Challenge me the Duke’s Youth to fight with him, hurt him in eleven Places, my Neice shall take Note of it, and assure thy self, there is no Love-breaker in the World can more prevail in Man’s Commendation with Women, than Report of Valour.

Fab. There is no way but this, Sir Andrew.

Sir And. Will either of you bear me a Challenge to him?

Sir To. Go, write it in a martial Hand, be curt and brief: It is no matter how witty, so it be eloquent, and full of Invention; taunt him with the License of Ink; if thou thou’lt him some thrice, it shall not be amiss; and as many Lies as will lye in thy Sheet of Paper, although the Sheet were big enough for the Bed of Ware in England, let ’em down, and go about it. Let there be Gall enough in thy Ink, tho’ thou write it with a Goose-Pen, no matter: About it.

Sir And. Where shall I find you?

Sir To. We’ll call thee at the Cubiculo:—Go.

[Exeunt Sir Andrew.

Fab. This is a dear Manakin to you, Sir Toby.

Sir To. I have been dear to him, Lad, some two thousand strong or so.

Fab. We shall have a rare Letter from him; but you’ll not deliver’t.

Sir To. Never trust me then; and by all means stir on the Youth to an Answer. I think Oxen and Wain-ropes cannot hale them together. For Andrew, if he were open’d, and you find so much Blood in his Liver as will clog the Foot of a Flea, I’ll eat the rest of th’ Anatomy.
Fab. And his Opposite the Youth bears in his Visage no
great Preface of Cruelty.

Enter Maria.

Sir To. Look where the youngest Wren of mine comes.

Mar. If you desire the Spleen, and will laugh your
selves into Stitches, follow me; yond gull Malvolio is
turned Heathen, a very Renegade; for there is no Christi-
an that means to be fav'd by believing rightly, can ever
believe such impossible Passages of Grossness. He's in
yellow Stockings.

Sir To. And Cross-garter'd?

Mar. Most villainously; like a Pedant that keeps a School
in the Church: I have dogg'd him like his Murtherer. He
does obey every Point of the Letter that I dropt to be-
tray him; he does smile his Face into more Lines than is
in the new Map, with the Augmentation of the Indies;
you have not seen such a thing as 'tis; I can hardly forbear
hurling things at him. I know my Lady will strike him;
if she do, he'll smile, and take't for a great Favour.

Sir To. Come, bring us, bring us where he is. [Exeunt.

SCENE III. The Street.

Enter Sebastian and Anthonio.

Seb. I would not by my Will have troubled you.
But since you make your Pleasure of your Pains,
I will no further chide you.

Ant. I could not stay behind you; my Desire,
More sharp than filed Steel, did spur me forth,
And not all Love to see you, tho' so much
As might have drawn one to a longer Voyage.
But Jealousie, what might befall your Travel,
Being skilless in these Parts; which to a Stranger,
Unguided and unfriended, often prove
Rough and unhospitable. My willing Love,
The rather by these Arguments of Fear
Set forth in your Pursuit.

Seb. My kind Anthonio,
I can no other Answer make, but Thanks;
But were my Worth, as is my Conscience firm,
You should find better Dealing: What's to do?
Shall we go see the Relicks of this Town?
Ant. To Morrow, Sir, best first go see your Lodging.
Seb. I am not weary, and 'tis long to Night,
I pray you let us fatishe our Eyes
With the Memorials, and the Things of Fame
That do renown this City.
Ant. Would you'd pardon me:
I do not without Danger walk these Streets.
Once in a Sea-fight gaunst the Duke his Gallies,
I did some Service, of such Note indeed,
That were I ta'en here, it would scarce be answer'd.
Seb. Belike you slew great number of his People:
Ant. Th'Offence is not of such a bloody Nature,
'Albeit the Quality of the Time and Quarrel,
Might well have given us bloody Argument:
It might have since been answer'd in repaying
What we took from them, which for Traffick's sake
Most of our City did. Only my self stood out,
For which if I be lapsed in this Place
I shall pay dear.
Seb. Do not then walk too open.
Ant. It doth not fit me: Hold, Sir, here's my Purse.
In the South Suburbs at the Elephant
Is best to lodge: I will bespeak our Diet,
Whiles you beguile the time, and feed your Knowledge
With viewing of the Town, there shall you have me.
Seb. Why 1 your Purse?
Ant. Haply your Eye shall light upon some Toy
You have desire to purchase; and your Store
I think, is not for idle Markers, Sir.
Seb. I'll be your Purse-bearer, and leave you
For an Hour.
Ant. To th' Elephant.
Seb. I do remember. [Exeunt.

SCENE IV. Olivia's House.

Enter Olivia and Maria.

Oli. I have sent after him; he says he'll come.
How shall I feast him? What bestow of him?
For Youth is bought more oft, than begg’d, or borrow’d.
I speak too loud; where’s Malvolio, he is sad and civil,
And suits well for a Servant with my Fortunes.
Where is Malvolio?

Mar. He’s coming, Madam:
But in very strange manner. He is sure possed, Madam;
Oli. Why, what’s the matter, does he rave?

Mar. No, Madam, he does nothing but smile; your Ladyship were best to have some guard about you, if he come,
for sure the Man is tainted in’s Wits.
Oli. Go call him hither.

Enter Malvolio.

I am as mad as he,
If sad and merry Madness equal be.
How now, Malvolio?

Mal. Sweet Lady, ha, ha. [Smiles fantastically.
Oli. Smil’st thou? I sent for thee upon a sad Occasion;
Mal. Sad Lady, I could be sad;
This does make some Obstruction in the Blood;
This cross-gartering, but what of that?
If it please the Eye of one, it is with me as the very true Sonnet is: Please one, and Please all.
Oli. Why? how do’st thou Man?
What is the matter with thee?

Mal. Not black in my Mind, tho’ yellow in my Legs:
It did come to his Hands, and Commands shall be executed. I think we do know that sweet Roman Hand.

Oli. Wilt thou go to Bed, Malvolio?

Mal. To Bed? ay, Sweet Heart, and I’ll come to thee.
Oli. God comfort thee; why dost thou smile so, and kiss thy Hand so oft?

Mar. How do you Malvolio?

Mal. At your Request?

Yes, Nightingales answer Daws.

Mar. Why appear you with this ridiculous Boldness before my Lady?

Mal. Be not afraid of Greatness; ’twas well writ.

Oli. What meanest thou by that, Malvolio?

Mal. Some are born great—

Oli. Ha?
Twelfth-Night: Or,

Mal. Some atchieve Greatness—
Oli. What say'ft thou?
Mal. And some have Greatness thrust upon them—
Oli. Heav'n restore thee.
Mal. Remember who commended thy yellow Stockings—
Oli. Thy yellow Stockings?
Mal. And wish'd to see thee crofs-garter'd—
Oli. Crofs-garter'd?
Mal. Go to, thou art made, if thou desir'st to be so—
Oli. Am I made?
Mal. If not, let me see thee a Servant still.
Oli. Why this is very Midsummer Madness.

Enter Servant.

Ser. Madam, the young Gentleman of the Duke Orsino's is return'd, I could hardly entreat him back; he attends your Ladyship's Pleasure.
Oli. I'll come to him.

Good Maria, let this Fellow be look'd to. Where's my Uncle Toby? let some of my People have a special care of him, I would not have him miscarry for the Half of my Dowry. [Exit.

Mal. Oh, ho, do you come near me now? No worse Man than Sir Toby to look to me! This concurs directly with the Letter, she sends him on purpose that I may appear stubborn to him; for she incites me to that in the Letter. Caft thy humble Slough, says she; be opposite with a Kinsman, surly with Servants, let thy Tongue tang with Arguments of State, put thy self into the Trick of Singularity, and consequently sets down the manner how; as a Sad Face, a reverend Carriage, a flow Tongue, in the Habit of some Sir of Note, and so forth. I have lim'd her, but it is Jove's doing, and Jove make me thankful; and when she went away now, let this Fellow be look'd to: Fellow! Not Malcolm, nor after my Degree, but Fellow. Why every thing adheres together, that no Dram of a Scruple, no Scruple of a Scruple; no Obstacle; no incredulous or unsafe Circumstance—What can be said? Nothing that can be, can come between me, and the full Prospect of my Hopes, Well Jove, not I, is the Doer of this, and he is to be thanked.

Enter
Enter Sir Toby, Fabian and Maria.

Sir To. Which way is he, in the Name of Sanctity? If all
the Devils in Hell be drawn in little, and Legion himself
poiseth him, yet I'll speak to him.

Fab. Here he is, here he is; how is't with you, Sir?
How is't with you, Man?

Mal. Go off, I discard you; let me enjoy my Privacy:
Go off.

Mar. Lo, how hollow the Fiend speaks within him; did
not I tell you? Sir Toby, my Lady prays you to have a
Care of him.

Mal. Ah ha, does she so?

Sir To. Go to, go to; peace, peace; we must deal gently
with him; let him alone. How do you, Malvolio? How
is't with you? What Man, defy the Devil; consider he's
an Enemy to Mankind.

Mal. Do you know what you say?

Mar. La you! and you speak ill of the Devil, how he
takes it at Heart. Pray God he be not bewitch'd.

Fab. Carry his Water to th' wife Woman.

Mar. Marry and it shall be done to Morrow Morning
if I live. My Lady would not lose him for more than I'll
say.

Mal. How now, Mistress?

Mar. O Lord.

Sir To. Prethee hold thy Peace, that is not the way: Do
you not see you move him? let me alone with him.

Fab. No way but Gentleness, gently, gently; the Fiend
is rough, and will not be roughly us'd.

Sir To. Why how now my Bawcock? How dost thou, Chuck?

Mal. Sir.

Sir To. Ay Biddy, come with me. What Man, 'tis not
for Gravity to play at Cherry-pit with Satan. Hang him
foul Collier.

Mar. Get him to say his Prayers, good Sir Toby, get
him to pray.

Mal. My Prayers, Minx!

Mar. No I warrant you, he will not hear of Godli-
ness.

Mal. Go hang your felves all; you are idle shallow

Vol. III. C Things,
Things, I am not of your Element, you shall know more hereafter. [Exit.

Sir To. Is't possible?

Fab. If this were plaid upon a Stage now, I could condemn it as an improbable Fiction.

Sir To. His very Genius hath taken the Infection of the Device, Man.

Mar. Nay, pursue him now, lest the Device take Air, and taint.

Fab. Why we shall make him mad indeed.

Mar. The House will be the quieter.

Sir To. Come, we'll have him in a dark Room and bound. My Neece is already in the Belief that he's mad; we may carry it thus for our Pleasure and his Penance, till our very Pastime tired out of Breath, prompt us to have Mercy on him; at which time we will bring the Device to the Bar, and crown thee for a Finder of Madmen; but see, but see.

Enter Sir Andrew.

Fab. More Matter for a May Morning.

Sir And. Here's the Challenge, read it: I warrant there's Vinegar and Pepper in't.

Fab. Is't so fawcy?

Sir And. Ay, is't? I warrant him: Do but read.

Sir To. Give me. [Sir Toby reads.

Youth, whatsoever thou art, thou art but a scurvy Fellow.

Fab. Good and valiant.

Sir To. Wonder not, nor admire not in thy Mind why I do call thee so, for I will shew thee no Reason for't.

Fab. A good Note, that keeps you from the Blow of the Law.

Sir To. Thou com'st to the Lady Olivia, and in my Sight she sees thee kindly; but thou liest in thy Throat, that is not the matter I challenge thee for.

Fab. Very brief, and exceeding good Sense-lees.

Sir To. I will way-lay thee going home, where if it be thy Chance to kill me——

Fab. Good.

Sir To. Thou killst me like a Rogue and a Villain.

Fab. Still you keep o' th' windy Side of the Law; Good.

Sir:
Sir To. Fare thee well, and God have mercy upon one of our souls: he may have mercy upon mine, but my hope is better, and so look to thy self. Thy friend as thou us'lt him, and thy sworn enemy, Andrew Ague-cheek.

Sir To. If this letter move him not, his legs cannot: I'll give't him.

Mar. You may have very fine occasion for't: He is now in some commerce with my lady, and will by and by depart.

Sir To. Go, Sir Andrew, scout me for him at the corner of the orchard like a bum-baily; so soon as ever thou seest him, draw; and as thou draw'st, swear horribly; for it comes to pass oft, that a terrible oath, with a swaggering, accent sharply twang'd off, gives manhood more approbation than ever proof it self would have earn'd him. Away.

Sir And. Nay, let me alone for swearing. [Exit.

Sir To. Now will not I deliver his letter; for the behaviour of the young gentleman gives him out to be of good capacity and breeding; his employment between his Lord and my niece, confirms no less; therefore this letter being so excellently ignorant, will breed no terror in the youth; he will find that it comes from a god-pole. But, sir, I will deliver his challenge by word of mouth; let upon Ague-cheek a notable report of valour, and drive the gentleman, as I know his youth, will aptly receive it, into a most hideous opinion of his rage, skill, fury, and impetuosity. This will so fright them both, that they will kill one another by the look, like cockatrices.

Enter Olivia and Viola.

Fab. Here he comes with your niece; give them way, till he take leave, and presently after him.

Sir To. I will meditate the while upon some horrid message for a challenge. [Exit

Oli. I have said too much unto a heart of stone, And laid mine honour too uncharily on't.
There's something in me that reproves my fault;
But such a head-strong potent fault it is, That it but mocks reproof.

Vio. With the same havious that your passion bears, Goes on my master's grief.

Oli. Here, wear this jewel for me, 'tis my picture; Refuse
Refuse it not, it hath no Tongue to vex you:
And I beseech you come again to Morrow.
What shall you ask of me that I'll deny,
That Honour, sav'd, may upon asking give?

Vio. Nothing but this, your true Love for my Master.
Oli. How with mine Honour may I give him that,
Which I have given to you.

Vio. I will acquit you.
Oli. Well, come again to Morrow: Fare thee well.
A Fiend like thee might bear my Soul to Hell. [Exit.

Enter Sir Toby and Fabian.

Sir To. Gentleman, God save thee.

Vio. And you, Sir.

Sir To. That Defence thou hast, betake thee to't; of what
Nature the Wrongs are thou hast done him, I know not; but
thy Interpreter full of Despight, bloody as the Hunter, at-
tends thee at the Orchard End; dismount thy Tuck, be
yare in thy Preparation, for thy Affrondant is quick, skilful,
and deadly.

Vio. You mistake, Sir, I am sure no Man hath any Quar-
rel to me; my Remembrance is very free and clear from
any Image of Offence done to any Man.

Sir To. You'll find it otherwise, I assure you; therefore,
if you hold your Life at any Price, betake you to your Guard,
for your Opposites hath in him, what Youth, Strength,
Skill, and Wrath can furnish a Man withal.

Vio. I pray you, Sir, what is he?

Sir To. He is Knight dubb'd with unhatch'd Rapier, and
on Carpet Consideration, but he is a Devil in private Brawl;
Souls and Bodies hath he divorc'd three; and his Incense-
ment at this Moment is so implacable, that Satisfaction
can be none but by Pangs of Death and Sepulcher: Hob,
odd, is his Word; give't or take't.

Vio. I will return again into the House, and desire some
Conduct of the Lady. I am no fighter. I have heard of
some kind of Men, that put Quarrels purposely on others
to raffe their Valour: Be like this is a Man of that Quirk.

Sir To. Sir, so: His Indignation drives it self out of a
very competent Injury, therefore get you on, and give him
his Desire. Back you shall not to the House, unless you underta-
take that with me, which with as much safety you might answer him; therefore on, or strip your Sword stark naked; for meddle you must, that’s certain, or forswear to wear Iron about you.

**Vio.** This is as uncivil as strange. I beseech you do me this courteous Office, as to know of the Knight what my Offence to him is: It is something of my Negligence, nothing of my Purpose.

**Sir To.** I will do so. Signior Fabian, stay you by this Gentleman till my Return. [Exit Sir Toby.]

**Vio.** Pray you, Sir, do you know of this matter?

**Fab.** I know the Knight is incens’d against you, evento a mortal Arbitrement, but nothing of the Circumstance more.

**Vio.** I beseech you what manner of Man is he?

**Fab.** Nothing of that wonderful Promise to read him by his Form, as you are like to find him in the Proof of his Valour. He is indeed, Sir, the most skilful, bloody, and fatal Opposite that you could possibly have found in any part of Illyria: Will you walk towards him? I will make your Peace with him, if I can.

**Vio.** I shall be much bound to you for’t: I am one that had rather go with Sir Priest than Sir Knight: I care not who knows so much of my Mettle. [Exit.

**Enter Sir Toby and Sir Andrew.**

**Sir To.** Why Man, he’s a very Devil; I have not seen such a Virago: I had a Pafs with him, Rapier, Scabbard and all; and he gives me the Stuck in with such a mortal Motion, that it is inevitable; and on the Answer, he pays you as surely as your Feet hit the Ground they step on. They say, he has been Fencer to the Sophy.

**Sir And.** Pox on’t, I’ll not meddle with him.

**Sir To.** Ay, but he will not now be pacified.

**Fabian** can scarce hold him.

**Sir And.** Plague on’t, and I thought he had been valiant, and so cunning in Fence, I’d have seen him damn’d ere I’d have challeng’d him. Let him let the matter slip, and I’ll give him my Horse, grey Capilet.

**Sir To.** I’ll make the Motion; stand here, make a good Shew on’t, this shall end without the Perdition of Souls; marry I’ll ride your Horse as well as I ride you.
Enter Fabian and Viola.

I have his Horse to take up the Quarrel, I have persuaded him the Youth's a Devil. [To Fabian.

Fab. He is horribly conceited of him; and pants and looks pale, as if a Bear were at his Heels.

Sir To. There's no Remedy, Sir, he will fight with you for's Oath fake: Marry he hath better betought him of his Quarrel, and he finds that now scarce to be worth talking of; therefore draw for the Supportance of his Vow, he protests he will not hurt you.

Vio. Pray God defend me; a little thing would make me tell them how much I lack of a Man.

Fab. Give Ground if you see him furious.

Sir To. Come. Sir Andrew, there's no Remedy, the Gentleman will for his Honour's sake have one bout with you; he cannot by the Duello avoid it; but he has promised me, as he is a Gentleman and a Soldier, he will not hurt you.

Come on, to.

[They draw.

Sir And. Pray God he keep his Oath.

Enter Antonio.

Vio. I do assure you 'tis against my Will.

Ant. Put up your Sword; if this young Gentleman have done offence, I take the Fault on me; if you offend him, I for him defy you.

[Drawing.

Sir To. You, Sir? Why, what are you?

Ant. One, Sir, that for his Love dares yet do more Than you have heard him brag to you he will.

Sir To. Nay, if you be an Undertaker, I am for you. [Draws.

Enter Officers.

Fab. O good Sir Toby, hold; here come the Officers.

Sir To. I'll be with you anon.

Vio. Pray, Sir, put your Sword up if you please. [To Sir Andrew.

Sir And. Marry will I, Sir; and for that I promis'd you I'll be as good as my Word. He will bear you easily, and reins well.

1 Off. This is the Man, do thy Office.


Ant. You do mistake me, Sir.

1 Off. No, Sir, no Jot; I know your Favour well;

Tho'
Tho' now you have no Sea-cap on your Head.
Take him away, he knows I know him well.

Ant. I must obey. This comes with seeking you;
But there's no Remedy. I shall answer it.
What will you do? Now my Necessity
Makes me to ask you for my Purse. It grieves me
Much more; for what I cannot do for you,
Than what befalls my self: You stand amaz'd,
But be of Comfort.

2 Off. Come, Sir, away.

Ant. I must intreat of you some of that Mony.
Vio. What Mony, Sir?
For the fair Kindness you have shew'd me here,
And part being prompted by your present Trouble,
Out of my lean and low Ability
I'll lend you something; my having is not much,
I'll make Division of my Present with you:
Hold, there's half my Coffer.

Ant. Will you deny me now?
Is't possible, that my Deserts to you
Can lack Persuasion? Do not tempt my Misery,
Left that it make me so unsound a Man,
As to upbraid you with those Kindnesses
That I have done for you.

Vio. I know of none,
Nor know I you by Voice, or any Feature.
I hate Ingratitude more in a Man.
Than Lying, Vainness, Babling Drunkenness,
Or any Taint of Vice, whose strong Corruption
Inhabits our frail Blood.

Ant. Oh Heav'n's themselves!

2 Off. Come, Sir, I pray you go.

Ant. Let me speak a little. This Youth that you see here,
I snatch'd one Half out of the Jaws of Death,
Reliev'd him with such Sanctity of Love,
And to his Image, which methought did promise
Most venerable Worth, did I Devotion.

1 Off. What's that to us? the Time goes by; away.

Ant. But oh, how vild an Idol proves this God!
Thou hast, Sebastian, done good Feature shame,
In Nature there’s no Blemish but the Mind:
None can be call’d Deform’d but the Unkind.
Virtue is Beauty, but the beauteous Evil
Are empty Trunks, o’erflourish’d by the Devil.

Off. The Man grows mad, away with him:
Come, come, Sir.

Ant. Lead me on.

Sir. Methinks his Words do from such Passion fly,
That he believes himself; so do not I:
Prove true Imagination, oh prove true,
That I, dear Brother, be now ta’en for you.

Sir To. Come hither, Knight, come hither, Fabian; we’ll
whisper o’er a Couplet or two of most sage Saws.

Vio. He nam’d Sebastian; I my Brother know
Yet living in my Glass, even such, and so
In Favour was my Brother, and he went
Still in this Fashion, Colour, Ornament,
For him I imitate: Oh if it prove,
Tempelts are kind, and salt Waves fresh in Love.

Sir To. A very dishonest paltry Boy, and more a Coward
than a Hare; his Dishonesty appears in leaving his Friend
here in Necessity, and denying him; and for his Coward-
ship ask Fabian.

Fab. A Coward, a most devout Coward, religious in
it.

Sir And. ’Slid I’ll after him again, and beat him.
Sir To. Do, cuff him soundly, but never draw thy Sword.
Sir And. And I do not.

Fab. Come, let’s see the Event.

Sir To. I care lay any Mony ’twill be nothing yet.

[Exit.

ACT
ACT IV. SCENE I.

SCENE the Street.

Enter Sebastian and Clown.

Clo. WILL you make me believe that I am not sent for you?

Seb. Go to, go to, thou art a foolish Fellow, Let me be clear of thee.

Clo. Well held out i' faith: No, I do not know you, nor I am not sent to you by my Lady, to bid you come speak with her; nor your Name is not Master Cesario, nor this is not my Nose neither; nothing that is so, is so.

Seb. I prethee vent thy Folly somewhere else, thou know'st not me.

Clo. Vent my Folly! He has heard that Word of some great Man, and now applies it to a Fool. Vent my Folly! I am afraid this great Lubber the World will prove a Cockney: I prethee now ungird thy Strangeness, and tell me what I shall vent to my Lady; shall I vent to her that thou art coming?

Seb. I prethee foolish Greek depart from me, there's Mony for thee. If you tarry longer I shall give worse Payment.

Clo. By my Troth thou haft an open Hand; these w't Men that give Fools Mony, get themselves a good Report after fourteen Years Purchase.

Enter Sir Andrew, Sir Toby, and Fabian.

Sir And. Now, Sir, have I met you again? There's for you. [Striking Sebastian.

Seb. Why there's for thee, and there, and there: Are all the People mad? [Beating Sir Andrew.

Sir To. Hold, Sir, or I'll throw your Digger o'er the House.

Clo. This will I tell my Lady strait: I would not be in some of your Coats for two Pence. [Exit Cloa.

Sir To. Come on, Sir, hold. [Holding Sebastian.

Sir And.
Twelfth-Night: Or,

Sir Andr. Nay, let him alone, I'll go another way to work with him; I'll have an Action of Battery against him, if there be any Law in Illyria; tho' I struck him first—yet it's no matter for that.

Seb. Let go thy Hand.

Sir To. Come, Sir, I will not let you go. Come my young Soldier, put up your Iron; you are well flesh'd: Come on.

Seb. I will be free from thee. What would'st thou now? If thou dar'st tempt me further, draw thy Sword.

Sir To. What, what? Nay then I must have an Ounce or two of this malapert Blood from you. [They draw and fight.

Enter Olivia.

Oli. Hold, Toby, on thy Life I charge thee hold.

Sir To. Madam.

Oli. Will it be ever thus? Ungracious Wretch, Fit for the Mountains and the barbarous Caves, Where Manners ne'er were preach'd: Out of my Sight. Be not offended, dear Cefario. Rudesby be gone. I prethee, gentle Friend,

[Exeunt Sir Toby and Sir Andrew.

Let thy fair Wisdom, not thy Passion sway In this uncivil and unjust Extent Against thy Peace. Go with me to my House, And hear thou there, how many fruitless Pranks This Russian hath botch'd up, that thou thereby May'st smile at this: Thou shalt not chuse but go: Do not deny; befrew his Soul for me, He started one poor Heart of mine in thee.

Seb. What Relish is in this? How runs the Stream? Or I am mad, or else this is a Dream.

Let Fancy fill my Sense in Lethe deep, If it be thus to dream, still let me sleep.

Oli. Nay come I prethee, would thou'dst be rul'd by me?

Seb. Madam, I will.

Oli. O lay fo, and so be,

[Exeunt.

Scene
What you will.

SCENE II. Olivia's House.

Enter Maria and Clown.

Mar. Nay, I prethee put on this Gown and this Beard, make him believe thou art Sir Topas the Curate; do it quickly. I'll call Sir Toby the whilst.

Clo. Well, I'll put it on and I will dissemble myself in't; and I would I were the first that ever dissembled in such a Gown. I am not tall enough to become the Function well, nor lean enough to be thought a good Student; but to be said an honest Man, and a good Housekeeper, goes as fairly as to say, a careful Man and a great Scholar. The Competitors enter.

Enter Sir Toby.

Sir To. Jove bless thee, Mr. Parson.

Clo. Bonos dies, Sir Toby; for as the old Hermit of Prague, that never saw Pen and Ink, very wittily said to a Neice of King Gorbojack, that that is, is; so I being Mr. Parson, am Mr. Parson; for what is that, but that? and is, but is?

Sir To. To him, Sir Topas.

Clo. What hoa, I say, Peace in this Prison.

Sir To. The Knave counterfeits well; a good Knave.

[Malvolio within.

Mal. Who calls there?

Clo. Sir Topas the Curate, who comes to visit Malvolio the Lunatick.

Mal. Sir Topas, Sir Topas, good Sir Topas go to my Lady. Clo. Out hyperbolical Fiend, how vexest thou this Man? Talkest thou nothing but of Ladies?

Sir To. Well said, Master Parson.

Mal. Sir Topas, never was Man thus wrong'd, good Sir Topas do not think I am mad; they have laid me here in hideous Darkness.

Clo. Fie, thou dishonest Sathan; I call thee by the most modest Terms, for I am one of those gentle ones that will use the Devil himself with Courtesy: Say'st thou that House is dark?

Mal. As Hell, Sir Topas.

Clo.
Clo. Why it hath bay Windows transparent as Baricadit does, and the clear Stones towards the South North are as lustrous as Ebony; and yet complainest thou of Obstruction?

Mal. I am not mad, Sir Topas, I say to you this House is dark.

Clo. Mad-man, thou erreft; I say there is no Darkness but Ignorance, in which thou art more puzzled than the Egyptians in their Fogg.

Mal. I say this House is as dark as Ignorance, though Ignorance were as dark as Hell; and I say there was never Man thus abus'd; I am no more mad than you are, make the trial of it in any constant Question.

Clo. What is the Opinion of Pythagoras, concerning Wild-fowl?

Mal. That the Soul of our Grandam might happily inhabit a Bird.

Clo. What think'st thou of his Opinion?

Mal. I think nobly of the Soul, and no way approve his Opinion.

Clo. Fare thee well: Remain thou still in Darkness; thou shalt hold the Opinion of Pythagoras, ere I will allow of thy Wits, and fear to kill a Woodcock, left thou dispossess the House of thy Grandam. Fare thee well.

Mal. Sir Topas, Sir Topas.

Sir To. My most exquisite Sir Topas.

Clo. Nay, I am for all Waters.

Mar. Thou might'st have done this without thy Beard and Gown, he fees thee not.

Sir To. To him in thine own Voice, and bring me Word how thou find'st him: I would we were all rid of this Knave-ry. If he may be conveniently deliver'd, I would he were, for I am now so far in offence with my Neice, that I cannot pursuie with any Safety this Sport to the upshot. Come by and by to my Chamber.

[Exit.]

Clo. Hey Robin, jolly Robin, tell me how my Lady does.

[Singing.]

Mal. Fool.

Clo. My Lady is unkind, perdie.

Mal. Fool.

Clo. Alas, why is she so?

Mal.
Mal. Fool, I say.

Clo. She loves another—Who calls, ha?

Mal. Good Fool, as ever thou wilt deserve well at my hand, help me to a Candle, and Pen, Ink, and Paper; as I am a Gentleman, I will live to be thankful to thee for't.

Clo. Mr. Malvolio!

Mal. Ay, good Fool.

Clo. Alas, Sir, how fell you besides your five Wits?

Mal. Fool, there was never Man so notoriously abus'd; I am as well in my Wits, Fool, as thou art.

Clo. But as well! then thou art mad indeed, if you be no better in your Wits than a Fool.

Mal. They have here propertied me; keep me in darkness, send Ministers to me, Asses, and do all they can to face me out of my Wits.

Clo. Advise you what you say: The Minister is here, Malvolio, Malvolio, thy Wits the Heav'n's restore: Endeavour thy self to sleep, and leave thy vain bibble babble.

Mal. Sir Topas.


Mal. Fool, Ecool, Fool, I say.


Mal. Good Fool, help me to some Light, and some Paper; I tell thee I am as well in my Wits, as any Man in Illyria.

Clo. Well-a-day that you were, Sir.

Mal. By this Hand I am: Good Fool, some Ink, Paper and Light; and convey what I will set down to my Lady: It shall advantage thee more, than ever the bearing of Letter did.

Clo. I will help you to't. But tell me true, are you not mad indeed, or do you but counterfeit?

Mal. Believe me, I am not: I tell thee true.

Clo. Nay, I'll ne'er believe a Mad-man 'till I see his Brains. I will fetch you Light, and Paper, and Ink.

Mal. Fool, I'll require it in the highest degree; I prethee be gone.
Cle. I am gone, Sir, and anon, Sir,
I'll be with you again
In a trice, like to the old Vice,
Your Need to sustain.

Who with Dagger of Lath, in his Rage, and his Wrath,
Cries ab ha! to the Devil:
Like a mad Lad, pair thy Nails, Dad,
Adieu, good Man Drivel.  

[Exit.

SCENE III.

Enter Sebastian.

Seb. This is the Air, that is the glorious Sun,
This Pearl she gave me, I do feel't and see't.
And though 'tis wonder that enwraps me thus,
Yet 'tis not madness. Where's Anthony then?
I could not find him at the Elephant,
Yet there he was, and there I found this Credit,
That he did range the Town to seek me out.
His Counsel now might do me golden Service;
For tho' my Soul disputes well with my Sense,
That this may be some Error, but no Madness,
Yet doth this Accident and Flood of Fortune,
So far exceed all Instance, all Discourse,
That I am ready to distrust mine Eyes,
And wrangle with my Reason that persuades me
To any other Truth, but that I am mad,
Or else the Lady's mad; yet if 'tware so,
She could not sway her House, command her Followers;
Take, and give back Affairs, and their dispatch,
With such a smooth, discreet, and stately Bearing
As I perceive she does: There's something in't
That is deceivable. But here the Lady comes.

Enter Olivia and Priest.

Oli. Blame not this hast of mine: If you mean well,
Now go with me, and with this holy Man
Into the Chantry by; there before him,
And underneath that consecrated Roof,
Plight me the full assurance of your Faith,
That my most jealous and too doubtful Soul.

May
May live at Peace. He shall conceal it,
While you are willing it shall come to note,
What time we will our Celebration keep
According to my Birth. What do you say?

Seb. I'll follow this good Man, and go with you,
And having sworn Truth, ever will be true.

Oli. Then lead the way, good Father, and Heav'ns so shine;
That they may fairly note this Act of mine. [Exeunt.

ACT V. SCENE I.

Enter Clown and Fabian.

Fab. NOW, as thou lovest me, let me see this Letter.

Clo. Good Mr. Fabian, grant me another Request.

Fab. Any thing.

Clo. Do not desire to see this Letter.

Fab. This is to give a Dog, and in recompence desire my Dog again.

Enter Duke, Viola, Curio, and Lords.

Duke. Belong you to the Lady Olivia, Friends?

Clo. Ay, Sir, we are some of her Trappings.

Duke. I know thee well; how dost thou, my good Fellow?

Clo. Truly, Sir, the better for my Foes, and the worse for my Friends

Duke. Just the contrary; the better for thy Friends.

Clo. No, Sir, the worse.

Duke. How can that be?

Clo. Marry, Sir, they praise me, and make an Ais of me; now my Foes tell me plainly, I am an Ais: So that by my Foes, Sir, I profit in the Knowledge of my self, and by my Friends I am abused: So that Conclusions to be as Kifles, if your four Negatives make your two Affirmatives, why then the worse for my Friends, and the better for my Foes.

Duke. Why this is excellent.
Clo. By my troth, Sir, no; tho' it please you to be one of my Friends.

Duke. Thou shall not be the worse for me, there's Gold.

Clo. But that it would be double-dealing, Sir, I would you could make it another.

Duke. O you give me ill Counsel.

Clo. Put your Grace in your Pocket, Sir, for this once, and let your Flesh and Blood obey it.

Duke. Well, I will be so much a Sinner to be a double-dealer: There's another.

Clo. Primo, Secundo, Tertio, is a good Play, and the old saying is, the third pays for all: The triplex, Sir, is a good tripping Measure, or the Bells of St. Bennet, Sir, may put you in mind, one, two, three.

Duke. You can fool no more Mony out of me at this throw; If you will let your Lady know I am here to speak with her, and bring her along with you, it may awake my Bounty further.

Clo. Marry, Sir, lullaby to your Bounty 'till I come again. I go, Sir; but I would not have you to think, that my desire of having is the Sin of Covetousness; but, as you say, Sir, let your Bounty take a Nap, I will awake it anon.

[Exeunt Clown.

Enter Antonio and Officers.

Vio. Here comes the Man, Sir, that did rescue me.

Duke. That Face of his I do remember well;
Yet when I saw it last, it was besmear'd As black as Vulcan, in the smoak of War:
A bawbling Vessel was he Captain of,
For shallow Draught and Bulk unprizable,
With which such scathful Grapple did he make,
With the most noble Bottom of our Fleet,
That very Envy, and the Tongue of Loss
Cry'd Fame and Honour on him. What's the matter?

Off. Orsino, this is that Antonio
That took the Phenix and her Fraught from Candy,
And this is he that did the Tyger board,
When your young Nephew Titus lost his Leg:
Here in the Streets, desperate of Shame and State,
In private Brabble did we apprehend him.

Vio. He did me kindness, Sir; drew on my side,
But in conclusion put strange Speech upon me,
I know not what 'twas, but Distraction.

Duke. Notable Pirate, thou falt Water Thief,
What foolish Boldness brought thee to their Mercies,
Whom thou in Terms so bloody, and so dear
Hast made thine Enemies?

Ant. Orsino: Noble Sir,
Be pleas'd, that I shake off these Names you give me:

Antonio never yet was Thief, or Pirate;
Though I confess, on Base and Ground enough;

Orsino's Enemy. A Witchcraft drew me hither:
That most ungrateful Boy, there by your Side,
From the rude Sea's enraged and foamy Mouth
Did I redeem; a Wrack past Hope he was:
His Life I gave him, and did thereto add

My Love without Retention, or Restraint;
All this in Dedication. For his Sake,

Did I expose my self (pure for his Love)
Into the Danger of this adverse Town,
Drew to defend him, when he was beset;
Where being apprehended, his false Cunning
(Not meaning to partake with me in Danger)
Taught him to face me out of his Acquaintance,
And grew a twenty Years removed thing,

While one would wink; deny'd me mine own Purse;
Which I had recommended to his use,

Not half an Hour before.

Vio. How can this be?

Duke. When came he to this Town?

Ant. To Day, my Lord; and for three Months before;

No Interim, not a minute's Vacancy,
Both Day and Night did we keep Company.

Enter Olivia and Attendants.

Duke. Here comes the Countess; now Heavn walks on

Earth;

But for thee, Fellow; Fellow, thy Words are Madness:
Three Months this Youth hath tended upon me;
But more of that anon. Take him aside.
Oli. What would my Lord, but that he may not have, 
Wherein Olivia may seem serviceable?

Cesario. you do not keep Promise with me.

Vio. Madam.


Oli. What do you say, Cesario? Good my Lord——

Vio. My Lord would speak, my Duty hushes me.

Oli. If it be ought to the old Tune, my Lord,

It is as fat and fullome to mine Ear,

As howling after Musik.

Duke. Still so cruel?

Oli. Stille so constant, Lord.

Duke. What to Perverseness? you uncivil Lady,

To whose ingrate, and unauspicious Altars,

My Soul the faithfulst Offerings have breath'd out

That ere Devotion tender'd. What shall I do?

Oli. Even what it please my Lord, that shall become

him.

Duke. Why should I not, had I the Heart to do it,

Like to the Egyptian Thief, at point of Death

Kill what I love? a savage Jealousie,

That sometimes favours nobly; but hear me this:

Since you to Non-Regardance cast my Faith,

And that partly I know the Instrument

That screws me from my true Place in your Favour:

Live you the Marble-breasted Tyrant still.

But this your Minion, whom I know you love,

And whom, by Heav'n. I swear, I tender dearly,

Him will I tear out of that cruel Eye,

Where he sits crowned in his Master's Spight.

Come Boy with me, my Thoughts are ripe in Mischief:

I'll sacrifice the Lamb that I do love,

To spight a Raven's Heart within a Dove.

Vio. And I most jocund, apt, and willingly,

To do you Rest a thousand Deaths would die.

Oli. Where goes Cesario?

Vio. After him I love,

More than I love these Eyes, more than my Life,

More by all mores, than e'er I shall love Wife.

If I do feign, you Witnessse above

Punish my Life, for tainting of my Love!
Ol! Ay me, detested! how am I beguil'd?
Vio. Who does beguil you? who does do you wrong?
Ol! Hast thou forgot thy self? Is it so long?

Call forth the holy Father.
Duke. Come, away.
Duke. Husband?
Ol! Ay, Husband; can he that deny?
Duke. Her Husband, Sirrah?
Vio. No, my Lord, not I.
Ol! Alas, it is the Baseness of thy Fear,
That makes thee strangle thy Propriety:
Fear not Cesario, take thy Fortunes up,
Be that thou know'ft thou art, and then thou art
As great as that thou fear'ft.

Enter Priest.

O welcome, Father.
Father, I charge thee by thy Reverence
Here to unfold, tho' lately we intended
To keep in Darkness, what occasion now
Reveals before 'tis ripe; what thou dost know
Hath newly past between this Youth and me.

Priest. A Contract of eternal Bond of Love,
Confirm'd by mutual joinder of your Hands,
Attested by the holy close of Lips,
Strengthned by entechangement of your Rings,
And all the Ceremony of this Compact
Seal'd in my Function, by my Testimony:
Since when, my Watch hath told me, toward my Grave
I have travell'd but two Hours

Duke. O thou dissembling Cub; what wilt thou be
When Time hath show'd a grizzel on thy Cafe?
Or will not else thy Craft so quickly grow,
That thine own Trip shall be thine Overthrow?
Farewel, and take her, but direct thy Feet,
Where thou and I, henceforth, may never meet.
Vio. My Lord, I do protest------
Ol! O do not swear;
How little Faith, tho' thou hast too much Fear!
Enter Sir Andrew with his Head broke.

Sir And. For the Love of God a Surgeon, and send one presently to Sir Toby.

Oli. What's the matter?

Sir And. Has broke my Head a-croso, and given Sir Toby a bloody Coxcomb too: For the Love of God your help, I had rather than forty Pound I were at home.

Oli. Who has done this, Sir Andrew?

Sir And. The Count's Gentleman, one Cesario; we took him for a Coward, but he's the very Devil incarnate.

Duke. My Gentleman Cesario?

Sir And. Od's lifelings, here he is: You broke my Head for nothing, and that that I did, I was set on to do't by Sir Toby.

Oli. Why do you speak to me? I never hurt you: You drew your Sword upon me without Cause, But I bespake you fair, and hurt you not.

Enter Sir Toby and Clown.

Sir And. If a bloody Coxcomb be a hurt, you have hurt me: I think you feit nothing by a bloody Coxcomb. Here comes Sir Toby halting, you shall hear more; but if he had not been in drink, he would have tickled you other-gates than he did.

Duke. How now, Gentleman? how is't with you?

Sir To. That's all one, ha's hurt me, and there's an end on't; Sot, didn't see Dick Surgeon, Sot?

Clo. O he's drunk, Sir, above an hour agoone; his Eyes were set at eight i'th' Morning.

Sir To. Then he's a Rogue after a paffy measures Pavin: I hate a drunken Rogue.

Oli. Away with him: Who hath made this havock with them?

Sir And. I'll help you, Sir Toby, because we'll be drest together.

Sir To. Will you help an Afs-head, and a Coxcomb, and a Knave, a thin fac'd Knave, a Gull? [Exe Clo To & And.

Oli. Get him to Bed, and let his Hurt be look'd to.

Enter Sebastian.

Seb. I am sorry, Madam, I have hurt your Uncle: But had it been the Brother of my Blood,
What you will.

I must have done no less with Wit and Safety.
You throw a strange Regard upon me, and by that
I do perceive it hath offended you;
Pardon me, sweet one, even for the Vows
We made each other, but so late ago.

Duke. One Face, one Voice, one Habit, and two Persons;
A natural Perspective, that is, and is not.

Seb. Antonio, O my dear Antonio!
How have the Hours rack'd and tortur'd me,
Since I have loft thee?

Ant. Sebastian are you?

Seb. Fear'd thou that, Antonio?

Ant. How have you made Division of your self?
An Apple cleft in two, is not more twin
Than these two Creatures. Which is Sebastian?

Oli. Most Wonderful!

Seb. Do I stand there? I never had a Brother:
Nor can there be a Deity in my Nature
Of here and every where. I had a Sister,
Whom the blind Waves and Surges have devour'd:
Of Charity, what kin are you to me? [To Viola;
What Countryman? what Name? what Parentage?

Vio. Of Messaline; Sebastian was my Father,
Such a Sebastian was my Brother too:
So went he suited to his watery Tomb.
If Spirits can assume both Form and Suit,
You come to fright us.

Seb. A Spirit I am indeed,
But am in that Dimension grossly clad,
Which from the Womb I did participate.
Were you a Woman, as the rest go even,
I should my Tears let fall upon your Cheek,
And say, thrice welcome drowned Viola.

Vio. My Father had a Mole upon his Brow.

Seb. And so had mine.

Vio. And dy'd that day when Viola from her Birth
Had numbred thirteen Years.

Seb. O that Record is lively in my Soul,
He finish'd indeed his mortal Act
That day that made my Sister thirteen Years.
Vio. If nothing lets to make us happy both,
But this my Malecine usurp'd Attire;
Do not Embrace me, 'till each Circumstance
Of Place, Time, Fortune, do cohere and jump
That I am Viola; which to confirm,
I'll bring you to a Captain in this Town
Where I ye my Maiden Weeds; by whose gentle help
I was preserv'd to serve this Noble Duke.
All the Occurrence of my Fortune since
Hath been between this Lady, and this Lord.

Séb. So comes it, Lady, you have been mistook: [To Oli.
But Nature to her Bias drew in that.
You would have been contracted to a Maid,
Nor are you therein, by my Life, deceit'd,
You are betroth'd both to a Maid and Man.

Duke. Be not amaz'd, right Noble is his Blood:
If this be so, as yet the Glafs seems true,
I shall have share in this most happy Wreck.
Boy, thou hast said to me a thousand Times, [To Viola.
Thou never should'st love Woman like to me.

Vio. And all those sayings will I over-swear,
And all those swearings keep as true in Soul,
As doth that orb'd Continent the Fire
That fevers Day from Night.

Duke. Give me thy Hand,
And let me see thee in thy Woman's Weeds.

Vio. The Captain that did bring me first on Shore,
Hath my Maids Garments: He upon some Action
Is now in Durance, at Malvolio's Suit,
A Gentleman and Follower of my Lady's.

Oli. He shall enlarge him: Fetch Malvolio hither.
And yet alas, now I remember me,
They say, poor Gentleman, he's much distraught.

Enter the Clown with a Letter and Fabian.

A most exacting Frenzy of mine own
From my Remembrance clearly banish'd his.
How does he, Sirrah?

Clo. Truly, Madam, he holds Belzebub at the Staves
end as well as a Man in his Cafe may do: Has here writ a
Letter to you, I should have given it you to day Morning.
But as a mad Man's Epistles are no Gospels, so it skills not much when they are deliver'd.

Oli. Open't and read it.

Clo. Look then to be well edify'd, when the Fool delivers the Mad-man—By the Lord, Madam. [Reads.

Oli. How now, art thou mad?

Clo. No, Madam, I do but read Madmef's: And your Ladyship will have it as it ought to be, you must allow Vox.

Oli. Prithee read it i' thy right Wits.

Clo. So I do, Madam; but to read his right Wits, is to read thus: Therefore perpend, my Princes, and give ear.

Oli. Read it you, Sirrah. [To Fabian.

Fab. [Reads.] By the Lord, Madam, you wrong me, and the World shall know it: Though you have put me into Darkness, and given your drunken Uncle Rule over me, yet have I benefit of my Senses as well as your Ladyship. I have your own Letter, that induced me to the semblance I put on; with the which I doubt not, but to do my self much Right, or you much Shame: Think of me as you please: I leave my Duty a little unthought of, and speak out of my Injury.

The madly us'd Malcolm.

Oli. Did he write this?

Clo. Ay, Madam.

Duke. This favours not much of Distraction.

Oli. See him deliver'd, Fabian, bring him hither.

My Lord, so please you, these things further thought on,

To think me as well a Sister, as a Wife,

One Day shall crown th' Alliance on't, so please you;

Here at my House, and at my proper Cost.

Duke. Madam, I am most apt t' embrace your Offer,

Your Master quits you; and for your Service done him,

So much against the Metal of your Sex. [To Viola.

So far beneath your soft and tender Breeding,

And since you call'd me Master, for so long;

Here is my Hand, you shall from this time be

Your Master's Mistress.

Oli. A Sister, you are she.

Enter

Enter
Enter Malvolio.

**Duke.** Is this the mad Man?

**Oli.** Ay, my Lord, this same: How now Malvolio!

**Mal.** Madam, you have done me wrong.

Notorious Wrong.

**Oli.** Have I, Malvolio? No.

**Mal.** Lady, you have; pray you peruse that Letter. You must not now deny it is your Hand. Write from it if you can, in Hand or Phrase, Or say 'tis not your Seal, nor your Invention; You can say none of this. Well, grant it then, And tell me in the modesty of Honour, Why you have given me such clear lights of Favour, Bad me come smiling, and cross-garter'd to you, To put on yellow Stockings, and to frown Upon Sir Toby, and the lighter People? And acting this in an obedient Hope, Why have you suffer'd me to be imprison'd, Kept in a dark House, visited by the Priest, And made the most notorious Geek or Gull That e'er Invention plaid on? Tell me why?

**Oli.** Alas, Malvolio, this is not my Writing, Tho', I confess, much like the Character: But, out of question, 'tis Maria's Hand. And now I do bethink me, it was the First told me thou wast mad; then cam'st in smiling, And in such Forms, which here were presuppos'd Upon thee in the Letter: Prithee be content, This Practice hath most shrewdly past upon thee; But when we know the Grounds and Authors of it; Thou shalt be both the Plaintiff and the Judge Of thine own Cause.

**Fab.** Good Madam, hear me speak, And let no Quarrel, nor no Brawl to come, Taint the Condition of this present Hour, Which I have wondered at. In hope it shall not, Most freely I confess my self and Toby Set this Device against Malvolio here, Upon some stubborn and uncourteous Parts We had conceiv'd against him. Maria writ
The Letter, at Sir Toby's great importance,
In recompence whereof he hath Married her.
How with a sportful Malice it was follow'd,
May rather pluck on Laughter than Revenge,
If that the Injuries be justly weigh'd,
That have on both sides past.

Oli. Alas, poor Fool! how have they baffled thee?
Clo. Why some are born Great, some achieve Greatness,
and some have Greatness thrown upon them. I was one,
Sir, in this Interlude, one Sir Topas, Sir, but that's all one:
By the Lord, Fool, I am not mad; but do you remember,
Madam, why laugh you at such a barren Rascal? And you
smile not he's gag'd: And thus the Whirl-gigg of Time
brings in his Revenges.

Mal. I'll be reveng'd on the whole pack of you. [Exit.
Oli. He hath been most notoriously abus'd.
Duke. Pursue him, and entreat him to a Peace:
He hath not told us of the Captain yet;
When that is known, and golden Time convents,
A solemn Combination shall be made
Of our dear Souls. Mean time, sweet Siter,
We will not part from hence. Cafario come,
(For so you shall be, while you are a Man;)
But when in other Habits you are seen,
Orsino's Mistrefs, and his Fancy's Queen. [Exeunt.

Clown sings.

When that I was and a little tiny Boy,
With hey, ho, the Wind and the Rain;
A foolish thing was but a Toy,
For the Rain it raineib every day.

But when I came to Man's Estate,
With hey, ho, &c.
'Gainst Knaves and Thieves Men shut their Gate,
For the Rain, &c.

But when I came at last to Wife,
With hey, ho, &c.

Vol. III D
Twelfth-Night.

By swaggering could I never thrive,
    For the Rain, &c.

But when I came unto my Beds,
    With hey, bo, &c.
With Toji-Pots still had drunken Heads,
    For the Rain, &c.

A great while ago the World begun,
    With hey, bo, &c.
But that's all one, our Play is done,
    And we'll strive to please you every Day.

[Exit.]
THE WINTER's TALE.

A COMEDY.

Printed in the YEAR MDCCXIV.
Dramatis Personæ.

Leontes, King of Sicilia.
Polixenes, King of Bohemia.
Mamillus, Young Prince of Sicilia.
Fiorizel, Prince of Bohemia.
Camillo,
Antigonus,
Cleomines,
Dion,
Archidamus, a Bohemian Lord.
Old Shepherd, reputed Father of Perdita.
Clown, his Son:
Aurolicus, a Rogue.

Hermione, Queen to Leontes.
Perdita, Daughter to Leontes and Hermione.
Paulina, Wife to Antigonus.
Emilia, a Lady attending on Hermione.
Mopsa,
Dorcas, Shepherdesses.

Goaler, Shepherds, Shepherdesses, and Attendants.

Scene partly in Sicilia, and partly in Bohemia.
THE WINTER'S TALE.

ACT I. SCENE I.

SCENE A Palace.

Enter Camillo and Archidamus.

ARCHIDAMUS.

If you shall chance, Camillo, to visit Bohemia, on the like occasion wherein my Services are now on foot, you shall see, as I have said, great difference betwixt our Bohemia, and your Sicilia.

Camillo. I think, this coming Summer, the King of Sicilia means to pay Bohemia the Visitation which he justly owes him.

Archidamus. Wherein our Entertainment shall shame us: We will be justified in our Loves; for indeed—

Camillo. 'Beech you—

Archidamus. Verily I speak it in the freedom of my knowledge; we cannot with such Magnificence— in so rare— I know not what to say— We will give you sleepy Drinks, that your Senses (unintelligent of our insufficiency) may, tho' they cannot praise us, as little accuse us.

Camillo. You pay a great deal too dear, for what's given freely.
Arch. Believe me, I speak as my Understanding instructs me, and as mine Honesty puts it to utterance.

Cam. Sicilia cannot shew himself over-kind to Bohemia; they were train'd together in their Childhoods; and there roo'd betwixt them then such an Affection, which cannot chuse but branch now. Since their more mature Dignities, and Royal Necessities, made separation of their Society; their Encounters, though not peronal, have been royally attornied with enterchange of Gifts, Letters, loving Embassies, that they have seem'd to be together, tho' absent; shook hands, as over a vast Sea, and embrac'd as it were from the ends of opposed Winds. The Heav'n's continue their Loves.

Arch. I think there is not in the World, either Malice or Matter to alter it. You have an unspeakable comfort of your young Prince Mamillus: it is a Gentleman of the greatest promise that ever came into my Note.

Cam. I very well agree with you in the hopes of him: It is a gallant Child, one that, indeed, Physicks the Subject, makes old Hearts fresh: They that went on Crutches ere he was born, desire yet their Life to see him a Man.

Arch. Would they else be content to die?

Cam. Yes, if there were no other excuse why they should desire to live.

Arch. If the King had no Son, they would desire to live on Crutches 'till he had one. [Exeunt.

SCENE II.

Enter Leontes, Hermione, Mamillus, Polixenes, and Camillo.

Pol. Nine changes of the watry Star hath been The Shepherd's Note, since we have left our Throne Without a Burthen, Time as long again Would be fill'd up, my Brother, with our Thanks, And yet we should, for perpetuity, Go hence in Debt: And therefore, like a Cypher, Yet standing in rich place, I multiply With one we thank you, many thousands more, That go before it.

Leo. Stay your Thanks a while,
And pay them when you part.

Pol. Sir, that's to Morrow:
I am question'd by my Fears of what may chance,
Or breed upon our absence, that may blow
No snatching Winds at home, to make us say,
This is put forth too truly: Besides, I have stay'd
To tire your Royalty.

Leo. We are tougher, Brother,
Than you can put us to't.

Pol. No longer stay.
Leo. One sev'n Night longer.
Pol. Very sooth, to Morrow.
Leo. We'll part the time between's then: and in that
I'll no gain-saying.

Pol. Pres't me not, 'beseech you, so;
There is no Tongue that moves, none, none i' th' World;
So soon as yours, could win me: so it should now
Were there Necessity in your Request, altho'
'Twere needful I deny'd it. My Affairs
Do even drag me homeward; which to hinder,
Were, in your Love, a Whip to me; my say,
To you a Charge and Trouble: To save both,
Farewel, our Brother.

Leo. Tongue-ty'd, our Queen? speak you.

Her. I had thought, Sir, to have held my peace, until
You had drawn Oaths from him, not to say: You, Sir,
Charge him too coldly. Tell him, you are sure
All in Bohemia's well: This Satisfaction
The by-gone Day proclaim'd; say this to him,
He's beat from his best Ward.

Leo. Well said, Hermione.

Her. To tell, he longs to see his Son, were strong;
But let him say so then, and let him go;
But let him swear so, and he shall not stay,
We'll thwack him hence with Diflaffs.
Yet of your Royal Presidence, I'll adventure [To Polixenes,
The borrow of a Week. When at Bohemia
You take my Lord, I'll give him my Commission,
To let him there a Month, behind the Geft
Perfix'd for's parting: Yet, good heed, Leontes,
I love thee not a jar o’th’ Clock behind
What Lady she her Lord. You’ll stay?
  Pol. No, Madam.
  Her. Nay, but you will.
  Pol. I may not verily.
  Her. Verily?
You put me off with limber Vows; but I,
Tho’ you would seek t’un sphere the Stars with Oaths,
Should yet say, Sir, no going. Verily
You shall not go; a Lady’s verily is
As potent as a Lord’s. Will you go yet?
Force me to keep you as a Prisoner,
Not like a Guest? So you shall pay your Fees
When you depart, and save your Thanks. How say you?
My Prisoner? or my Guest? by your dread verily,
One of them you shall be.
  Pol. Your Guest then, Madam:
To be your Prisoner, should import offending;
Which is for me less easie to commit,
Than you to punish.
  Her. Not your Goaler then,
But your kind Hostess; come, I’ll question you
Of my Lord’s Tricks and yours, when you were Boys?
You were pretty Lordings then?
  Pol. We were, fair Queen,
Two Lads, that thought there was no more behind,
But such a Day to Morrow, as to Day,
And to be Boy eternal.
  Her. Was not my Lord
The verier Wag o’th’ two?
  Pol. We were as twin’d Lambs, that did frisk i’ th’ Sun,
And bleat the one at th’ other; What we chang’d,
Was Innocence for Innocence; we knew not
The Doctrine of ill-doing, no nor dream’d
That any did: Had we pursu’d that Life,
And our weak Spirits ne’er been higher rear’d
With stronger Blood, we should have answer’d Heaven
Boldly, Not Guilty; the Imposition clear’d,
Hereditary ours.
  Her. By this we gather
You
You have tript since.

Pol. O my most sacred Lady,
Temptations have since then been born to's; for
In those unshiled Days, was my Wife a Girl;
Your precious self had then not crossed the Eyes
Of my young Play-fellow.

Her. Grace to boot:
Of this make no Conclusion, let you say
Your Queen and I are Devils. Yet go on,
Th'Offences we have made you do, we'll answer,
If you first fin'd with us, and that with us
You did continue Fault; and that you slipt not
With any but with us.

Leo. Is he won yet?

Her. He'll stay, my Lord.

Leo. At my Request he would not:

Hermione; my dearest, thou never spok'ft
To better Purpose:

Her. Never?

Leo. Never, but once.

Her. What? have I twice said well? When was't before?
I prethee tell me; Cram's with Praise, and make's
As fat as tame things: One good Deed, dying tongueless,
Slaughters a thousand, waiting upon that.

Our Praises are our Wages. You may ride's
With one soft Kiss a thousand. Furlongs, ere
With Spur we heat an Acre. But to th'Goal:
My last good Deed was to intreat his stay;
What was my first? It has an elder Sister,
Or I mistake you: O, would her Name were Grace.

But once before I spake to th'purpose? when?
Nay, let me have't; I long.

Leo. Why, that was when
Three crabbed Months had shuwr'd themselves to Death;
Ere I could make thee open thy white Hand,
And clepe thy self, my Love; then didst thou utter,
I am yours for ever.

Her. 'Tis Grace indeed.

Why do you now; I have spoke to th'purpose twice;
The one for ever earn'd a Royal Husband;

D 5
Th' other, for some while a Friend.  

_Leo._ Too hot, too hot—[Aside._

To mingle Friendship far, is mingling Bloods.
I have _Tremor Cordis_ on me—my Heart dances,
But not for _Joy_—not _Joy_—This Entertain't
May a free Face put on; derives a Liberty
From Heartiness, from Bounty, fertile Bofom,
And well becomes the Agent; 't may, I grant;
But to be padling Palms, and pinching Fingers,
As now they are, and making practis'd Smiles
As in a Looking-Gla's—and then to Sigh, as 'twere
The Mort o'th' Deer; oh, that is Entertainment
My Bofom likes not, nor my Brows—_Mamillus._
Art thou my Boy?

_Mam._ Ay, my good Lord.

_Leo._ I fecks!

Why that's my Bawcock; what? has't smutch'd thy Nose?
They say it is a Copy out of mine. Come, Captain,
We must be neat; not Neat, but cleanly, Captain,
And yet the Steer, the Heifer, and the Calf,
Are all call'd Neat. Still Virginalling

[Observing Polixenes and Hermione.

Upon his Palm—How now, you wanta Calf!
Art thou my Calf?

_Mam._ Yes, if you will, my Lord.  

_Leo._ Thou want'st a rough Patsh, and the Shoots that I
To be full, like me. Yet they say we are
Alnost as like as Eggs; Women say so,
That will say any thing; but were they false,
As o'er-dy'd Blacks, as Winds, as Waters; false
As Dice are to be wisht'd, by one that fixes
No Bourne 'twixt his and mine; yet were it true,
To say this Boy were like me. Come, Sir Page,
Look on me with your Welking Eye, sweet Villain.
Most dearest, my Collop—Can thy Dam? may't be—
Imagination! thou dost stab to th' Center.
Thou dost make possible things not be so held,
Communicat' with Dreams—how can this be?
With what's unreal, thou coactive art,
And follow'st nothing. Then 'tis very credent,

_Thou._
The Winter's Tale.

Thou may'st co-join with something, and thou do'st,
And that beyond commissition, and I find it,
And that to the Infection of my Brains,
And hardning of my Brows.

Pol. What means Sicilia?

Her. He something seems unsettled.

Pol. How? my Lord?

Leo. What cheer? how is it with you, my best Brother?

Her. You look as if you held a Brow of much distraction.

Are you mov'd, my Lord?

Leo. No, in good earneft,
How sometimes Nature will betray its Folly!
Its Tenderness! and make it self a Pastime
To harder Bofoms! Looking on the Lines
Of my Boy's Face, methoughts I did recoil
Twenty three Years, and saw my self unbreech'd,
In my green Velvet Coat; my Dagger muzzled,
Left it should bite its Matter, and to prove,
As Ornaments oft do, too dangerous;
How like, methought, I then was to this Kernel,
This Squash, this Gentleman. Mine honest Friend,
Will you take Eggs for Mony?

Mam. No, my Lord, I'll fight.

Leo. You will! why happy Man be's dole. My Brother,
Are you so fond of your young Prince, as we
Do seem to be of ours?

Pol. If at home, Sir,
He's all my Exercise, my Mirth, my Matter;
Now my I sworn Friend, and then mine Enemy;
My Parasite, my Soldier, States-man, all;
He make's a July's day short as December,
And with his varying Childn'ns, cures in me
Thoughts, that should thiek my Blood.

Leo. So stands this Squire
Offic'd with me: We two will walk, my Lord,
And leave you to your graver steps. Hermione,
How thou lov'st us, shew in our Brother's welcome
Let what is dear in Sicily be cheap:
Next to thy self, and my young Rover, he's
Apparent to my Heart.

Her.
Her. If you would seek us, 
We are yours i‘th Garden: shall’s attend you there? 
Leo. To your own bents dispose you; you’ll be found, 
Be you beneath the Sky: I am angling now, 
Tho’ you perceive me not how I give Line, 
Go to, go to. [Aside, observing Her.
How she holds up the Nib! the Bill to him!
And arms her with the boldness of a Wife
To her allowing Husband. Gone already!
Inch thick, Knee deep; o’er Head and Ears a fork’d one.
Go play, Boy, play—— Thy Mother plays, and I
Play too; but if disgrac’d a Part, whose Issue
Will hiss me to my Grave: Contempt and Clamour
Will be my Kneel. Go play, Boy, play—— There have been;
Or I am much deceiv’d, Cuckolds ere now;
And many a Man there is, even at this present,
Now while I speak this, holds his Wife by th’ Arm,
That little thinks she has been fluc’d in’s absence,
And his Pond fish’d by his next Neighbour, by
Sir Smile, his Neighbour: Nay there’s comfort in’t,
Whiles other Men have Gates, and those Gates open’d,
As mine, against their Will. Should all Despair
That have revolted Wives, the tenth of Mankind
Would hang themselves. Physick for’t there’s none:
It is a bawdy Planet, that will strike
Where ’tis predominant; and ’tis powerful: think it.
From East, West, North and South, be it concluded,
No Barricado for a Belly. Know’t,
It will let in and cut the Enemy,
With Bag and Baggage: Many a thousand of’s
Have the Disease, and feel’t not. How now, Boy?
Mam. I am like you, they say.
Leo. Why that’s some comfort.
What? Camillo there?
Cam. Ay, my good Lord.
Leo. Go play, Mamillus—— thou’rt an honest Man
[Exit Mamillus;
Camillo, this great Sir will yet stay longer.
Cam. You had much ado to make his Anchor hold;
When
When you cast out, it still came home.

Leo. Didst note it?

Cam. He would not stay at your Petitions, made
His Business more material.

Leo. Didst perceive it?

They're here with me already; whisp'ring, rounding:
Sicilia is a so-forth; 'tis far gone,
When I shall gust it last. How came't, Camillo,
That he did stay?

Cam. At the good Queen's Entreaty:

Leo. At the Queen's be't; Good should be pertinent;
But so it is, it is not. Was this taken
By any understanding Pate but thine?

For thy Conceit is soaking, will draw in
More than the common Blocks; not noted, is't,
But of the finer Natures? By some Severals
Of Head-piece extraordinary? Lower Messes
Perchance are to this Business purblind? Say.

Cam. Business, my Lord? I think most understand

Bohemia stays here longer.

Leo. Ha?

Cam. Stays here longer.

Leo. Ay, but why?

Cam. To satisfie your Highness, and the Entreaties

Of our most gracious Mistres.

Leo. Satisfie?

Th' Entreaties of your Mistres? Satisfie?

Let that suffice. I have-trusted thee, Camillo,

With all the nearest things to my Heart, as well
My Chamber-Councels, wherein, Priest like, thou

Hast cleans'd my Bosom: I, from thee departed

Thy Penitent reform'd; but we have been

Deceiv'd in thy Integrity, deceiv'd

In that which seems so.

Cam. Be it forbid, my Lord.

Leo. To bide upon't; thou art not honest; or,

If thou inclin'st that way, thou art a Coward,

Which boxes Honesly behind, restraining

From Course requir'd; or else thou must be counted

A Servant grafted in my serious Trust.
And therein negligent; or else a Fool,
That seest a Game plaid home, the rich Stake drawn;
And tak'ft it all for jest.

Cam. My gracious Lord,
I may be negligent, foolish and fearful;
In every one of these, no Man is free,
But that his Negligence, his Folly, Fear,
Amongst the infinite Doing of the World,
Sometime puts forth in your Affairs, my Lord.
If ever I were wilful negligent,
It was my Folly; if industriously
I play'd the Fool, it was my Negligence,
Not weighing well the End; if ever fearful
To do a thing, where I the Ifsie doubted,
Whereof the Execution did cry out
Against the Non-performance, 'twas a Fear
Which oft infects the Wiseft: These, my Lord,
Are such allow'd Infirmities, that Honesty
Is never free of. But beseech your Grace
Be plainer with me, let me know my Trespass
By its own Visage; if I then deny it,
'Tis none of mine.

Leo. Ha'not you seen, Camillo?
(But that's past Doubt; you have, or your Eye-glafs
Is thicker than a Cuckold's Horn) or heard?
(For to a Vision so apparent, Rumour
Cannot be mute) or thought (for Cogitation
Resides not in that Man, that do's not think)
My Wife is slippery? If thou wilt, confess,
Or else be impudently Negative,
To have nor Eyes, nor Ears, nor Thought, then say
My Wife's a Hobby-Horse, deserves a Name
As rank as any Flax-wench, that puts to
Before her Troth-plight: Say't and justify't.

Cam. I would not be a Stander-by, to hear
My Sovereign Mistress clouded so, without
My present Vengeance taken; 'threw my Heart,
You never spoke what did become you les
Than this, which to reiterate, were Sin
As deep as that, tho' true.
Leo. Is Whispering nothing?
Is leaning Cheek to Cheek? Is meeting Nooses?
Kissing with inside Lip? Stopping the Career
Of Laughter, with a Sigh? A Note infallible
Of breaking Honesty: horning Foot on Foot?
Skuaking in Corners? wishing Clocks more swift?
Hours Minutes? The Noon Midnight? and all Eyes
Blind with the Pin and Web, but theirs; theirs only,
That would unseen be wicked? Is this nothing?
Why then the World, and all that's in't, is nothing;
The covering Sky is nothing, Bohemia nothing,
My Wife is nothing, nor nothing have these Nothings;
If this be nothing.

Cam. Good my Lord, be cur'd
Of this diseas'd Opinion, and betimes,
For 'tis most dangerous.

Leo. Say it be, 'tis true.

Cam. No, no, my Lord.

Leo. It is; you lie, you lie:
I say thou liest, Camillo, and I hate thee,
Pronounce thee a grofs Lowt, a mindless Slave,
Or else a hovering Temporizer, that
Canst with thine Eyes at once see Good and Evil,
Inclining to them both: Were my Wife's Liver
Infected, as her Life, she would not live
The running of one Glass

Cam. Who do's infect her?

Leo. Why he that wears her like her Medal, hanging
About his Neck, Bohemia; who, if I
Had Servants true about me, that bear Eyes
To see alike mine Honour, as their Profits,
Their own particular Thrifts, they would do that,
Which should undo more doing: I, and thou
His Cup-bearer, whom I from meaner Form
Have bench'd, and rear'd to worship, who may'tt see
Plainly, as Heav'n sees Earth, and Earth sees Heav'n,
How I am gall'd, thou mightst be-spice a Cup,
To give mine Enemy a lasting Wink,
Which Draught to me were Cordial.

Cam.
Cam. Sir, my Lord,
I could do this, and that with no rash Potion,
But with a lingering Dram, that should not work,
Maliciously, like a Poison: But I cannot
Believe this Crack to be in my dread Mistrefs,
So soveraignly being honourable.
I have lov'd thee.

Leo. Make that thy Question, and go rot:
Do't think I am so muddy, so unsettled,
To appoint my self in this Vexation?
Sully the Purity and Whitenefs of my Sheets,
Which to preferre, is Sleep; which being spotted,
Is Goads, Thorns, Nettles, Tails of Wasps:
Give Scandal to the Blood o'th' Prince, my Son,
Who I do think is mine, and love as mine,
Without ripe moving to't? Would I do this?
Could Man so blench?

Cam. I must believe you, Sir,
I do, and will fetch off Bohemia for't:
Provided, that when he's remov'd, your Highnefs
Will take again your Queen, as yours at first,
Even for your Son's sake, and thereby for sealing
The Injury of Tongues, in Courts and Kingdoms
Known and ally'd to yours.

Leo. Thou doft advise me,
Even so as I mine own Course have set down:
I'll give no Blemish to her Honour, none.

Cam. My Lord,
Go then; and with a Countenance as clear
As Friendship wears at Feasts, keep with Bohemia,
And with your Queen: I am his Cup-bearer,
If from me he have wholesome Beveridge,
Account me not your Servant.

Leo. This is all.
Do't, and thou haft the one half of my Heart;
Do't not, thou split't thine own.

Cam. I'll do't, my Lord.

Leo. I will seem friendly, as thou haft advis'd me. [Exi.

Cam. O miserable Lady: But for me!

What Cale stand I in? I must be the Poisoner

Of
Of good Polixenes, and my Ground to do't,
Is the Obedience to a Master, one,
Who in Rebellion with himself, will have
All that are his, so too. To this Deed
Promotion follows. If I could find Example
Of thousands that had struck anointed Kings,
And flourisht after, I'd not do't: But since
Nor Brass, nor Stone, nor Parchment bears not one;
Let Villany it self forswear't. I must
Forsake the Court; To do't, or no, is certain
To me a Break-neck. Happy Star, reign now;
Here comes Bohemia.

Enter Polixenes.

Pol. This is strange! Methinks
My Favour here begins to warp. Not speak?
Good Day, Camillo.

Cam. Hail, most Royal Sir.

Pol. What is the News 't' Court?

Cam. None rare, my Lord.

Pol. The King hath on him such a Countenance;
As he had lost some Province, and a Region
Lov'd, as he loves himself: Even now I met him
With customary Compliment, when he
Wafting his Eyes to th' contrary, and falling
A Lip of much Contempt, Speeds from me, and
So leaves me to consider what is breeding,
That changes thus his Manners.

Cam. I dare not know, my Lord.

Pol. How, dare not? do not? Do you know, and dare not?
Be intelligent to me, 'tis thereabouts:
For to your self, what you do know, you must,
And cannot say, you dare not. Good Camillo,
Your chang'd Complexions are to me a Mirror,
Which shews me mine chang'd too; for I must be
A Party in this Alteration, finding
My self thus alter'd with it.

Cam. There is a Sickness
Which puts some of us in distemper; but
I cannot name the Disease, and it is caught
Of you that yet are well.
Pol. How caught of me?
Make me not sighted like the Basilisk,
I have look'd on Thousands, who have sped the better
By my Regard, but kill'd none so: Camillo,
As you are certainly a Gentleman, thereto
Clerk-like expedienc'd, which no lefs Adorns
Our Gentry, than our Parents noble Names,
In whose Success we are gentle: I beseech you,
If you know ought which do's behove my Knowledge.
Thereof to be inform'd, imprison't not
In ignorant Concealment.

Cam. I may not answer.

Pol. A Sickness caught of me, and yet I well?
I must be answer'd. Dost thou hear, Camillo,
I conjure thee by all the Parts of Man,
Which Honour do's acknowledge, whereof the least
Is not this Suit of mine, that thou declare
What Incidency thou dost guess of Harm
Is creeping towards me; how far off, how near,
Which way to prevented, if to be;
If not, how best to bear it.

Cam. Sir, I will tell you,
Since I am charg'd in Honour, and by him
That I think honourable; therefore mark my Counsel,
Which must be ev'n as swiftly follow'd as
I mean to utter it; or both your self and me,
Cry lost, and so good Night.

Pol. On, good Camillo.

Cam. I am appointed to murder you.

Pol. By whom, Camillo?

Cam. By the King.

Pol. For what?

Cam. He thinks, nay with all Confidence he swears,
As he had seen't, or been an Instrument
To vice you to't, that you have toucht his Queen
Forbiddenly.

Pol. Oh then, my best Blood turn
To an infect'd Gelly, and my Name
Be yoak'd with his that did betray the best:
Turn then my freakest Reputation to
A Savour, that may strike the dullest Nostril
Where I arrive; and my Approach be shun’d,
Nay hated too, worse than the great’st Infection
That e’er was heard, or read.

Cam. Swear his Thought over
By each particular Star in Heav’n, and
By all their Influences, you may as well
Forbid the Sea for to obey the Moon,
As or by Oath remove, or Counsel shake
The Fabrick of his Folly, whose Foundation
Is pil’d upon his Faith, and will continue
The standing of his Body.

Pol. How should this grow?

Cam. I know not; but I am sure ’tis safer to
Avoid what’s grown, than question how ’tis born.
If therefore you dare trust my Honesty,
That 1yes inclosed in this Trunk, which you
Shall bear along impawn’d, away to Night;
Your Followers I will whisper to the Busines,
And will by twoes, and threes, at several Posterns,
Clear them o’th’ City. For my self, I’ll put
My Fortunes to your Service, which are here
By this Discovery lost. Be not uncertain,
For by the Honour of my Parents, I
Have utter’d Truth; which if you seek to prove,
I dare not stand by; nor shall you be safer
Than one condemned by the King’s own M.uth:
Thereon his Execution sworn.

Pol. I do believe thee:
I saw his Heart in’s Face. Give me thy Hand;
Be Pilot to me, and thy Places shall
Still neighbour mine. My Ships are ready, and
My People did expect my hence departure
Two Days ago. This Jealousie
Is for a precious Creature; as she’s rare,
Must it be great; and, as his Person’s mighty;
Must it be violent; and, as he do’s conceive,
He is dishonour’d by a Man, which ever
Profess’d to him, why his Revenges must
In that be made more bitter. Fear o’er-shades me!

Good
Good Expedition be my Friend, and comfort
The gracious Queen, part of his Theam; but nothing
Of his ill-tane Suspicion. Come, Camillo,
I will respect thee as a Father, if
Thou beart it my Life off hence. Let us avoid.
Cam. It is in mine Authority to command
The Keys of all the Posterns: Please your Highness
To take the urgent Hour. Come, Sir, away. [Exeunt.

ACT II. SCENE I.

Enter Hermione, Mamillus, and Ladies.

Her. TAKE the Boy to you; he so troubles me;
'Tis past enduring.
1 Lady. Come, my gracious Lord,
Shall I be your Play-fellow?
Mam. No, I'll none of you.
1 Lady. Why, my sweet Lord?
Mam. You'll kiss me hard, and speak to me, as if
I were a Baby still; I love you better.
2 Lady. And why so, my Lord?
Mam. Not for because
Your Brows are blacker; yet black Brows, they say,
Become some Women best, so that there be not
Too much Hair there, but in a Semicircle,
Or a Half-Moon made with a Pen.
2 Lady. Who taught you this?
Mam. I learn'd it out of Womens Faces: Pray now,
What Colour be your Eye-brows?
1 Lady. Blue, my Lord.
Mam. Nay, that's a Mock: I have seen a Lady's Nose
That has been blue, but not her Eye-brows.
1 Lady. Hark ye,
The Queen, your Mother, rounds space: We shall
Present our Services to a fine new Prince
One of these Days, and then you'll wanton with us;
If we would have you.
The Winter's Tale.

Lady. She is spread of late
Into a goodly Bulk, good Time encounter her.

Her. What Wisdom flies amongst you? Come, Sir, now,
I am for you again. Pray you sit by us,
And tell's a Tale.

Mam. Merry, or sad, shall't be?

Her. As merry as you will.

Mam. A sad Tale's best for Winter.

*have one of Sprights and Goblins.*

Her. Let's have that, good Sir.

Come on, sit down. Come on, and do your best,
To fright me with your Sprights: You're powerful at it.

Mam. There was a Man——

Her. Nay, come sit down; then on.

Mam. Dwelt by a Church-yard: I will tell it softly;
And Crickets shall not hear it.

Her. Come on then, and give't me in mine Ear.

Enter Leontes, Antigonus, and Lords.

Leo. Was he met there? his Train? Camillo with him?

Lord. Behind the Tuft of Pines I met them; never
How I Men scowr so on their way: I ey'd them
Even to their Ships.

Leo. How blest am I
In my just Censure? In my true Opinion?
Alack, for lesser Knowledge, how accurs'd,
In being so blest? There may be in the Cup
A Spider sleep'd, and one may drink; depart,
And yet partake no Venom; for his Knowledge
Is not infected; but if one prefent
Th' abhor'red Ingredient to his Eye, make known
How he hath drunk, he cracks his Gorge, his Sides
With violent Hefts. I have drunk, and seen the Spider.

Camillo was his Help in this, his Pander:
There is a Plot against my Life, my Crown;
All's true that is mistrusted; that false Villain,
Whom I employ'd, was pre-employ'd by him;
He hath discover'd my Design, and I
Remain a pinch'd Thing; yea, a very Trick
For them to play at will: How came the Patterns
So easily open?

Lord.
Lord. By his great Authority,
Which often hath no less prevail'd, than so
On your Command.
Leo. I know't too well.
Give me the Boy, I am glad you did not nurse him;
Though he do's bear some Signs of me, yet you
Have too much Blood in him.
Her. What is this? Sport?
Leo. Bear the Boy hence, he shall not come about her.
Away with him, and let her sport herself
With that she's big with, for 'tis Polixenes
Has made thee swell thus.
Her. But I'd say he had not;
And I'll be sworn you would believe my Saying,
How e'er you lea to th' Nayward.
Leo. You, my Lords,
Look on her, mark her well; be but about
To say she is a goodly Lady, and
The Jusstice of your Hearts will thereto add,
'Tis Pity she's not honest: Honourable:
Praise her but for this her without-door Form,
Which on my Faith deserves high Speech, and straight
The Shrug, the Hum, or Ha, these Petty-brands
That Calumny doth use: Oh I am out,
That Mercy do's, for Calumny will fear
Virtue it self, these Shrugs, these Hum's, and Ha's,
When you have said she's goodly, come between
Ere you can say she's honest: But be't known,
From him that has most Cause to grieve it should be,
She's an Adultress.
Her. Should a Villain say so,
The most replenish'd Villain in the World,
He were as much more Villain: You, my Lord,
Do but mistake.
Leo. You have mistook, my Lady,
Polixenes for Leontes. O thou thing,
Which I'll not call a Creature of thy Place,
Left Barbarism, making me the Precedent,
Should a like Language use to all Degrees,
And mannerly Distinguishment leave out,
Betwixt the Prince and Beggar. I have said
She’s an Adulteress, I have said with whom:
More; she’s a Traitor, and Camillo is
A Federatry with her, and one that knows
What she should shame to know herself,
But with her most wild Principal; that she’s
A Bed-Swerver, even as bad as those
That Vulgar give bold’d Titles; ay, and privy
To this their late Escape.

Her. No, by my Life,
Privy to none of this: How will this grieve you;
When you shall come to clearer Knowledge, that
You thus have publish’d me? Gentle, my Lord,
You scarce can right me throughly then, to say
You did mistake.

Leo. No, if I mistake
In those Foundations which I build upon,
The Center is not big enough to bear
A School-boy’s Top. Away with her, to Prison:
He who shall speak for her, is afar off guilty,
But that he speaks.

Her. There is some ill Planet reigns;
I must be patient, ’till the Heav’n’s look
With an Aspect more favourable. Good my Lords,
I am not prone to weeping, as our Sex
Commonly are, the want of which vain Dew
Perchance shall dry your Pities; but I have
That honourable Grief lodg’d here, which burns
Worse than Tears drown: Beseech you all, my Lords,
With Tongs so qualified as your Charities
Shall best instruct you, measure me; and so
The King’s Will be perform’d.

Leo. Shall I be heard?

Her. Who is’t that goes with me? Beseech your Highness
My Women may be with me, for you see
My Plight requires it. Do not weep, good Fools,
There is no cause; when you shall know your Mistress
Has deliv’d Prison, then abound in Tears,
As I come out; this Action I now go on,
Is for my better Grace. Adieu, my Lord,
I never wish'd to see you sorry; now
I trust I shall. My Women come, you have leave:

Leo. Go. do our bidding; hence.

Lord. Befeech your Highness call the Queen again.

Ant. Be certain what you do, Sir, lest your Justice
Prove Violence, in the which three great ones suffer;
Your self, your Queen, your Son.

Lord. For her, my Lord,
I dare my Life lay down, and will do't, Sir,
Please you t'accept it, that the Queen is spotless;
I'm Eyes of Heav'n, and to you, I mean
In this which you accuse her.

Ant. If it prove
She's otherwife, I'll keep my Stables where
I lodge my Wife, I'll go in Couples with her:
Then when I feel, and see her, no further trust her;
For every Inch of Woman in the World,
Ay, every Dram of Woman's Flesh is false,
If she be.

Leo. Hold your Peacess.

Lord. Good my Lord.

Ant. It is for you we speak, not for our selves:
You are abused by some Putter-on,
That will be damn'd for't; would I knew the Villain,
I would Land-damn him: Be the Honour-flaw'd,
I have three Daughters; the Eldest is Eleven;
The second, and the third, nine; and Sons five;
If this prove true, they'll pay for't. By mine Honour
I'll geld 'em all: Fourteen they shall not see
To bring false Generations: They are Co-heirs,
And I had rather gib my self, than they
Should not produce fair Issue.

Leo. Cease, no more:
You smell this Business with a Sense as cold
As is a dead Man's Nose; but I do feel, and feel't;
As you feel doing thus; and feel withal
The Instruments that feel.

Ant. If it be so,
We need no Grave to bury Honesty,
There's not a Grain of it, the Face to sweeten
Of the whole dungy Earth.

_Leo._ What? lack I credit?

_Lord._ I had rather you did lack than I, my Lord,
Upon this Ground; and more it would content me
To have your Honour true, than your Suspicion;
Be blam'd for't how you might.

_Leo._ Why what need we
Commune with you for this? But rather follow
Our forceful Instigation? Our Prerogative
Calls not your Counsels, but our natural Goodness
Imparts this; which, if you, or stupified,
Or seeming so, in skill, cannot, or will not
Relish a Truth like us: Inform your selves,
We need no more of your Advice: The Matter,
The Loses, the Gain, the ord'rening on't,
Is all properly ours.

_Ant._ And I wish, my Liege,
You had only in your silent Judgment try'd it;
Without more Overture.

_Leo._ How could that be?
Either thou art most ignorant by Age,
Or thou went born a Fool. _Camillo's Flight_
Added to their Familiarity,
(Which was as gross as ever touch'd Conjecture,
That lack'd Sight only, nought for Approbation,
But only seeing all other Circumstances
Made up to th' Deed) doth push on this Proceeding;
Yet for a greater Confirmation,
(For in an Act of this Importance, 'twere
Most pitious to be wild) I have dispatch'd in Post,
To sacred _Delphos_, to _Apollo's Temple_,
_Cleomines_ and _Deam_, whom you know
Of stuff'd Sufficiency: Now, from the Oracle
They will bring all, whose Spiritual Counsel had,
Shall stop, or spur me. Have I done well?

_Lord._ Well done, my Lord.

_Leo._ Tho' I am satisfy'd, and need no more
Than what I know; yet shall the Oracle
Give rest to th' Minds of others; such as he,
Whose ignorant Credulity will not
Come up to th' Truth. So we have thought it good
From our free Perion, she should be confin'd,
Left that the Treachery of the two, fled hence,
Be left her to perform. Come, follow us,
We are to speak in publick; for this Business
Will raise us all.

Ant. To laughter, as I take it.
If the good Truth were known. [Exeunt.

SCENE II.

Enter Paulina and a Gentleman.

Paul. The Keeper of the Prison, call to him:

[Exit Gent.

Let him have the Knowledge whom I am. Good Lady,
No Court in Europe is too good for thee;
What dost thou then in Prison? Now, good Sir,
You know me, do you not?

[Re-enter Gentleman with the Goalw.

Goa. For a worthy Lady,
And one, whom much I honour.

Paul. Pray you then,
Conduct me to the Queen.

Goa. I may not, Madam,
To the contrary I have express Commandment.

Paul. Here's a do to lock up Honesty and Honour from
Th' Access of gentle Visitors! Is't lawful pray you
To see her Women? Any of them? Emilia?

Goa. So please you, Madam,
To put a-part thefe your Attendants, I
Shall bring Emilia forth.

Paul. I pray you now call her:
Withdraw your selves.

Goa. And, Madam,
I must be present at your Conference.

Paul. Well; be it so; Freethree.

[Enter Emilia.

Here's such a do to make no Sain a Stain,
As passes colouring. Dear Gentlewoman,
How fares our gracious Lady?

Emil. As well as one so great, and so forlorn
May hold together; on her Frights and Griefs,
Which never render Lady hath born greater,
She is something before her Time, deliver'd.

Pau. A Boy?

Emil. A Daughter and a goodly Babe,
Lufty and like to live: The Queen receives
Much Comfort in't. Says, my poor Prisoner,
I am innocent as you.

Pau. I dare be sworn:
Thee dangerous unsafe Lunes 't'h' King bespawrew them;
He must be told on't, and shal; the Office
Becomes a Woman best. I'll tak'n upon me,
If I prove Honey-mouth'd let my Tongue blister;
And never to my red-look'd Anger be
The Trumpet any more. Pray you Emilia,
Commend my best Obedience to the Queen,
If she dares trust me with her little Babe,
I'll shew't the King, and undertake to be
Her Advocate to th' loud'il. We do not know
How he may soften at the Sight o'ch' Child:
The Silence often of pure Innocence
Persuades, when Speaking fails.

Emil. Most worthy Madam,
Your Honour and your Goodness is so evident;
That your free Undertaking cannot misc
A thriving like: There is no Lady living
So meet for this great Errand; please your Ladyship
To visit the next Room, I'll presently
Acquaint the Queen of your most noble Offer,
Who but to Day hammered of this Design,
But durst not tempt a Minister of Honour,
Left she should be deny'd.

Pau. Tell her, Emilia,
I'll use that Tongue I have; if Wit flow from't,
As Boldness from my Bosom, let't not be doubted
I shall do good.

Emil. Now be you blest for it:
I'll to the Queen: Please you come something nearer.

E 2

God
The Winter's Tale.

Goa. Madam, if't please the Queen to send the Babe,
I know not what I shall incur to pass it,
Having no Warrant.

Pau. You need not fear it, Sir;
The Child was Prisoner to the Womb, and is
By Law and Procefs of great Nature, thence
Free'd, and enfranchis'd, not a Party to
The Anger of the King, nor guilty of,
If any be, the Trespass of the Queen.

Goa. I do believe it.

Pau. Do not you fear; upon mine Honour, I
Will stand betwixt you and Danger. [Exeunt.

Scene III.

Enter Leonatus, Antigonus, Lords and other Attendants.

Leo. Nor Night, nor Day, no rest; it is but Weakness
To bear the Matter thus; meer Weakness, if
The Cause were not in Being; part o' th' Cause,
She, th' Adultress; for the Harlot-King
Is quite beyond mine Arm; out of the Blank
And Level of my Brain; Plot-proof; but she
I can hook to me: Say that she were gone,
Given to the Fire, a Moiety of my Rest
Might come to me again. Who's there?

Enter an Attendant.

Att. My Lord.
Leo. How do's the Boy?
Att. He took good Rest to Night; 'tis hop'd
His Sickness is discharg'd.
Leo. To see his Nobleness!
Conceiving the Dishonour of his Mother,
He straight declin'd, droop'd, took it deeply,
Fainten'd, and fix'd the Shame on't in himself;
Threw off his Spirit, his Appetite, his Sleep,
And down-right languish'd. Leave me solely; go,
See how he fares. Fie, fie, no Thought of him,
The very Thought of my Revenues that way
Recols upon me; in himself too Mighty:
Until a Time may serve, for present Vengeance

Take
Take it on her. Camillo, and Polixenes
Laugh at me, make their Pastime at my Sorrow;
They should not laugh, if I could reach them, nor
Shall she, within my Power.

Enter Paulina with a Child.

Lord. You must not enter.

Pan. Nay rather, good my Lords, be second to me:
Fear you his tyrannous Passion, more, alas,
Than the Queen's Life? A gracious innocent Soul,
More free than he is jealous.

Ant. That's enough.

Atten. Madam, he hath not slept to Night; commanded
None should come near him.

Pan. Not so hot, good Sir,
I come to bring him Sleep. 'Tis such as you
That creep like Shadows by him, and do slie
At each his needless heavings; such as you
Nourish the Cause of his awaking. I
Do come with words, as medicinal, as true;
Honest as either, to purge him of that Humour,
That presses him from Sleep.

Leo. What noise there, ho?

Pan. No noise, my Lord, but needful Conference,
About some Gossip for your Highness.

Leo. How?

Away with that audacious Lady. Antigonus,
I charg'd thee that she should not come about me,
I knew she would.

Ant. I told her so, my Lord,
On your Displeasure's Peril and on mine,
She should not visit you.

Leo. What? canst not rule her?

Pan. From all Dishonesty he can; in this,
Unless he take the course that you have done,
Commit me, for committing Honour, trust it;
He shall not rule me.

Ant. La-you now, you hear,
When she will take the Rein, I let her run,
But she'll not stumble.

Pan. Good my Liege, I come—
And I beseech you hear me, who profess
My self your loyal Servant, your Physician,
Your most obedient Counsellor: Yet that dares
Le's appear so, in comforting your Evils,
Than such as most seem yours: I say, I come
From your good Queen.

Leo. Good Queen?

Pau. Good Queen, my Lord, good Queen,
I say good Queen;
And would, by Combat, make her good, were I
A Man, the worst about you.

Leo. Force her hence.

Pau. Let him that makes but Trifles of his Eyes:
First hand me: On mine own accord I'll off,
But first, I'll do my Errand. The good Queen,
For she is good, hath brought you forth a Daughter,
Here 'tis: commends it to your Blessing.

Leo. Out!

A mankind Witch! Hence with her, out o'door:
A most intelligencing Bawd.

Pau. Not so,
I am as ignorant in that as you,
In so entitling me; and no less honest
Than you are mad; which is enough, I'll warrant,
As this World goes, to pass for honest.

Leo. Traitors!

Will you not push her out? Give her the Bastard. [To Ant.
Thou Dotard, thou art Woman-tyr'd; unroosted
By the Dame Partlet here. Take up the Bastard,
Take it up, I say, give it to the Croan.

Pau. For ever
Unvenerable be thy Hands, if thou
Take it up the Princess, by that forced Baseness
Which he has put upon't.

Leo. He dreads his Wife.

Pau. So I would you did: then 'twere past all doubt
You'd call your Children yours.

Leo. A Nest of Traitors!

Ant. I am none, by this good Light.
Pau. Nor I; nor any
But one that's here; and that's himself. For he,
The sacred Honour of himself, his Queen's.
His hopeful Son's, his Babe's betrays to Slander,
Whose Sting is sharper than the Sword's; and will not
(For as the Case now stands, it is a Curse
He cannot be compell'd to't) once remove
The Root of his Opinion, which is rotten,
As ever Oak or Stone was found.

Leo. A Callat
Of boundless Tongue, who late hath beat her Husband,
And now baits me. This Brat is none of mine,
It is the Issue of Polixenes.
Hence with it, and together with the Dam,
Commit them to the Fire.

Pau. It is yours;
And, might we lay th' old Proverb to your Charge,
So like you, 'tis the worse. Behold, my Lords,
Altho' the Print be little, the whole Matter
And Copy of the Father; Eye, Nose, Lip,
The trick of his Frown, his Forehead, nay the Valley,
The pretty Dimples of his Chin, and Check, his Smiles,
The very Mold, and frame of Hand, Nail, Finger.
And thou good Goddess Nature, which haft made it
So like to him that got it, if thou haft
The ordering of the Mind too, 'mongst all Colours
No Yellow in't, left she suspeet, as he does,
Her Children not her Husband's.

Leo. A gross Hag!
And Lozel, thou art worthy to be hang'd,
Thou wilt not stay her Tongue.

Ant. Hang all the Husbands
That cannot do that Feat, you'll leave your self
Hardly one Subject.

Leo. Once more take her hence.

Pau. A most unworthy and unnatural Lord
Can do no more.

Leo. I'll ha' thee burnt.

Pau. I care not;
It is an Heretick that makes the Fire,
Not she which burns in't. I'll not call you Tyrant,
But this most cruel Usage of your Queen
(Not able to produce more Accusation
Than your own weak-hing'd Fancy) sometimes favours
Of Tyranny, and will ignoble make you,
Yea, scandalous to the World.

Leo. On your Allegiance,
Out of the Chamber with her. Were I a Tyrant,
Where were her Life? She durst not call me so,
If she did know me one. Away with her.

Pau. I pray you do not push me, I'll be gone,
Look to your Babe, my Lord, 'tis yours; Jove send her
A better guiding Spirit. What need these Hands?
You that are thus so tender o'er his Follies,
Will never do him good, not one of you,
So, so: Farewel, we are gone. [Exit]

Leo. Thou, Traitor, haft set on thy Wife to this.
My Child? away with't. Even thou, that haft
A Heart so tender o'er it, take it hence,
And see it instantly consum'd with Fire.
Even thou, and none but thou. Take it up straight:
Within this hour bring me Word 'tis done,
And by good Testimony or I'll seize thy Life,
With what thou e'ie call'd thine: It thou refuse,
And wilt encounter with my Wrath, say so;
The Baffard-brains with thefe my proper Hands
Shall I dash out: Go take it to the Fire,
For thou sett'ft on thy Wife.

Ant. I did not, Sir:
The Lords, my noble Fellows, if they please,
Can clear me in't.

Lord. We can, my Royal Liege,
He is not guilty of her coming hither.

Leo. You're Liars all.

Lords. 'Befeech your Highness give us better Credit;
We have always truly serv'd you, and befeeched you
So to esteem of us: And on our Knees we beg,
(As Recompence of our dear Services
Past, and to come) that you do change this purpose,
Which being so horrible, so bloody, must
Lead on to some foul issue. We all kneel—
Leo. I am a Father for each Wind that blows:
Shall I live on, to see this Bastard kneel,
And call me Father? better burn it now,
Than curse it then. But be it; let it live:
It shall not neither. You Sir, come you hither; [To Ant.
You that have been so tenderly officious
With Lady Margery, your Midwife there,
To save this Bastard's Life; for 'tis a Bastard,
So sure as this Beard's grey: What will you adventure,
To save this Brat's Life?
Ant. Any thing, my Lord,
That my Ability may undergo,
And Nobleness impose: At least thus much;
I'll pawn the little Blood which I have left,
To save the Innocent; any thing possible,
Leo. It shall be possible; swear by this Sword
Thou wilt perform my bidding.
Ant. I will, my Lord.
Leo. Mark and perform it; seest thou? for the fail
Of any point in't, shall not only be
Death to thy self, but to thy lewd-tongu'd Wife,
Whom for this time we pardon. We enjoin thee,
As thou art Liege-man to us, that thou carry
This female Bastard hence, and that thou bear it
To some remote and desert Place, quite out
Of our Dominions; and that there thou leave it,
Without much Mercy, to its own Protection,
And favour of the Climate; as by strange Fortune
It came to us, I do in Justice charge thee,
On thy Soul's Peril, and thy Body's Torture,
That thou commend it strangely to some place;
Where Chance may nurse or end it. Take it up.
Ant. I swear to do this; tho' a present Death
Had been more merciful. Come on, poor Babe,
Some powerful Spirit instruct the Kites and Ravens
To be thy Nurses. Wolves and Bears, they say,
(Casting their Savageness aside) have done
Like Offices of Pity. Sir, be prosperous
In more than this Deed does require; and Blessing,
1C6 The Winter's Tale.
Against this Cruelty, fight on thy side,
Poor thing condemn'd to Lo's. [Exit with the Child:
Leo. No; I'll not rear
Another's Issue.

Ester a Messenger.
Mes. Please your Highness, Post's
From those you sent to the Oracle, are come
An Hour since. Cleomines and Dion.
Being well arriv'd from Delphos, are both landed,
Hasting to th' Court.
Lord. So please you, Sir, their Speed
Hath been beyond Account.
Leo. Twenty three Days
They have been absent: 'tis good speed; foretels
The great Apollo suddenly will have
The Truth of this appear. Prepare you Lords,
Summon a Session, that we may Arraign
Our most disloyal Lady; for as she hath
Been publickly accus'd, so shall she have
A just and open Trial. While she lives
My Heart will be a Burthen to me. Leave me,
And think upon my Bidding. [Exeunt.

ACT III. SCENE I.

Enter Cleomines and Dion.

Cle. THE Climate's delicate, the Air most sweet;
Fertile the Isle, the Temple much surpassing
The common Praise it bears.

Dion. I shall report,
For most it caught me, the Celestial Habits,
Methinks I so should term them, and the Reverence
Of the grave Wearers. O, the Sacrifice;
How ceremonious, solemn, and unearthly
It was i'th' Offering!

Cleo. But of all, the Burst
And the Ear-deafning Voice o'th' Oracle,
Kin to Jove's Thunder, so surpris'd my Sense;
That I was nothing.
The Winter's Tale

Dio. If th' Event o'th' Journey
Prove as successful to the Queen (O be't so)
As it hath been to us, rare, pleasant, speedy;
The time is worth the use on't.

Cleo. Great Apollo,
Turn all to th' best! These Proclamations,
So forcing Faults upon Hermione,
I little like.

Dio. The violent Carriage of it
Will clear, or end the Business when the Oracle;
Thus by Apollo's great Divine seal'd up,
Shall the Contents discover: Something rare
Even then will rush to Knowledge. Go; fresh Horses;
And gracious be the Issue. [Exeunt.

Scene II.

Enter Leontes, Lords, Officers, Hermione as to her Trial,
with Paulina and Ladies.

Leo. This Sessions, to our great Grief, we pronounce;
Even puffs 'gainst our Heart. The Party try'd,
The Daughter of a King, our Wife, and one
Of us too much belov'd; let us be clear'd
Of being tyrannous, since we so openly
Proceed in Justice, which shall have due Course,
Even to the Guilt, or the Purgation.
Produce the Prisoner.

Offi. It is his Highness Pleasure, that the Queen
Appear in Person here in Court. Silence!

Leo. Read the Indictment.

Offi. Hermione. Queen to the worthy Leontes, King of
Sicilia, thou art here accused and arraigned of High Treason,
in committing Adultery with Polixenes, King of Bohemia, and
conspiring with Camillo to take away the Life of our Sove-
raign Lord the King, thy Royal Husband; the Pretence where-
of being by Circumstances partly laid open, thou Hermione, con-
trary to the Faith and Allegiance of a true Subject, didst coun-
sel and aid them, for their better safety, to fly away by
Night.

Her.
Her. Since what I am to say, must be but that
Which contradicts my Accusation, and
The Testimony on my Part, no other
But what comes from my self, it shall scarce boot me
To say, Not guilty: Mine Integrity
Being counted Falsity, shall, as I express it,
Be so receiv’d. But thus, if Powers Divine
Behold our Human Actions, as they do,
I doubt not then, but Innocence shall make
False Accusations blush, and Tyranny
Tremble at Patience. You, my Lord, best know,
Who least will seem to do so, my past Life
Hath been as continent, as chaste, as true,
As I am now unhappy; which is more
Than History can pattern, tho’ devis’d,
And play’d to take Spectators. For behold me,
A Fellow of the Royal Bed, which owe
A Miomy of the Throne: A great King’s Daughter,
The Mother to a hopeful Prince, here standing
To prate and talk for Life, and Honour, fore
Who please to come and hear. For Life, I prize it
As I weigh Grief (which I would spare:) For Honour,
’Tis a derivative from me to mine,
And only that I stand for. I appeal
To your own Conscience, Sir, before Polixenes
Came to your Court, how I was in your Grace,
How merited to be so; since he came,
With what Encounter so uncertain I
Have strain’d t’appear thus; if one jot beyond
The bounds of Honour, or in act, or will,
That way inclining, harden’d be the Hearts
Of all that hear me, and my near’d of Kin
Cry fie upon my Grave.
Leo. I ne’er heard yet
That any of those bolder Vices wanted
Let’s Impudence to gain-say what they did;
Than to per form it first.
Her. That is true enough,
Tho’ tis a saying, Sir, not due to me.
Leo. You will not own it.
Merr. More than Mistress of;  
What comes to me in name of Fault, I must not  
At all acknowledge. For Polixenes,  
With whom I am accus’d, I do confess  
I lov’d him, as in Honour he requir’d;  
With such a kind of Love, as might become  
A Lady like me; with a Love, even such,  
So and no other, as your self commanded:  
Which not to have done, I think had been in me  
Both Disobedience and Ingratitude  
To you, and towards your Friends; whose Love had spoke;  
Even since it could speak, from an Infant, freely,  
That it was yours. Now for Conspiracy,  
I know not how it tastes, tho’ it be dish’d  
For me to try how; all I know of it,  
Is, that Camillo was an honest Man;  
And why he left your Court, the Gods themselves;  
Wotting no more than I, are ignorant.  
Leo. You knew of his departure, as you know  
What you have underta’en to do in’s absence.  
Her. Sir,  
You speak a Language that I understand not;  
My Life stands in the level of your Dreams,  
Which I’ll lay down.  
Leo. Your Actions are my Dreams,  
You had a Bastard by Polixenes,  
And I but dream’d it: As you were past all Shame;  
(Those of your Fact are so) so past all Truth;  
Which to deny, concerns more than avails: For as  
Thy Brat hath been cast out, like to it self,  
No Father owning it, (which is indeed  
More criminal in thee, than it) so thou  
Shalt feel our Justice, in whose easiest Passage  
Look for no less than Death.  
Her. Sir, spare your Threats;  
The Bug which you would fright me with, I seek:  
To me can Life be no Commodity,  
The Crown and Comfort of my Life, your Favour;  
I do give o’er, for I do feel it gone,  
But know not how it went. My second Joy,
The Winter's Tale.

The first-fruits of my Body, from his Presence
I am bane'd like one infectious. My third Comfort,
Starr'd most unluckily, is from my Breast
(The innocent Milk in its most innocent Mouth)
Hal'd out to Murder; my self on every Post
Proclaim'd a Strumpet; with immodest-Haunted
The Child-bed Privilege deny'd which longs
To Women of all Fashion: Lastly, hurried
Here, to this place, 'th' open Air, before
I have got strength of Limbs. Now, my Liege,
Tell me what Blessings I have here alive,
That I fh. ud fear to die? Therefore proceed:
But yet hear this; mistake me not; no Life,
I prize it not a Straw, but for mine Honour,
Which I would free: If I shall be condemn'd
Upon Surmises. all Proofs sleeping else.
But what your Jealoufies awake, I tell you
'Tis Rigour, and not Law. Your Honours all,
I do refer me to the Oracle:

Apollo be my Judge,

Lord. This your Request

Enter Dion and Cleomines.

Is altogether just; therefore bring forth,
And in Apollo's Name, his Oracle.

Her. The Emperor of Russia was my Father,
Oh that he were alive, and here beholding
His Daughter's Trial; that he did but see
The flatness of my Misery; yet with Eyes
Of Pity, not Revenge.

Officer. You here shall swear upon the Sword of Justice,
That you, Cleomines and Dion, have
Been both at Delphi, and from thence have brought
This seal'd-up Oracle, by the hand deliver'd
Of great Apollo's Priest; and that since then,
You have not dare'd to break the holy Seal,
Nor read the Secrets in't.

Cleo Dion: All this we swear.

Leo. Break up the Seals, and read.

Officer. Hermione is Chief. Plixeus blameless. Camillo
a true Subject, Leontes a jealous Tyrant, his innocent Babe

true
truly begotten, and the King shall live without an Heir, if
that which is lost be not found.

Lords. Now blessed be the great Apollo.

Her. Praised.

Leo. Haft thou read the Truth?

Offic. Ay, my Lord, even so as it is here set down.

Leo. There is no Truth at all 'th' Oracle;
The Sessions shall proceed; this is mere Falihood.

Enter Servant.

Ser. My Lord the King, the King.

Leo. What is the Business?

Ser. O Sir, I shall be hated to Report it.
The Prince your Son, with meer Conceit and Fear
Of the Queen's speed, is gone.

Leo. How? gone?

Ser. Is dead.

Leo. Apollo's angry, and the Heav'n's themself's
Do strike at my Injustice. How now there? [Her. faints.

Pas. This News is mortal to the Queen: Look down
And see what Death is doing.

Leo. Take her hence;
Her Heart is but o'er-charg'd; she will recover.

[Exeunt Paulina and Ladies with Hermione,
I have too much believ'd mine own Suspicion:
'Jesuech you tenderly apply to her
Some Remedies for Life. Apollo, pardon
My great Prophaness 'gainst thine Oracle.
I'll reconcile me to Polixenes,
New woo my Queen, recal the good Camillo,
(Whom I proclaim a Man of Truth, of Mercy.)
For being transported by my Jealousies
To bloody Thoughts and to Revenge, I chose
Camillo for the Minifter, to poifon
My Friend Polixenes; which had been done,
But that the good Mind of Camillo tardied
My swift command; tho' I with Death, and with
Reward did threaten and encourage him,
Not doing it, and being done; he (most Human,
And fill'd with Honour) to my kingly Guest
Unclasp'd my Practice, quit his Fortunes here,
Which you knew great, and to the certain hazard
Of all Incertainties, himself commend'd,
No richer than his Honour: How he glitters
Through my dark Ruft! And how his Piety
Does my Deeds make the blacker!

Enter Paulina.

P'an. Woe the while:
O cut my Lace, left my Heart, cracking it,
Break too.

Lord. What Fit is this, good Lady?
P'an. What studied Torments, Tyrant, hast for me?
Burning.
In Leads or Oils? What old or new Torture
Must I receive? whose very word deserves
To ta'ot of thy most worst. Thy Tyranny,
(Together working with thy Jealousies,
Fancies too weak for Boys, too green and idle
For Girls of nine) O think what they have done,
And then run mad indeed; stark mad; for all
Thy by-gone Fooleries were but Spices of it.
That thou betray'dst Polixenes, 'twas nothing,
That did but shew thee, of a Fool, inconstant,
And damnable ingrateful: Nor was't much,
Thou would'st have poison'd good Camillo's Honour;
To have him kill a King: Poor Trepamily,
More monstrous standing by: Wherefore I reckon
The casting forth to Crows thy Baby-daughter,
To be, or none, or little; tho' a Devil
Would have shed Water out of Fire, ere don't:
Nor is't directly laid to thee, the Death
Of the young Prince, whose honourable Thoughts
(Thoughts high for one so tender) cleft the Heart
That could conceive a gross and foolish Sire,
Blemish'd his gracious Dam: This is not, no,
Laid to thy Answer; but the last: O Lords,
When I have said. cry Woe, the Queen, the Queen,
The sweetest dearest Creature's Dead; and Vengeance for't
Not dropped down yet.

Lord. The higher Powers forbid.

Pass.
Pau. I say she's dead: I'll swear't. If Word, nor Oath
Prevail not, go and see: If you can bring
Tincture, or Lustre in her Lip, her Eye,
Heat outwardly, or Breath within, I'll serve you
As I would do the Gods. But, O thou Tyrant!
Doth not repent these things, for they are heavier
That all thy Woes can stir; therefore betake thee
To nothing but Despair. A thousand Knees,
Ten thousand Years together, naked, fasting,
Upon a barren Mountain, and still Winter
In Storm perpetual, could not move the Gods.
To look that way thou went.

Leo. Go on, go on:
Thou canst not speak too much, I have deserv'd
All Tongues to talk their bitterest.

Lord. Say no more;
Howe'er the business goes, you have made fault
I'th' boldness of your Speech.

Pau. I am sorry for't.
All Faults I make, when I shall come to know them;
I do repent: Alas, I have shew'd too much
The Rashness of a Woman; he is touch'd
To th'noble Heart. What's gone, and what's past help;
Should be past Grief. Do not receive Affliction
At my Petition, I beseech you; rather
Let me be punish'd, that have minded you
Of what you should forget. Now, good my Liege,
Sir, Royal Sir, forgive a foolish Woman.
The Love I bore your Queen—lo, Fool again—
I'll speak of her no more, nor of your Children:
I'll not remember you of my own Lord,
Who is lost too. Take you your Patience to you,
And I'll say nothing.

Leo. Thou didst speak but well,
When most the Truth; which I receive much better
Than to be pitied of thee. Prithee bring me
To the dead Bodies of my Queen and Son,
One Grave shall be for both. Upon them shall
The Causes of their Death appear; unto
Our shame perpetual; once a Day I'll visit
The Chappel where they lye, and Tears shed there
Shall be my Recreation. So long as Nature
Will bear up with this Exercise, so long
I daily vow to use it. Come and lead me
To these Sorrows. [Exeunt.

SCENE III.

'A desert Country; the Sea at a little distance.

Enter Antigonus with a Child, and a Mariner.

Ant. Thou art perfect then, our Ship hath touch'd upon
The Desarts of Bohemia.

Mar. Ay, my Lord, and fear
We have landed in ill time: The Skies look grimly,
And threaten present Blusters. In my Conscience,
The Heav'n with that we have in hand are angry,
And frown upon's.

Ant. Their sacred Wills be done; get thee Aboard;
Look to thy Bark, I'll not be long before
I call upon thee.

Mar. Make your best haste, and go not
Too far 'th Land; 'tis like to be loud Weather.
Besides, this place is famous for the Creatures
Of Prey, that keep upon't.

Ant. Go thou away.
I'll follow instantly.

Mar. I am glad at Heart
To be so rid o' th' Business. [Exit.

Ant. Come, poor Babe;
I have heard, but not believ'd, the Spirits o' th' Dead
May walk again: if such thing be, thy Mother
Appeard to me last Night; for ne'er was Dream
So like a waking. To me comes a Creature,
Sometimes her Head on one side, some another,
I never saw a Veil of like Sorrow
So fill'd, and so becoming, in pure white Robes,
Like very Sanctity, she did approach
My Cabin where I lay; thrice bow'd before me,
And, gasping to begin some Speech, her Eyes

Became
The Winter's Tale. 115

Became two Spouts; the fury spent, anon
Did this break from her. Good Antigonus,
Since Fate, against thy better Disposition,
Hath made thy Person for the thrower-out
Of my poor Babe, according to thine Oath,
Places Remote enough are in Bohemia,
There weep, and leave it crying; and, for the Babe
Is counted lost for ever and ever, Perdita
I prithee call't. For this ungentle Ruffness
Put on thee, by my Lord, thou ne'er shalt see
Thy Wife Paulina more. And so, with thicks,
She melted into Air. Affrighted much,
I did in time collect my self, and thought
This was so, and no flummery: Dreams are Toys,
Yet for this once, yea superstitiously,
I will be squar'd by this. I do believe
Hermione hath suffer'd Death, and that
Apollo would, this being indeed the Issue
Of King Polixenes, it should here be laid,
Either for Life or Death, upon the Earth
Of its right Father. Blossom, speed thee well,

[laying down the Child.

There lye, and there thy Character: There these,
Which may, if Fortune please, both breed thee, Pretty one,
And still rest thine. The Storm begins; poor Wretch,
That for thy Mother's Fault, art thus expos'd
To los'd, and what may follow. Weep I cannot,
But my Heart bleeds: And most Accurst am I
To be by Oath enjoin'd to this. Farewel.
The Day frowns more and more; thou art like to have
A lullaby too rough: I never saw
The Heav'n's to dim by Day. A savage Clamour!
Well may I get aboard: This is the Chace,
I am gone for ever.

[Exit pursued by a Bear.

Shep. I would there were no Age between ten and
three and twenty, or that Youth would sleep out the rest:
For there is nothing, in the between, but getting Wenches
with Child, wrongdoing the Anciency, Steling, fighting — Hark you now — would any but these boil'd

Brains
Brains of nineteen, and two and twenty, Hunt this Weather? They have scar'd away two of my best Sheep, which I fear the Wolf will sooner find than the Master; if any where I have them. 'tis by the Sea-side, brouzing of Ivy. Good luck, and't be thy will, what have we here? [Taking up the Child] Mercy on's, a Barn! a very pretty Barn! a Boy or a Child, I wonder! a pretty one, a very pretty one, sure some 'scape: Tho' I am not Bookish, yet I can read Waiting-Gentlewoman in the 'scape. This has been some Stair-work, some Trunk-work, some behind-door-work: They were warmer that got this, than the poor thing is here. I'll take it up for pity, yet I'll tarry 'till my Son come: He hollow'd but even now. Whoa, ho-hoa.

Enter Clown.

Clo. Hilloa, loa.

Shep. What, art so near? If thou'lt see a thing to talk on when thou art dead and rotten, come hither. What all'st thou, Man?

Clo. I have seen two such fights, by Sea and by Land; but I am not to say it is a Sea, for it is now the Sky; betwixt the Firmament and it, you cannot thrust a Bodkin's point.

Shep. Why, Boy, how is it?

Clo. I would you did but see how it chases, how it rages, how it takes up the Shore; but that's not to the Point; Oh the most piteous Cry of the poor Souls, sometimes to see 'em, and not to see 'em: Now the Ship boaring the Moon with her Main-mast, and anon swallow'd with Yeast and Froth, as you'd thrust a Cork into a Hog's head. And then the Land-service, to see how the Bear tore out his Shoulder-bone, how he cry'd to me for help, and said his Name was Antigonus, a Nobleman. But to make an end of the Ship, to see how the Sea flap-dragon'd it. But first, how the poor Souls roar'd, and the Sea mock'd them. And how the poor Gentleman roar'd, and the Bear mock'd him, both roaring louder than the Sea, or Weather.

Shep. Name of Mercy, when was this, Boy?

Clo.
Clo. Now, now, I have not winked since I saw these sights, the Men are not yet cold under Water, nor the Bear half dined on the Gentleman; he's at it now.

Shep. Would I had been by to have help'd the old Man.

Clo. I would you had been by the Ship-side, to have help'd her, there your Charity would have lack'd footing.

Shep. Heavy Matters, heavy Matters; but look thee here, Boy. Now bles's thy self; thou meet'st with things dying, I with things new Born. Here's a fight for thee; Look thee, a Bearing-cloth for a Squire's Child! Look thee here; take up, take up, Boy, open't; so, let's see, it was told me I should be rich by the Fairies. This is some Changling; open't, what's within, Boy?

Clo. You're a mad old Man; If the Sins of your Youth are forgiven you, you're well to live. Gold, all Gold.

Shep. This is Fairy Gold, Boy, and 'twill prove so. Up with it, keep it close: Home, home, the next way. We are lucky, Boy, and to be so still requires nothing but Secrecy. Let my Sheep go: Come, good Boy, the next way home.

Clo. Go you the next way with your Findings, I'll go see if the Bear be gone from the Gentleman, and how much he hath eaten: They are never Curst, but when they are hungry: If there be any of him left, I'll bury it.

Shep. That's a good Deed; if thou may'lt discern by that which is left of him, what he is, fetch me to th'fight of him.

Clo. Marry will I, and you shall help to put him i'th' Ground.

Shep. 'Tis a lucky Day, Boy, and we'll do good Deeds on't.

[Exeunt.]
ACT IV. SCENE I.

Enter Time, The Chorus.

Time. I that please some, try all, both Joy and Terror
Of good and bad, that make and unfold Error:
Now take upon me, in the Name of Time,
To use my Wings. Impute it not a Crime
To me, or my swift Passage, that I slide
O'er sixteen Years, and leave the growth untry'd
Of that wide gap; since it is in my Power
To o'erthrow Law, and in one self-born hour
To plant, and o'er-whelm Custom. Let me pass
The time I am, e'er ancient't Order was,
Or what is now receiv'd. I witness to
The times that brought them in, so shall I do
To the freshest things now reigning, and make stale
The glittering of this prefent, as my Tale
Now seems to it: Your Patience this allowing,
I turn my Glass, and give my Scene such growing
As you had slept between. Leontes leaving
The Effects of his fond Jealousies, so grieving
That he shuts up himself; imagine me,
Gentle Spectators, that I now may be
In fair Bohemia, and remember well,
I mention here a Son o'th' King's, which Florizel
I now name to you, and with speed so pace
To speak of Perdita, now grown in grace
Equal with wondering. What of her ensues,
I lift not Prophesie. But let Time's News
Be known when 'tis brought forth. A Shepherd's Daughter,
And what to her adheres, which follows after,
Is th' Argument of Time; of this allow,
If ever you have spent Time worse, ere now:
If never, yet that Time himself doth say,
He writes earnestly, you never may.

[Exit.

SCENE
SCENE II.

Enter Polixenes and Camillo.

Pol. I pray thee good Camillo be no more importunate; 'tis a Sickness denying thee any thing, a Death to grant this.

Cam. It is fifteen Years since I saw my Country; though I have, for the most part, being aired Abroad, I desire to lay my Bones there. Besides, the penitent King, my Master, hath sent for me, to whose feeling Sorrows I might be some alay. Or I o'erween to think so, which is another Spur to my Departure.

Pol. As thou lovest me, Camillo, wipe not out the rest of thy Services, by leaving me now; the need I have of thee, thine own Goodness hath made: Better not to have had thee, than thus to want thee. Thou having made me Business, which none, without thee, can sufficiently manage, must either stay to execute them thy self, or take away with thee the very Services thou hast done; which if I have not enough considered, as too much I cannot, to be more thankful to thee shall be my Study, and my profit therein, the heaping Friendships. Of that fair Country Sicilia, prithee speak no more, whose very naming punisht me with the Remembrance of that Penitent, as thou call'st him, and reconciled King my Brother, whose los of his most precious Queen and Children, are even now to be afresh lamented. Say to me, when saw'st thou the Prince Florizel my Son? Kings are no less unhappy, their Issue not being gracious, than they are in losing them, when they have approved their Virtues.

Cam. Sir, it is three Days since I saw the Prince; what his happier Affairs may be, are to me unknown: But I have (misingly) noted, he is of late much retired from Court, and is less frequent to his Princely Exercises than formerly he hath appear'd.

Pol. I have consider'd so much, Camillo, and with some care so far, that I have Ey's under my Service, which look upon his Removedness; from whom I have this Intel-
Intelligence, that he is seldom from the House of a most homely Shepherd; a Man, they say, that from very nothing, and beyond the Imagination of his Neighbours, is grown into an unspeakable Estate.

*Cam.* I have heard, Sir, of such a Man, who hath a Daughter of most rare Note; the Report of her is extended more, than can be thought to begin from such a Cottage.

*Pol.* That's likewise part of my Intelligence; but, I fear, the Angle that plucks our Son thither. Thou shalt accompany us to the Place, where we will (nor appearing what we are) have some question with the Shepherd; from whose Simplicity, I think it not uneasie to get the Cause of my Son's Refort thither. Prithee be my present Partner in this Business, and lay aside the Thoughts of Sicilia.

*Cam.* I willingly obey your Command.

*Pol.* My best *Camillo*, we must Disguise our selves.

[Exeunt.

**SCENE III.**

*Enter Autolicus singing.*

When Daffadits begin to peer
With heigh the Doxy over the dale,
Why then comes in the sweet o' the Year:
For the red Blood reigns in the Winter's Pale.

The white Sheet bleaching on the Hedge,
With hey, the sweet Birds, O how they sing:
Doth set my pugging Tooth an edge,
For a quart of Ale is a Dish for a King.

The Lark with Tirra lyra clausits,
With hey, with hey the Thrush and the Fay:
Are Summer Songs for me and my Aunts,
While we lye tumbling in the Hay.

I have served Prince *Florizel*, and in my Time wore three Pile, but now I am out of Service.

*But*
But shall I go mourn for that, my Dear,
The pale Moon shines by Night:
And when I wander here and there,
I then do most go right.

If Tinkers may have leave to live,
And bear the Sow-skin Budget,
Then my Account I well may give,
And in the Stocks amouch it.

My Taffick is Sheets; when the Kite builds, look to lesser Linen. My Father nam’d me Antellicus, who being, as I am, litter’d under Mercury, was likewise a Snapper-up of unconsider’d Trifles: With Die and Drab, I purchase’d Caparison, and my Revenue is the sily Cheat. Gallows, and Knock, are too powerful on the High-way, Beating and Hanging are Terrors to me: For the Life to come, I sleep out the Thought of it. A Prize! A Prize!

Enter Clown.

Clo. Let me see, every eleven Weather Tods, every Tod yields Pound and odd Shilling; Fifteen hundred thorn, what comes the Woll to?

Ant. If the Sprindge hold, the Cock’s mine. [Aside.

Clo. I cannot do’t without Compters. Let me see, what am I to buy for our Sheep-Shearing Feast? Three Pound of Sugar, five Pound of Currants, Rice—— What will this Sister of mine do with Rice? But my Father hath made her Mistress of the Feast, and she lays it on. She hath made me four and twenty Nose-gays for the Shearers; three-Man-Song-men, all, and very good ones, but they are most of them Means and Basers; but one Puritan among them, and he sings Psalms to Horn-Pipes. I must have Saffron to colour the Warden-Fies, Mace——Dates—none——that’s out of my Note: Nutmegs, seven; a Race or two of Ginger, but that I may beg: Four Pound of Pruins, and as many of Rafins o’th’ Sun.

Ant. Oh, that ever I was born. [Grovelling on the Ground.

Clo. I’th’ name of me——

Ant. Oh help me, help me: Pluck but off these Rags;
and then Death, Death—

Clo. Alack, poor Soul, thou hast need of more Rags to lay on thee rather than have thee off.

Aut. Oh, Sir, the loathsomeness of them offends me, more than the stripes I have receiv'd, which are mighty ones, and millions.

Clo. Alas, poor Man! a million of beating may come to a great matter.

Aut. I am robb'd, Sir, and beaten; my Mony and Apparel ta'en from me, and these detestable Things put upon me.

Clo. What, by a Horse-man, or a Foot-man?

Aut. A Foot-man, sweet Sir, a Foot-man.

Clo. Indeed, he should be a Foot-man, by the Garments he has left with thee; If this be a Horse-man's Coat, it hath seen very hot Service. Lend me thy hand, I'll help thee. Come, lend me thy hand. [Helping him up.

Aut. Oh! good Sir, tenderly, oh!

Clo. Alas, poor Soul.

Aut. O good Sir, softly, good Sir: I fear, Sir, my Shoulder-blade is out.

Clo. How now? canst stand?

Aut. Softly, dear Sir; good Sir, softly; you ha' done me a charitable Office.

Clo. Dost lack any Mony? I have a little Mony for thee.

Aut. No, good sweet Sir: No, I beseech you, Sir; I have a Kinfman not past three quarters of a Mile hence, unto whom I was going; I shall there have Mony, or any thing I want: Offer me no Mony, I pray you, that kills my Heart.

Clo. What manner of Fellow was he that robb'd you?

Aut. A Fellow, Sir, that I have known to go about with Trol-my-Dames: I knew him once a Servant of the Prince; I cannot tell, good Sir, for which of his Virtues it was, but he was certainly Whipp'd out of the Court.

Clo. His Vices, you would say; there's no Virtue whipp'd out of the Court; they cherish it to make it stay there, and yet it will no more but abide,

Aut.
The Winter's Tale

Ant. Vices I would say, Sir. I know this Man well, he hath been since an Ape-bearer, then a Processe-server, a Bailiff; then hecompact a Motion of the Prodigal Son, and married a Tinker's Wife, within a Mile where my Land and Living lies; and having flown over many knavish Professions, he settled only in Rogue; some call him Audacious.

Clo. Out upon him, Prig! for my Life Prig; he haunts Wakes, Fairs, and Bear-baitings.

Ant. Very true; Sir; he, Sir, he; that's the Rogue that put me into his Apparel.

Clo. Not a more cowardly Rogue in all Bohemia; if you had but look'd big, and spit at him, he'd have run.

Ant. I must confess to you, Sir, I am no fighter; I am false of Heart that way, and that he knew I warrant him.

Clo. How do you do now?

Ant. Sweet Sir, much better than I was; I can stand, and walk; I will even take my leave of you, and pace softly towards my Kinsman's.

Clo. Shall I bring thee on thy way?

Ant. No, good Jac'd Sir; no, sweet Sir.

Clo. Then farewell, I must go to buy Spices for our Sheep-shearing.

[Exit.

Ant. Prosper you, sweet Sir. Your Purse is not hot enough to purchase your Spice. I'll be with you at your Sheep-shearing too: If I make not this Cheat bring out another, and the Shearers prove Sheep, let me be unrol'd, and my Name put into the Book of Virtue.

SONG.

Fog on, fog on, the foot-path way,
And merrily bent the Stile-a.
A merry Heart goes all the day,
Your sad tires in a Mile-a

[Exit.

SCENE
SCENE IV.

Enter Florizel and Perdita.

Flo. These your unusual Weeds, to each part of you
Does give a Life: No Shepherdess but Flora,
Peering in April's Front. This your Sheep-shearing,
Is a merry meeting of the petty Gods,
And you the Queen on't.

Per. Sir; my gracious Lord,
To chide at your Extremes, it not becomes me:
Oh pardon, that I name them: Your high self,
The gracious mark o' th' Land, you have obscur'd
With a Swain's wearing; and me, poor lowly Maid,
Most Goddess-like prank'd up. But that our Feasts,
In every Mells, have Folly; and the Feeders
Digest it with a Custom, I should blush
To see you so attir'd; sworn, I think,
To shew my self a Glass.

Flo. I blefs the time
When my good Falcon made her flight a-cross
Thy Father's Ground.

Per. Now Jove afford you cause;
To me the difference forges dread, your Greatness
Hath not been us'd to Fear; even now I tremble
To think your Father, by some accident,
Should pass this way, as you did: Oh the Fates,
How would he look to see his work, so noble,
Wildly bound up! What would he say! Or how
Should I, in these my borrowed Flaunts, behold
The sternness of his Presence?

Flo. Apprehend
Nothing but Jollity: the Gods themselves,
Humbling their Deities to Love, have taken
The Shapes of Beasts upon them. Jupifer
Became a Bull, and bellow'd; the green Neptune
A Ram, and bleated; and the Fire rob'd God,
Golden Apollo, a poor humble Swain,
As I seem now. Their Transformations,
Were never for a piece of Beauty rarer,
Nor in a way so quaint: Since my Desires
Run not before mine Honour, nor my Lusts
Burn hotter than my Faith:

Per. O, but dear Sir,
Your Resolution cannot hold, when 'tis
Oppos'd, as it must be, by th' Power of the King;
One of these two must be Necessities,
Which then will speak, that you must change this purpose;
Or I my Life,

Flo. Thou dearest Perdita,
With these forc'd Thoughts I prethee darken not
The Mirth o' th' Feast; or I'll be thine, my Fair,
Or not my Father's. For I cannot be
Mine own, nor any thing to any, if
I be not thine. To this I am most constant,
Tho' Destiny say no. Be merry, gentle,
Strangle such Thoughts as these, with any thing
That you behold the while. Your Guests are coming;
Lift up your Countenance, as it were the day
Of Celebration of that Nuptial, which
We two have sworn shall come,

Per. O Lady Fortune,

Enter Shepherd, Clown, Mopfa, Dorcas. Servants; with Po-
laxenes, and Camillo disguis'd.

Flo. See, your Guests approach;
Address your self to entertain them sprightly,
And let's be red with Mirth.

Shep. Fie, Daughter; when my old Wife liv'd; upon
This day she was both Pantler, Butler, Cook,
Both Dame and Servant; welcom'd all, serv'd all;
Would sing her Song, and dance her turn; now here
At upper end o' th' Table, now i'th' middle;
On his Shoulder, and his; her Face o'fire
With Labour; and the things she took to quench it
She would to each one sip. You are retired,
As if you were a feasted one, and not
The Hostess of the meeting: Pray you bid
These unknown Friends to's welcome, for it is
A way to make us better Friends, more known.

F 3

Come
Come, quench your blushes, and present your self
That which you are, Mistress o’th’ Feast. Come on,
And bid us welcome to your Sheep-shearing,
As your good Flock shall prosper.

Per. Sirs, welcome. [To Polix and Cam.
It is my Father’s Will, I should take on me
The Hostelship o’th’ Day; you’re welcome, Sirs.
Give me those Flowers there, Dorcas. Reverend Sirs;
For you there’s Rosemary, and Rue, these keep
Seeming and Savour all the Winter long:
Grace and Remembrance be to you both,
And welcome to our Shearing.

Pol. Shepherds,
A fair one are you, well you fit our Ages
With Flowers of Winter.

Per. Sir, the Year growing ancient,
Nor yet on Summer’s Death, nor on the Birth
Of trembling Winter, the fairest Flowers o’th’ Season
Are our Carnations, and streak’d Gillyflowers,
Which some call Nature’s Bastards; of that kind
Our rustick Garden’s barren, and I care not
To get slips of them.

Pol. Wherefore, gentle Maiden,
Do you neglect them?

Per. For I have heard it said,
There is an Art, which in their pideness shares
With great creating-Nature.

Pol. Say there be,
Yet Nature is made better by no Mean,
But Nature makes that Mean; so over that Art,
Which you say adds to Nature is an Art
That Nature makes; you see, sweet Maid, we marry
A gentler Sien to the wildest Stock,
And make conceive a Bark of baser kind
By Bud of Nobler Race. This is an Art
Which does mend Nature; Change it rather; but
The Art it self is Nature.

Per. So it is.

Pol. Then make your Garden rich in Gillyflowers,
And do not call them Bastards.
Per. I'll not put
The Dible in Earth, to set one slip of them:
No more than were I Painted, I would wish
This Youth should say 'twere well; and only therefore
Desire to breed by me. Here's Flowers for you;
Hot Lavender, Mints, Savoury, Marjoram,
The Mary-gold, that goes to Bed with th' Sun,
And with him rises, weeping: These are Flowers
Of middle Summer, and, I think, they are given
To Men of middle Age. Y' are welcome.

Cam. I should leave grazing, were I of your Flock,
And only live by gazing.

Per. Out alas,
You'd be so lean, that blasts of January
Would blow you through and through. Now, my fairest
I would I had some Flowers o' th' Spring, that might
Become your time of Day; and yours, and yours,
That wear upon your Virgin-branches yet
Your Maiden-heads growing: O Proserpina,
For the Flowers now, that, frightened, thou let'st fall
From Dis's Waggon: Daffodils,
That come before the Swallow dares, and take
The Winds of March with Beauty; Violets, dim,
But sweeter than the Lids of Juno's Eyes,
Or Cyathus's Breath; pale Prim-roses,
That die unmarried, ere they can behold
Bright Phoebus in his Strength, a Malady
Most incident to Maids; bold Oxslips, and
The Crown-Imperial; Lilies of all kinds,
The Flower-de-Lis being one. O thefe I lack
To make you Garlands of, and my sweet Friend
To strow him o'er and o'er.

Flo. What? like a Coarse?

Per. No, like a Bank, for Love to lie and play on;
Not like a Coarse; or if, not to be buried,
But quick, and in mine Arms. Come, take your Flowers,
Methinks I play as I have seen them do
In Whitton Pastorals: Sure this Rebe of mine
Does change my Disposition.
Flo. What you do,
Still better what is done. When you speak, Sweet;
I'll have you do it ever, when you sing,
I'll have you buy and sell so; so give Alms;
Pray so; and for the ord'ring your Affairs,
To sing them too. When you do Dance, I wish you
A Wave o' th' Sea, that you might ever do
Nothing but that; move still, still so,
And own no other Function. Each your doing,
So singular in each particular,
Crowns what you are doing in the present Deeds,
That all your Acts are Queens.

Per. O Doricles,
Your Praises are too large; but that your Youth
And the true Blood which peeps forth fairly through it;
Do plainly give you out an unstain'd Shepherd,
With Wisdom, I might fear, my Doricles,
You wou'd me the false way.

Flo. I think you have
As little Skill to fear, as I have purpose
To put you to't. But come, our Dance I pray;
Your Hand, my Perdita; so Turtles pair
That never mean to part.

Per. I'll swear for 'em.

Pol. This is the prettiest low-born Lads, that ever
Ran on the green-Field, nothing she does, or seems,
But smacks of something greater than her self,
Too noble for this place.

Cam. He tells her something
That makes her Blood look on't: Good sooth she is.
The Queen of Curds and Cream.

C'o. Come on, strike up.

Dor. Mop'a must be your Mistress; marry Garlick to
mend her killing with.

Mop. Now in good time.

Cbo. Not a Word, a Word, we stand upon our Manners,
Come strike up.

Here a Dance of Shepherds and Shepherdesses:

Pol. Pray, good Shepherd, what fair Swain is this
Which Dances with your Daughter?
The Winter's Tale. 129

Shep. They call him Doricles, and he boasts himself
To have a worthy Feeding; but I have it
Upon his own Report, and I believe it:
He looks like sooth; he says he loves my Daughter,
I think so too; for never gaz'd the Moon
Upon the Water, as he'll stand and read
As 'twere my Daughter's Eyes: And, to be plain;
I think there is not half a Kiss to chuse
Who loves another best.

Fol. She Dances neatly.

Shep. So she does any thing, tho' I report it
That should be silent; if young Doricles
Do light upon her, she shall bring him that
Which he not dreams of.

Enter a Servant.

Ser. O Master, if you did but hear the Pedler at the Door, you would never Dance again after a Tabor and Pipe: No, the Bag-pipe could not move you; he sings several Tunes faster than you'll tell Mony; he utters them as he had eaten Ballads, and all Mens Ears grow to his Tunes.

Clo. He could never come better; he shall come in; I love a Ballad but even too well, if it be doleful Master merrily set down; or a very plesant thing indeed, and sung lamentably.

Ser. He hath Songs for Man or Woman of all Sizes; no Milliner can so fit his Customers with Gloves: He has the prettiest Love-songs for Maids, so without Bawdry, (which is strange) with such delicate burthen of Didos and Fapings: Jump her and thump her; and where some stretch-mouth'd Rascal would, as it were, mean mischief, and break a foul gap into the matter, he makes the Maid to answer, Whoop, do me no harm, good Man; pass him off, flights him, with Whoop, do me no harm, good Man.

Fol. This is a brave Fellow.

Clo. Believe me, thou talkest of an admirable conceited Fellow, has he any unbraided Warses?

Ser. He hath Ribbons of all the Colours 'ith' Rainbow; Points, more than all the Lawyers in Bohemia unlearnedly handle, tho' they come to him by the Groiz: Inkles, Cad-

F 5
dities, Cambricks, Lawns; why he sings 'em over, as they were Gods or Goddesse: you would think a Smock were a She-Angel, he so chants to the Sleeve-hand, and the work about the Square on't.

Clo. Prishee bring him in, and let him approach singing.

Per. Forewarn him that he use no scurrilous Words in's Tunes.

Clo. You have of these Pedlars, that have more in them, than you'd think, Sister.

Per. Ay, good Brother, or go about to think:

Enter Autolycus singing.

Lawn as white as driven Snow,
Cyprus black as e'er was Crow;
Gloves as sweet as Damask Roses,
Masks for Faces, and for Noses;
Bugle-Bracelets, Necklace Amber,
Perfume for a Lady's Chamber:
Golden Quills, and Stomachers,
For my Lads to give their Dears:
Pins, and poaking Sticks of Steel,
What Maids lack from Head to Heel:
Come buy of me, come: Come buy, come buy;
Buy Lads, or else your Lasses cry: Come buy.

Clo. If I were not in love with Mopsa, thou should'st take no Mony of me; but being ethralld as I am, it will also be the Bondage of certain Ribbons and Gloves.

Mop. I was promis'd them against the Feast, but they come not too late now.

Dor. He hath promis'd you more than that, or there be knisse.

Mop. He hath paid you all he promis'd you: 'May be he has paid you more, which will shame you to give him again.

Clo. Is there no Manners left among Maids? Will they wear their Plackets, where they should bear their Faces? Is there not Milking-time, when you are going to Bed, or Kill-hole, to whistle of these Secrets, but you must be tittle-
title-tatling before all our Guests? 'tis well they are whispering: Clamour your Tongues, and not a Word more.

Mop. I have done: Come, you promised me a tawdry Lace, and a pair of sweet Gloves.

Clo. Have I not told thee how I was cozen'd by the way, and lost all my Mony?

Ant. And indeed, Sir there are Cozeners abroad, therefore it behoves Men to be wary.

Clo. Fear not thou, Man, thou shalt lose nothing here.

Ant. I hope so, Sir, for I have about me many Parcels of Charge.

Clo. What hast here? Ballads?

Mop. Pray now buy some, I love a Ballad in Print, or a Life, for then we are sure they are true.

Ant. Here's one to a very doleful Tune, how a Usurer's Wife was brought to Bed with twenty Mony Bags at a Burthen, and how she long'd to eat Adder's Heads, and Toads Carbonado'd.

Mop. Is it true, think you?

Ant. Very true and but a Month old.

Dor. Bless me from marrying a Usurer.

Ant. Here's the Midwife's Name to't; one Mistress Tale-Porter, and five or six honest Wives that were present.

Why should I carry Lies abroad?

Mop. Pray you now buy it.

Clo. Come on, lay it by; and let's first see more Ballads; we'll buy the other things anon.

Ant. Here's another Ballad of a Fish, that appear'd upon the Coast, on Wednesday the four score of April, forty thousand Fathom above Water, and sung this Ballad against the hard Hearts of Maids; it was thought she was a Woman, and was turn'd into a cold Fish, for she would not exchange Flesh with one that lov'd her: The Ballad is very pitiful; and as true.

Dor. Is it true too, think you?

Ant. Five Justices Hands at it; and Witnesses more than my Pack will hold.

Clo. Lay it by too: Another.

Ant. This is a merry Ballad, but a very pretty one.

Mop. Let's have some merry ones.
Aut. Why this is a passing merry one, and goes to the Tune of two Maids wooing a Man; there's scarce a Maid Westward but she sings it: 'Tis in Request, I can tell you.
Mop. We can both sing it; if thou'll bear a part, thou shalt hear, 'tis in three parts.
Dor. We had the tune on't a Month a-go.
Aut. I can bear my part, you must know 'tis my Occupation: Have at it with you.

SONG.

Aut. Get you hence, for I must go,
     Where it fits not yous to know.
Dor. Whither?
Mop. O whither?
Dor. Whither?
Mop. It becomes thy Oath full well,
     Thou to me thy Secret tell.
Dor. Me too, let me go thither:
Mop. Or thou goest to th'Grange, or Mill;
Dor. If to either thou dost ill:
Aut. Neither.
Dor. What neither?
Aut. Neither.
Dor. Thou hast sworn my Love to be,
Mop. Thou hast sworn it more to me:
     Then whither goest? Say whither?

Clo. We'll have this Song out anon by our selves: My Father and the Gentlemen are in sad talk, and we'll not trouble them: Come bring away thy Pack after me. Wenches, I'll buy for you both: Pedlar let's have the first Choice; follow me Girls.

Ass. And you shall pay well for 'em.

SONG.

Will you buy any Tape, or Lace for your Cape,
     My dainty Duck, my Deer-a?
Any Silk, any Thread, any Toys for your Head
     Of the new'st, and fin'st, fin'st Ware-a:

Come
Come to the Pedler, Mony's a medler,
That doth utter all Men Ware-a.


Enter a Servant.

Ser. Master, there are three Carters, three Shepherds, three Neat-herds, and three Swine-herds that have made themselves all Men of Hair, they call themselves Saltiers, and they have a Dance, which the Wenches say is a Gally-maufry of Gambols, because they are not in't: But they themselves are o'th' mind, if it be not too rough for some, that know little but Bowling, it will please plentifully.

Shep. Away; we'll none on't; here has been too much homely foolery already. I know, Sir, we weary you.

Pol. You weary those that refresh us: 'Pray let's see these four-three of Herdsmen.

Ser. One three of them, by their own report, Sir, hath danc'd before the King; and not the worst of the three, but jumps twelve Foot and half by th' Square.

Shep. Leave your prating; since these good Men are pleas'd, let them come in, but quickly now.

Here a Dance of twelve Satyrs.

Pol. O Father, you'll know more of that hereafter.
Is it not too far gone? 'Tis time to part them, He's simple, and tells much. How now, fair Shepherd, Your Heart is full of somthing, that does take Your Mind from Feasting. Sooth, when I was young, And hadded Love, as you do, I was wont To load my She with Knacks: I would have Ranfack'd The Pedler's silken Treasury, and have pour'd it To her Acceptance; you have let him go, And nothing marted with him. If your Lafs Interpretation should abuse, and call this Your lack of Love, or Beauty, you were frauded For a Reply at last, if you make a Care Of happy holding her.

Fla. Old Sir, I know She prizes not such Trifles as these are;
The Gifts she looks from me, are packt and lockt
Up in my Heart, which I have given already,
But not deliver'd. O hear me breath my Life
Before this ancient Sir, who, it should seem
Hath sometime lov'd. I take thy Hand, this Hand,
As soft as Dove's Down; and as white as it,
Or Ethiopians Tooth, or the fann'd Snow,
That's bolted by th' Northern Blast, twice o'er.

Pol. What follows this?

How prettily the young Swain seems to wash
The Hand, was fair before! I have put you out;
But to your Protestation: Let me hear
What you profess.

Flo. Do, and he witness to't.

Pol. And this my Neighbour too?

Flo. And he, and more

Then he, and Men; the Earth, and Heav'n's, and all;
That were I crown'd the most Imperial Monarch
Thereof most worthy; were I the fairest Youth
That ever made Eye swerve, had Force and Knowledge
More than was ever Man's, I would not prize them
Without her Love; for her imploy them all,
Commend them, and condemn them to her Service,
Or to their own Perdition.

Pol. Fairly offer'd.

Cam. This shews a sound Affection.

Shep. But my Daughter,

Say you the like to him?

Per. I cannot speak
So well, nothing so well, no, nor mean better.

By the Pattern of mine own Thoughts, I cut out
The Purity of his.

Shep. Take Hands, a Bargain;

And Friends unknown, you shall bear witness to't;
I give my Daughter to him, and will make
Her Portion equal his.

Flo. O, that must be

I' th' Virtue of your Daughter; one being dead,
I shall have more than you can dream of yet,
Enough then for your Wonder: But come on,
Contrafte us 'fore these Witnesses.

Scep. Come, your Hand;
And, Daughter, yours.

Pol. Soft, Swain, a-while; 'beseech you,
Have you a Father?

Flo. I have; but what of him?

Pol. Knows he of this?

Flo. He neither does nor shall.

Pol. Methinks a Father

Is at the Nuptial of his Son, a Guest

That best becomes the Table: 'Pray you once more;

Is not your Father grown incapable

Of reasonable Affairs? Is he not Stupid
With Age, and altring Rheums? Can he speak? Hear?

Know Man from Man? Dispute his own Estate?

Lyes he not Bed-rid? and again, does nothing

But what he did, being Childish?

Flo. No, good Sir;
He has his Health, and ampler Strength indeed

Than most have of his Age.

Pol. By my white Beard,

You offer him, if this be so, a Wrong.

Something unphilial: Reason my Son

Should chuse himself a Wife, but as good reason

The Father (all whose Joy is nothing else

But fair Pofferity) should hold some Counsel

In such a Business.

Flo. I yield all this;

But for some other Reasons, my grave Sir,

Which 'tis not fit you know, I not acquaint

My Father of this Business.

Pol. Let him know't.

Flo. He shall not.

Pol. Prithee let him.

Flo. No; he must not.

Scep. Let him, my Son, he shall not need to grieve,

At knowing of thy Choice.

Flo. Come, come, he must not;

Mark our Contract.
Pol. Mark your Divorce, young Sir, [Discovering himself.]
Whom Son I dare not call: Thou art too base
To be acknowledg'd. Thou a Scepter's Heir,
That thus affects a Sheep-hook? Thou old Traytor,
I am sorry that by hanging thee, I can
But shorten thy Life one Week. And thou fresh Piece
Of excellent Witchcraft, who of force must know
The Royal Foul thou coaps't with.

Skep. Oh my Heart!

Pol. I'll have thy Beauty scratch'd with Briars, and made
More homely than thy State. For thee, fond Boy,
If I may ever know thou dost but sigh,
That thou no more shalt see this Knack, as never
I mean thou shalt, we'll bar thee from Succession,
Not hold thee of our Blood, no not our Kin,
Far than Deucalion off: Mark thou my Words;
Follow us to the Court. Thou Churl, for this time;
Tho' full of our Displeasure, yet we free thee
From the dead blow of it: And You, Enchantment,
Worthy enough a Herdsman; yea him too,
That makes himself, but for our Honour therein,
Unworthy thee; if ever, henceforth, thou
These rural Latches to his Entrance open,
Or hope his Body more, with thy Embraces,
I will devise a Death as cruel for thee,
As thou art tender to it.

[Exit.

Per. Even here undone:
I was not much afraid; for once or twice;
I was about to speak, and tell him plainly,
The self-same Sun that shines upon his Court;
Hides not his Visage from our Cottage, but
Looks on alike. Wilt please you, Sir, be gone? [To Flo: I told you what would come of this. 'Beleech you
Of your own State take care: This Dream of mine
Being now awake, I'll Queen it no inch farther,
But milk my Ewes, and weep.

Cam. Why how now, Father.
Speak e'er thou dyest.

Skep. I cannot speak, nor think,
Nor dare to know that which I know. O Sir, [To Flor; You
You have undone a Man of fourscore three,
That thought to fill his Grave in quiet; yea,
To die upon the Bed my Father dy'd,
To lye close by his honest Bones; but now
Some Hang-man must put on my Shroud, and lay me
Where no Priest shovels in Dust. Oh cursed Wretch!

[To Perdita;
That knewst this was the Prince, and wouldst adventure
To mingle Faith with him. Undone, undone!
If I might die within this Hour, I have liv'd
To die when I desire.

Flo. Why look you so upon me?
I am but sorry, not afraid; delay'd,
But nothing alter'd: What I was I am;
More straining on, for plucking back; not following
My Leaf unwillingly.

Cam. Gracious my Lord,
You know your Father's Temper: At this time
He will allow no Speech, which I do gues
You do not purpose to him; and as hardly
Will he endure your sight, as yet I fear;
Then, 'till the Fury of his Highness settle,
Come not before him.

Flo. I not purpose it.
I think, Camillo?

Cam. Even he, my Lord.

Per. How often have I told you 'twould be thus?
How often said, my Dignity would last
But 'till 'twere known?

Flo. It cannot fail, but by
The Violation of my Faith, and then
Let Nature crush the sides o' th' Earth together,
And mar the Seeds within. Lift up thy Looks!
From my Succession wipe me, Father, I
Am Heir to my Affection.

Cam. Be advis'd.

Flo. I am; and by my Fancy, if my Reason
Will thereto be obedient, I have Reason;
If not, my Senses, better pleas'd with Madness,
Do bid it welcome.
Cam. This is desperate, Sir.

Flo. So call it; but it does fulfil my Vow;
I needs must think it Honesty. Camillo,
Not for Bohemia, nor the Pomp that may
Be thereat gleaned; for all that the Sun sees, or
The close Earth wombs, or the profound Seas hide
In unknown Fadoms. will I break my Oath
To this my fair Belov'd: Therefore, I pray you,
As you have ever been my Father's Friend,
When he shall miss me, (as in faith I mean not
To see him any more) cast your good Counsels
Upon his Passion; let my self and Fortune
Tug for the time to come. This you may know,
And so deliver, I am put to Sea
With her, whom here I cannot hold on Shore;
And moat opportune to her need, I have;
A Vessel rides fast by, but not prepar'd
For this design. What course I mean to hold
Shall nothing benefit your Knowledge, nor
Concern me the reporting.

Cam. O my Lord,
I would your Spirit were easier for advice,
Or stronger for your need.

Flo. Heark, Perdita.
I'll hear you by and by.

Cam. He's irremovable,
Resolv'd for flight: Now were I happy, if
His going I could frame to serve my turn;
Save him from danger, do him Love and Honour,
Purchafe the sight again of dear Sicilia,
And that unhappy King, my Master, whom
I so much thirst to see.

Flo. Now, good Camillo;
I am so fraught with curious Business, that
I leave out Ceremony.

Cam. Sir, I think
You have heard of my poor Services, i'th' love
That I have born your Father?

Flo. Very nobly
Have you deserv'd: It is my Father's Musick,

[Aside.]
To speak your Deeds; not little of his Care
To have them recompen'd, as thought on.

Cam. Well, my Lord,
If you may please to think I love the King,
And through him, what's nearest to him, which is
Your gracious self, embrace but my Direction,
If your more ponderous and setled Project
May suffer Alteration: On mine Honour,
I'll point you where you shall have such receiving
As shall become your Highness, where you may
Enjoy your Mildness; from the whom, I see,
There's no disjunction to be made, but by
(As Heav'n's forefend) your Ruin. Marry her,
And with my best Endeavours, in your Absence,
Your discontented Father I'll strive to qualifie,
And bring to liking.

Flo. How, Camillo.
May this, almost a Miracle, be done?
That I may call thee something more than Man,
And after that truft to thee?

Cam. Have you thought on
A place wherefo to you'll go?

Flo. Not any yet:
But as th'unthought-on Accident is guilty
Of what we wildly do, so we profefs
Our selves to be the Slaves of Chance, and Flies
Of every Wind that blows.

Cam. Then lift to me:
This follows, if you will not change your Purpose,
But undergo this Flight; make for Sicilia,
And there present your self, and your fair Princess,
(For so I see she must be) 'fore Leontes;
She shall be habited, as it becomes
The Partner of your Bed. Methinks I see
Leontes opening his free Arms, and weeping
His Welcomes forth; asks thee, the Son, forgiveness,
As 'twere i'th' Father's Person; kisseth the Hands
Of your fresh Princess; o'er and o'er divides him,
'Twixt his Unkindness, and his Kindnes: Th'one
He chides to Hell, and bids the other grow

Farfel
Faster than Thought or Time.

Flo. Worthy Camillo.
What colour for my Vistation shall I
Hold up before him?

Cam. Sent by the King your Father
To greet him, and to give him Comforts: Sir,
The manner of your bearing towards him, with
What you, as from your Father, shall deliver,
Things known betwixt us three, I'll write you down,
The which shall point you forth at every sitting
What you must say, that he shall not perceive,
But that you have your Father's Bozom there,
And speak his very Heart.

Flo. I am bound to you:
There is some Sap in this.

Cam. A course more promising,
Than a wild Dedication of your selves:
To unpath'd Waters, undream'd Shores; most certain!
To Miseries enough: No hope to help you,
But as you shake off one, to take another:
Nothing so certain, as your Anchors, who
Do their best Office, if they can but stay you,
Where you'll be loath to be: Besides, you know,
Prosperity's the very Bond of Love,
Whose fresh Complexion, and whose Heart together,
Afflication alters.

Per. One of these is true:
I think Afflication may subdue the Cheek,
But not take in the Mind.

Cam. Yea, say you so?
There shall not at your Father's House, these seven Years,
Be born another such.

Flo. My good Camillo,
She's as forward of her Breeding, as
She is I'th' rear o'our Birth.

Cam. I cannot say, 'tis pity
She lacks Instructions, for she seems a Mistref.
To most that teach.

Per. Your Pardon, Sir, for this.
I'll blush you Thanks.
Flo. My prettiest Perdita—
But O, the Thorns we stand upon. Camillo,
Preserver of my Father, now of me;
The Medicine of our House; how shall we do?
We are not furnish’d like Bohemia’s Son,
Nor shall appear in Sicily—

Cam. My Lord,
Fear none of this: I think you know my Fortunes
Do all lye there: It shall be so my Care
To have you Royally appointed, as if
The Scene you play were mine. For instance, Sir;
That you may know you shall not want; one word.

[They talk aside.

Enter Autolycus.

Aut. Ha, ha, what a Fool Honesty is! and Trust, his
sworn Brother, a very simple Gentleman! I have sold all
my Trumpery; not a Counterfeit Stone, not a Ribbon,
Glas, Pomander, Browch, Table-book, Ballad, Knife,
Tape, Glove, Shoee-tye, Bracelet, Horn-ring to keep my
Pack from fastning: They throng who should buy first, as
if my Trinkets had been hallowed, and brought a Bene-
diction to the Buyer; by which means, I saw whose Purse
was best in Picture; and what I saw, to my good Use, I
remember’d. My good Clown (who wants but some-
thing to be a reasonable Man) grew so in Love with the
Wenches Song, that he would not stir his Petticoats ’till
he had both Tune and Words, which so drew the rest of
the Herd to me, that all their other Senses stuck in Ears;
you might have pinch’d a Placket, it was senseless, ’twas
nothing to geld a Codpiece of a Purse; I would have
filed Keys off that hung in Chains: No hearing, no feel-
ing, but my Sir’s Song, and admiring the nothing of it.
So that in this time of Lethargy, I pick’d and cut most
of their Festival Purfes: And had not the old Man come
in with a Whoop-bub against his Daughter, and the King’s
Son, and fear’d my Chowghes from the Chaff, I had not
left a Purse alive in the whole Army.

Cam. Nay; but my Letters by this means being there,
So soon as you arrive, shall clear that doubt.
Flo. And those that you'll procure from King Leontes—
Cam. Shall satisfy your Father.
Per. Happy be you:
All that you speak, shews fair.
Cam. Who have we here?
We'll make an Instrument of this; omit
Nothing may give us aid.
Aut. If they have over-heard me now: Why Hanging.
Cam. How now, good Fellow,
Why shak'lt thou so? Fear not, Man,
Here's no harm intended to thee.
Aut. I am a poor Fellow, Sir.
Cam. Why, be so still: Here's no Body will steal that
from thee; yet for the outside of thy Poverty, we must
make an Exchange: Therefore disrobe thee instantly, (thou
must think there's a necessity in't) and change Garments
with this Gentleman: Tho' the Penny-worth, on his side,
be the worst, yet hold thee, there's some boot.
Aut. I am a poor Fellow, Sir; I know ye well en-
ough.
Cam. Nay, prithee dispach; the Gentleman is half fled
ready.
Aut. Are you in earnest, Sir? I smell the Trick on't.
Flo. Dispatch, I prithee.
Aut. Indeed I have had earnest, but I cannot with Con-
science take it.
Cam. Unbuckle, unbuckle.
Fortunate Mistress, (let my Prophecy
Come home to ye,) you must retire your self
Into some Covert; take your Sweet-heart's Hat
And pluck it o'er your Brows, muffle your Face,
Dismantle you, and, as you can, dislik'en
The Truth of your own seeming, that you may
(For I do fear Eyes over you) to Ship-board
Get undescried.
Per. I see the Play so lyes,
That I must bear a Part.
Cam. No remedy—
Have you done there?
Flo.
Flo. Should I now meet my Father,
He would not call me Son.
Cam. Nay, you shall have no Hat:
Come Lady, come: Farewel, my Friend.
Ant. Adieu, Sir.
Flo. O Perdita, what have we twain forgot?
Pray you a Word.
Cam. What I do next, shall be to tell the King [Aside:
Of this Escape, and whither they are bound:
Wherein my Hope is, I shall so prevail
To force him after; in whose Company
I shall review Sicilia; for whose fight,
I have a Woman’s Longing.
Flo. Fortune speed us.
Thus we set on, Camillo, to th’Seaside. [Ex. Flo. & Per.
Cam. The swifter speed, the better. [Exit.
Ant. I understand the Business, I hear it: To have an
open Ear, a quick Eye, and a nimble Hand, is necessary for
a Cut-purse; a good Nose is requisite also, to smell out
work for th’other Senses. I see this is the Time that the
unjust Man doth thrive. What an Exchange had this been,
without boot? What a boot is here, with this exchange?
Sure the Gods do this Year connive at us, and we may do
any thing extempore. The Prince himself is about a piece
of Iniquity, stealing away from his Father, with his Clog
at his Heels. If I thought it were a piece of honesty to
acquaint the King withal, I would not do’t: I hold it
the more Knavery to conceal it; and therein am I con-
stant to my Profession.

Enter Clown and Shepherd.
Aside, aside, here’s more matter for a hot Brain; Every
Lanes end, every Shop, Church, Session, Hanging, yields a
careful Man work.
Clo. See, see; what a Man you are now? There is no
other way, but to tell the King she’s a Changling, and
none of your Flesh and Blood.
Shep. Nay, but hear me.
Clo. Nay, but hear me.
Shep. Go to then.

Clo.
Clo. She being none of your Flesh and Blood, your Flesh and Blood has not offended the King, and so your Flesh and Blood is not to be punish’d by him. Shew those things you found about her, those secret Things, all but what she has with her; this being done, let the Law go whistle; I warrant you.

Shep. I will tell the King all, every Word, yea, and his Son's pranks too; who, I may say, is no honest Man neither to his Father, nor to me, to go about to make me the King's Brother-in-Law.

Clo. Indeed Brother-in-Law was the farthest off you could have been to him, and then your Blood had been the dearer by I know how much an Ounce.

Aut. Very wifely, Puppies. [Aside.]

Shep. Well; let us to the King; there is that in this Farthel will make him scratch his Beard.

Aut. I know not what Impediment this Complaint may be to the Flight of my Matter.

Clo. 'Pray heartily he be at the Palace.

Aut. Tho' I am not naturally honest, I am so sometimes by chance: Let me pocket up my Pedlers Excrement. How now, Rustiques, whither are you bound?

Shep. To th' Palace, and it like your Worship.

Aut. Your Affairs there? What? with whom? the Condition of that Farthel? the Place of your Dwelling? your Names? your Age? of what having? breeding, and any thing that is fitting for to be known, discover?

Clo. We are but plain Fellows, Sir.

Aut. A Lie; you are rough and hairy; let me have no lying; it becomes none but Tradesmen, and they often give us, Soldiers, the Lie, but we pay them for it with stamped Coin, not flabbing Steel, therefore they do not give us the Lie.

Clo. Your Worship had like to have given us one, if you had not taken your self with the manner.

Shep. Are you a Courtier, and like you, Sir?

Aut. Whether it like me, or no, I am a Courtier. Seest thou not the Air of the Court in these Erfolding's? Hath not my Gate in it the Measure of the Court? receives not thy Note Court-Odcur from me? Reflect I not on thy
thy Basseness, Court-Contempt? Think'lt thou, for that I
insinuate, or toaze from thee thy Business, I am therefore
no Courtier? I am Courtier Cap-a-pe; and one that will
either push-on, or push back, thy business there, where-
upon command thee to open thy Affair.

Shep. My Business, Sir, is to the King.

Advocate. What Advocate hast thou to him?

Shep. I know not, and't like you.

Clo. Advocate's the Court-word for a Pheasant; say
you have none.

Shep. None, Sir; I have no Pheasant Cock, nor Hen.

Advocate. How blessed are we, that are not simple Men!
Yet Nature might have made me as these are,
Therefore I will not disdain.

Clo. This cannot be but a great Courtier.
Shep. His Garments are rich, but he wears them not
handsomely.

Clo. He seems to be the more Noble in being fantas-
tical; a great Man, I'll warrant; I know by the picking
on's Teeth.

Advocate. The Farthel there; what's i'th Farthel?
Wherefore that Box?

Shep. Sir, there lies such Secrets in this Farthel and Box,
which none must know but the King, and which he shall
know within this Hour, if I may come to th' Speech of him.

Advocate. Age, thou hast left thy Labour.
Shep. Why Sir?

Advocate. The King is not at the Palace, he is gone aboard
a new Ship to purge Melancholy, and air himself; for if
thou be'lt capable of things serious, thou must know the
King is full of Grief.

Shep. So 'tis said, Sir, about his Son that should have
married a Shepherd's Daughter.

Advocate. If that Shepherd be not in Hand-satt, let him fly;
the Curses he shall have, the Tortures he shall feel, will
break the Back of Man, the Heart of Monster.

Clo. Think you so, Sir?

Advocate. Nor he alone shall suffer what Wit can make heavy;
and Vengeance bitter; but those that are German to him,
th' remov'd fifty times, shall all come under the Hangman;

Vol. III. G which,
which, tho' it be great Pity, yet it is necessary. An old Sheep-whistling Rogue, a Ram-tender, to offer to have his Daughter come into Grace? Some say he shall be fton'd; but that Death is too soft for him, say I: Draw our Throne into a Sheep-Coat? All Deaths are too few, the sharpest too easie.

Clo. Has the old Man e'er a Son, Sir; do you hear, and't like you, Sir?

Ant. He has a Son, who shall be try'd alive, then 'pointed over with Honey, set on the Head of a Wasp's Nest, then stand 'till he be three Quarters and a Dram dead; then recover'd again with Aqua-vite, or some other hot Infusion; then, raw as he is, (and in the hottest Day Prognocification proclaims) shall he be set against a Brick-Wall, the Sun looking with a Southward Eye upon him, where he is to behold him, with Flies blown to Death. But what talk we of these Traitorly-Rascals, whose Miseries are to be smil'd at, their Offences being so capital? Tell me, (for you seem to be honest plain Men) what you have to the King; being something gently consider'd, I'll bring you where he is aboard, tender your Person to his Prefence, whisper him in your behalf; and if it be in Man, besides the King, to effect your Suits, here is a Man shall do it.

Clo. He seems to be of great Authority; close with him, give him Gold; and though Authority be a stubborn Bear, yet he is oft led by the Nose with Gold; shew the Inside of your Purse to the outside of his Hand, and no more ado. Remember fton'd and flay'd alive.

Ship. And't please you, Sir, to undertake the Business for us, here is that Gold I have; I'll make it as much more, and leave this young Man in Pawn 'till I bring it you.

Ant. After I have done what I promised?

Ship. Ay, Sir.

Ant. Well, give me the Moiety. Are you a Party in this Business?

Clo. In some sort, Sir; but tho' my Case be a pitiful one, I hope I shall not be flay'd out of it.

Ant. Oh that's the Case of the Shepherd's Son; hang him, he'll be made an Example.

Clo.
The Winter's Tale. 147

Clo. Comfort, good Comfort; we must to the King, and shew our strange Sights; he must know 'tis none of your Daughter nor my Sister, we are gone else. Sir, I will give you as much as this old Man does, when the Business is perform'd, and remain, as he says, your Pawn 'till it be brought you.

Ant. I will trust you, walk before toward the Sea-side, go on the right Hand, I will but look upon the Hedge, and follow you.

Clo. We are bless'd in this Man, as I may say, even bless'd.

Shep. Let's before, as he bids us; he was provided to do us good.

[Exeunt Shep. and Clown.

Ant. If I had a Mind to be honest, I see Fortune would not suffer me; she drops Booties in my Mouth. I am courted now with a double Occasion: Gold, and a Means to do the Prince my Master good; which, who knows how that may turn back to my Advancement? I will bring these two Moals, these blind ones, aboard him; if he think it fit to Shörar them again, and that the Complaint they have to the King concerns him nothing, let him call me Rogue, for being so far officious, for I am Proof against that Title, and what Shame else belongs to't: To him will I present them, there may be Matter in it. [Exit.

ACT V. SCENE I.

Enter Leontes, Cleomines, Dion, Paulina, and Servants.

Cleo. Sir, you have done enough, and have perform'd
A Saint-like Sorrow: No Fault could you make,
Which you have not redeem'd; indeed pay'd down
More Penitence, than done Trespass. At the last
Do as the Heavens have done; forget your evil
With them, forgive your self.

Leo. Whilst I remember
Her and her Virtues, I cannot forget
My Blemishes in them, and so still think of
The Wrong I did my self; which was so much;
That Heir-lets it hath made my Kingdom, and
Destroy'd the sweet'st Companion that e'er Man
Bred his Hopes out of, true.

Pau. Too true, my Lord,
If one by one you wedded all the World,
Or from the All that are, took somthing good,
To make a perfect Woman; she you kill'd,
Would be unparallel'd.

Leo. I think so. Kill'd?
She I kill'd? I did so, but thou strik'ft me
Sorely, to say I did; It is as bitter
Upon thy Tongue, as in my Thought. Now, good now;
Say so but seldom.

Cleo. Not at all, good Lady;
You might have spoken a thousand things, that would
Have done the time more Benefit, and grace'd
Your Kindness better.

Pau. You are one of those,
Would have him wed again.

Dio. If you would not so,
You pity not the State, nor the Remembrance
Of his most Sovereign Name; Consider little,
What Dangers, by his Highness fail of Issue,
May drop upon his Kingdom, and devour
Incertain lookers on. What were more holy,
Than to rejoice the former Queen is well?
What holier, than for Royalties repair,
For present Comfort, and for future Good,
To bless the Bed of Majesty again
With a sweet Fellow to't?

Pau. There is none worthy,
(Respecting her that's gone) Besides, the Gods
Will have fulfilling'd their secret Purposes:
For has not the divine Apollo said,
Is't not the Tenor of his Oracle,
'That King Leontes shall not have an Heir,'
Till his lost Child be found? Which, that it shall,'
The Winter's Tale

Is all as monstrous to our humane Reason,
As my Antigonus to break his Grave,
And come again to me; who, on my Life,
Did perish with the Infant. 'Tis your Council,
My Lord should to the Heav'n's be contrary,
Oppose against their Wills. Care not for Illue,
The Crown will find an Heir. Great Alexander
Left his to th' Worthiest; so his Successor
Was like to be the best.

Leo. Good Paulina,
Who haft the Memory of Hermione
I know in Honour: O, that ever I
Had quar'd me to thy Council; then, even now
I might have look'd upon my Queen's full Eyes,
Have taken Treasure from her Lips.

Pau. And left them
More rich, for what they yielded;

Leo. Thou speake'st Truth:
No more such Wives therefore no Wife; one worse;
And better us'd, would make her fainted Spirit,
Again posses her Corps, and on this Stage,
(Where we Offenders now appear) Soul-vext,
And begin, why to me?

Pau. Had she such Power,
She had just Cause.

Leo. She had, and would incense me
To murther her I married;

Pau. I should do:
Were I the Ghost that wak'd, I'd bid you mark
Her Eye, and tell me for what dull part in't
You chose her; then I'd shriek, that even your Ears
Should rife to hear me, and the Words that follow'd;
Should be, Remember mine.

Leo. Stars, Stars,
And all Eyes else, dead Coals: fear thou no Wife:
I'll have no Wife, Paulina.

Pau. Will you swear
Never to marry, but by my free Leave?

Leo. Never, Paulina, so be blest'd my Spirit.

Pau. Then, good my Lords, bear Witness to his Oath.
Cleo. You tempt him over-much.

Pau. Unless another,

As like Hermione as is her Picture,

Affront his Eye,

Cleo. Good Madam, pray have done.

Pau. Yet if my Lord will marry; if you will, Sir;

No Remedy, but you will; give me the Office
To chuse you a Queen; she shall not be so young
As was your former; but she shall be such,
As, walk'd your first Queen's Ghost, it should take Joy,

To see her in your Arms.

Leo. My true Paulina,

We shall not marry, 'till thou bidst us.

Pau. That

Shall be, when your first Queen's again in Breath:

Never 'till then.

Enter a Servant.

Ser. One that gives out himself Prince Florizel,

Son of Felixemis, with his Prince's (the

The fairest I have yet beheld) desires Access

To your high Presence.

Leo. What with him? He comes not

Like to his Father's Greatness; his Approach

So out of Circumstance, and sudden, tells us,

'Tis not a Violation fram'd, but forc'd

By need and accident. What Train?

Ser. But few,

And those but mean.

Leo. His Prince's, say you, with him?

Ser. Yes; the most peerless piece of Earth, I think,

That e'er the Sun shone bright on.

Pau. Oh Hermione,

As every present Time doth boast it self

Above a better, gone; so must thy Grave

Give way to what's seen now. Sir, you your self

Have said, and writ so; but your writing now

Is colder than that Theam; she had not been,

Nor was not to be equal'd; thus your Verse

Flow'd with her Beauty once, 'tis shrewdly ebb'd,

To say you have seen a better.

Ser.
Ser. Pardon, Madam;
The one I have almost forgot, (your Pardon)
The other, when she has obtain'd your Eye,
Will have your Tongue too. This is a Creature,
Would she begin a Sect, might quench the Zeal
Of all Professors else, make Profites
Of who she but bid follow.

Pau. How? not Women?
Ser. Women will love her, that she is a Woman
More worth than any Man: Men, that she is
The rarest of all Women.

Leo. Go, Cleomines;
Your self (aslifted with your honour'd Friends)
Bring them to our Embracement. Still 'tis strange
He thus should steal upon us. [Exit Cleo.

Pau. Had our Prince
(Jewel of Children) seen this Hour, he had pair'd
Well with this Lord; there was not a full Month
Between their Births.

Leo. Prethee no more; cease; thou know'ft
He dies to me again, when talk'd of: Sure
When I shall see this Gentleman, thy Speeches
Will bring me to consider that, which may
Unfurnish me of Reason. They are come.

Enter Florizel, Perdita, Cleomines, and others.

Your Mother was most true to Wedlock, Prince,
For she did print your Royal Father off,
Conceiving you. Were I but twenty one,
Your Father's Image is so hit in you,
His very Air, that I should call you Brother,
As I did him, and speak of something wildly
By us perform'd before. Most dearly welcome;
And your fair Princes, Goddes, oh! alas!
I lovt a Couple, that 'twixt Heav'n and Earth
Might thus have stood, begetting Wonder, as
You, gracious Couple do; and then I lovt,
(All mine own Folly) the Society,
Amity too of your brave Father, whom
(The' bearing Misery) I desire my Life
Once more to look on him.
Flo. By his Command
Have I here touch'd Sicilia, and from him
Give you all Greetings, that a King, as Friend,
Can lend his Brother; and but Infirmitie,
Which waits upon worn times, hath something seiz'd
His with'd Ability, he had himself
The Lands and Waters 'twixt your Throne and his
Measur'd, to look upon you, whom he loves,
He bad me say so, more than all the Scepters,
And those that bear them, living.

Leo. Oh my Brother!
Good Gentleman, the Wrongs I have done thee, sir
Afire within me; and these thy Offices,
So rarely kind, are as Interpreters
Of my behind-hand Slackness. Welcome hither,
As is the Spring to th' Earth. And hath he too
Expos'd this Paragon to th' fearful Ufage,
(At least ungentle) of the dreadful Neptune,
To greet a Man, not worth her Pains; much less,
Th' Adventure of her Person?

Flo. Good my Lord.
She came from Lybia.

Leo. Where the warlike Smalus;
That noble honour'd Lord, is fear'd, and lov'd?

Flo. Most Royal Sir,
From thence; from him, whose Daughter
His Tears proclaim'd his parting with her; thence
(A prosperous South-Wind friendly) we have cross'd,
To execute the Charge my Father gave me,
For visiting your Highness; my best Train
I have from your Sicilian Shores diffus'd,
Who for Bohemia bend, to signify
Not only my Success in Lybia, Sir,
But my Arrival, and my Wife's, in Safety
Here, where we are.

Leo. The Blessed Gods
Purge all Infection from our Air, whilst you
Do Climate here; you have a holy Father,
A graceful Gentleman, against whose Person,
So sacred as it is, I have done Sin;
For which the Heavens, taking angry Note,
Have left me Issue-less; and your Father's blest'd,
As he from Heaven merits it, with you,
Worthy his Goodness. What might I have been,
Might I a Son and Daughter now have look'd on,
Such goodly things as you?

Enter a Lord:

Lord. Most noble Sir,
That which I shall report will bear no Credit;
Were not the Proof so nigh. Please you, great Sir;
Bobemia greets you from himself, by me;
Desires you to attach his Son, who has
His Dignity and Duty both cast off,
Fled from his Father, from his Hopes, and with
A Shepherd's Daughter.

Leo. Where's Bobemia! speak.

Lord. Here in your City; I now came from him.
I speak amazedly, and it becomes
My Marvel, and my Message: To your Court
Whilst he was hast'ning, in the Chase, it seems,
Of this fair Couple, meets he on the way
The Father of this seeming Lady, and
Her Brother, having both their Country quitted,
With this young Prince.

Flo. Camillo has betray'd me,
Whose Honour, and whose Honesty, 'till now,
Endur'd all Weathers.

Lord. Lay't so to his Charge;
He's with the King your Father.

Leo. Who? Camillo?

Lord. Camillo, Sir, I spake with him, who now
Has these poor Men in Question. Never saw I
Wretches so quake; they kneel, they kill the Earth;
Forswear themselves as often as they speak:
Bobemia stops his Ears, and threatens them
With divers Deaths, in Death.

Per. Oh my poor Father,
The Heav'n lets Spies upon us, will not have
Our Contract celebrated.

Leo. You are marry'd?
154 The Winter's Tale.

Flo. We are not, Sir, nor are we like to be; The Stars, I see, will kiss the Valleys first; The odds for high and low's alike.

Leo. My Lord,

Is this the Daughter of a King?

Flo. She is,

When once she is my Wife.

Leo. That once, I see, by your good Father's Speed, Will come on very slowly. I am sorry, Most sorry, you have broken from his Liking; Where you were tied in Duty; and as sorry Your Choice is not so rich in Worth as Beauty, That you might well enjoy her.

Flo. Dear, look up;

Though Fortune, visible an Enemy, Should chafe us, with my Father; Power no Jot Hath she to change our Loves. Befeech you, Sir, Remember since you ow'd no more to Time Than I do now; with Thought of such Affections, Step forth mine Advocate; at your Request, My Father will grant precious Things, as Trifles.

Leo. Would he do so, I'd beg your precious Mistress, Which he counts but a Trifle.

Pau. Sir, my Liege,

Your Eye hath too much Youth in't; not a Month 'Fore your Queen dy'd, she was more worth such Gazes Than what you look on now.

Leo. I thought of her,

Even in these Looks I made. But your Petition Is yet unanswered; I will to your Father; Your Honour not o'erthrown by your Desires, I am Friend to them, and you; upon which Errand I now go toward him, therefore follow me, And mark what way I make: Come, good my Lord.

[Exeunt]

Scene II.

Enter Autolicus, and a Gentleman.

Aut. Befeech you, Sir, were you present at this Relation?
The Winter's Tale

1 Gent. I was by at the opening of the Fardel, heard the old Shepherd deliver the Manner how he found it; whereupon, after a little Amazement, we were all commanded out of the Chamber; only this, me-thought, I heard the Shepherd say, he found the Child.

Aut. I would most gladly know the Issue of it.

1 Gent. I make a broken Delivery of the Business; but the Changes I perceived in the King and Camillo, were very Notes of Admiration; they seem'd almost, with staring on one another, to tear the Cares of their Eyes. There was Speech in their Dumbness, Language in their very Gesture; they look'd as if they had heard of a World ransom'd, or one destroy'd: a notable Passion of Wonder appear'd in them; but the wisest Beholder, that knew no more but seeing, could not say, if th' Importance were Joy, or Sorrow; but in the Extremity of the one, it must needs be.

Enter another Gentleman.

Here comes a Gentleman, that happily knows more: The News, Rogero.

2 Gent. Nothing but Bonfires: The Oracle is fulfill'd; the King's Daughter is found; such a deal of Wonder is broken out within this Hour, that Ballad-makers cannot be able to express it.

Enter another Gentleman.

Here comes the Lady Paulina's Steward, he can deliver you more. How goes it now, Sir? This News which is call'd true, is so like an old 'Tale, that the Verity of it is in strong Suspicion; has the King found his Heir?

3 Gent. Most true, if ever Truth were pregnant by Circumstance: That which you hear, you'll swear you see, there is such Unity in the Proofs. The Mantle of Queen Hermione; her Jewel about the Neck of it; the Letters of Antigonus found with it, which they know to be his Character; the Majesty of the Creature, in Resemblance of the Mother; the Affection of Nobleness, which Nature shews above her Breeding, and many other Evidences proclaim her with all Certainty to be the King's Daughter. Did you see the Meeting of the two Kings?

2 Gent.
2 Gent. No.

3 Gent. Then have you lost a Sight which was to be seen, cannot be spoken of. There might you have beheld one Joy crown another, so and in such manner, that it seem'd Sorrow wept to take leave of them. for their Joy waded in Tears. There was casting up of Eyes, holding up of Hands, with Countenance of such Distract, that they were to be known by Garment, not by Favour. Our King being ready to leap out of himself, for Joy of his found Daughter; as if that Joy were now become a Loss, cries, Oh, thy Mother, thy Mother! then asks Bohemia Forgiveness; then embraces his Son-in-Law; then again worries he his Daughter, with clipping her. Now he thanks the old Shepherd, who stands by, like a Weather-beaten Conduit of many Kings Reigns. I never heard of such another Encounter, which lames Report to follow it, and undoes Description to do it.

2 Gent. What pray you, became of Antigonus, that carry'd hence the Child?

3 Gent. Like an old Tale still, which will have Matters to rehearse, tho' Credit be asleep, and not an Ear open; he was torn to pieces with a Bear; this avouches the Shepherd's Son, who has not only his Innocence, which seems much, to justify him, but a Handkerchief and Rings of his, that Paulina knows.

1 Gent. What became of his Bark, and his Followers?

3 Gent. Wrackt the same Instant of their Master's Death, and in the View of the Shepherd; so that all the Instruments which aided to expose the Child, were even then lost, when it was found. But oh the noble Combat, that 'twixt Joy and Sorrow was fought in Paulina. She had one Eye declin'd for the Loss of her Husband, another elevated that the Oracle was fulfil'd. She lifted the Princess from the Earth, and so locks her in embracing, as if she would pin her to her Heart, that she might no more be in danger of losing.

1 Gent. The Dignity of this Act was worth the Audience of Kings and Princes, for by such was it acted.
3 Gent. One of the prettieft Touches of all, and that
which angled for mine Eyes, caught the Water, though
not the Fift, was, when at the Relation of the Queen’s
Death, with the manner how she came to it, bravely con-
fefs’d, and lamented by the King, how Attentiveness
wounded his Daughter, till, from one Sign of Dofolour to
another, she did, with an Alas, I would fain fay, bleed
Tears; for I am fure, my Heart wept Blood. Who was
most marble there, changed Colour; fome wounded, all
forrowed; if all the World could have feen’t, the Woe had
been univerfal.

1 Gent. Are they returned to the Court?

3 Gent. No. The Prince’s hearing of her Mother’s Sta-
tue, which is in the keeping of Paulina, a Piece many
Years in doing; and now newly perform’d by that rare I-
talian Master, Julio Romano, who, had he himself Eter-
finity, and could put breath into his Work, would beguile
Nature of her Custom, fo perfectly he is her Ape. He fo
near to Hermione, hath done Hermione, that they fay one
would speak to her, and fand in hope of Anſwer. Thir-
ther, with all greediness of Affection, are they gone, and
there they intend to fup.

2 Gent. I thought she had some great Matter there in
Hand, for she hath privately twice or thrice a Day, ever
fince the Death of Hermione, visited that removed Houfe.
Shall we thither, and with our Company piece the Rejoy-
cing?

1 Gent. Who would be thence, that has the benefit of
access? Every winkle of an Eye, fome new Grace will be
born: Our abfence makes us unthrifty to our Knowledge.
Let’s along. [Exeunt.

Ant. Now, had not I the daff of my former Life in
me, would Performent drop on my Head. I brought
the old Man and his Son aboard the Prince; told him. I
heard them talk of a Farthel, and I know not what; but
he at that time, over-fond of the Shepherd’s Daughter
(fo he then took her to be) who began to be much
Sea-fick, and himself little better, extremity of Weather
continuing, this Mystery remained undiscover’d. But
’tis all one to me; for had I been the finder out of this
Secret,
Secret, it would not have relish’d among my other Dif-

credits

Enter Shepherd and Clown.

Here come those I have done good to against my Will,
and already appearing in the Blossoms of their Fortune.

Shep. Come Boy, I am past more Children; but thy
Sons and Daughters will be all Gentlemen born.

Clo. You are well met, Sir; you denied to fight with me
this other day, because I was no Gentleman born; See you
these Cloaths? say you see them not, and think me still no
Gentleman born. You were best say these Robes are not
Gentlemen born. Give me the Lie; do, and try whether
I am not now a Gentleman born.

Aut. I know you are now, Sir, a Gentleman born.

Clo. Ay, and have been so any time these four Hours.

Shep. And so have I, Boy.

Clo. So you have; but I was a Gentleman born before
my Father: for the King’s Son took me by the Hand, and
call’d me Brother; and then the two Kings call’d my Fa-
ther, Brother; and then the Prince my Brother, and the
Princes my Sister called my Father, Father, and so we
wept; and there was the first Gentleman-like Tears that
ever we shed.

Shep. We may live, Son, to shed many more.

Clo. Ay, or else ’twere hard Luck, being in so prepo-

terous Estate as we are.

Aut. I humbly beseech you, Sir, to pardon me all the
Faults! have committed to your Worship, and to give me
your good Report to the Prince, my Mather.

Shep. ’Prithee Son do; for we must be gentle, now we
are Gentlemen.

Clo. Thou wilt amend thy Life?

Aut. Ay, and it like your good Worship.

Clo. Give me thy Hand; I will swear to the Prince,
that you are as honest a true Fellow as any is in Bohemia.

Shep. You may say it, but not swear it.

Clo. Not swear it, now I am a Gentleman? Let Boors
and Franklin say it, I’ll swear it.

Shep. How if it be false, Son?

Clo,
Clo. If it be ne'er so false, a true Gentleman may swear it in the behalf of his Friend: And I'll swear to the Prince, thou art a tall Fellow of thy Hands, and that thou wilt not be drunk; but I know thou art no tall Fellow of thy Hands and that thou wilt be drunk; but I'll swear it, and I would thou wouldst be a tall Fellow of thy Hands.

Ant. I will prove so, Sir, to my Power.

Clo. Ay, by any means prove a tall Fellow; if I do not wonder how thou dar'st venture to be drunk, not being a tall Fellow, trust me not. Hark, the Kings and the Princes, our Kindred, are going to see the Queen's Picture. Come follow us: We'll be thy good Master. [Exeunt.

SCENE III.

Enter Leontes, Polixenes, Florizel, Perdita, Camillo, Paulina; Lords and Attendants.

Leo. O grave and good Paulina, the great Comfort That I have had of thee!

Paul. What, Sovereign Sir,
I did not well, I meant well; all my Services
You have paid home. But that you have vouchsaf'd
With your crown'd Brother, and these your contracted
Heirs of your Kingdoms, my poor House to visit,
It is a Surplus of your Grace, which never
My Life may last to answer.

Leo. O Paulina,
We honour you with trouble; but we came
To see the Statue of our Queen. Your Gallery
Have we pass'd through, not without much content;
In many Singularities; but we saw not
That which my Daughter came to look upon,
The Statue of her Mother.

Paul. As she liv'd Peerless,
So her dead likeness I do well believe
Excels what ever yet you look'd upon,
Or Hand of Man hath done; therefore I keep it
Lovely, apart. But here it is; prepare
To see the Life as lively mock'd, as ever
Still Sleep mock'd Death; behold, and say 'tis well.

[Paulina draws a Curtain, and discovers Hermione standing like a Statue:]

I like your Silence, it the more shews off
Your wonder; but yet speak, first you, my Liege,
Comes it not something near?

Leo. Her natural Posture.

Chide me, dear Stone, that I may say indeed
Thou art Hermione; or rather, thou art she,
In thy not chiding; for she was as tender
As Infancy, and Grace. But yet, Paulina,
Hermione was not so much wrinkled, nothing
So aged as this seems.

Pol. Oh, not by much.

Pau. So much the more our Carvers' excellence;
Which lets go by some sixteen Years, and makes her
As she liv'd now.

Leo. As now she might have done,
So much to my good Comfort, as it is
Now piercing to my Soul. Oh, thus the flood;
Even with such Life of Majesty, warm Life,
As now it coldly stands, when first I woo'd her.
I am ashamed; do's not the Stone rebuke me,
For being more Stone than it? Oh Royal Piece;
There's Magick in thy Majesty, which has
My Evils conjur'd to remembrance; and
From thy admiring Daughter took the Spirits,
Standing like Stone with thee,

Per. And give me leave,
And do not say 'tis Superstition, that
I kneel, and then implore her Blessing. Lady,
Dear Queen, that ended when I but began,
Give me that Hand of yours to kiss

Pau. O, Patience;
The Statue is but newly fix'd; the Colour's
Not dry.

Cam. My Lord, your Sorrow was too sore laid on;
Which sixteen Winters cannot blow away,
So many Summers dry, scarce any Joy,
Did ever so long live; no Sorrow,
But kill'd it self much sooner.

Pol. Dear, my Brother,
Let him that was the Cause of this, have power
To take off so much Grief from you, as he
Will piece up in himself.

Pau. Indeed, my Lord,
If I had thought the Sight of my poor Image
Would thus have wrought you, for the Stone is mine;
I'd not have shew'd you it.

Leo. Do not draw the Curtain.

Pau. No longer shall you gaze on't, left your Fancy
May think anon, it moves,

Leo. Let be, let be;
Would I were dead, but that methinks already—
What was he that did make it? See, my Lord,
Would you not deem it breath'd; And that those Veins
Did verily bear Blood?

Pol. Masterly done.
The very Life seems warm upon her Lip.

Leo. The fixture of her Eye has motion in't;
As we were mock'd with Art.

Pau. I'll draw the Curtain.
My Lord's almost so far transported, that
He'll think anon it lives.

Leo. Oh sweet Paulina,
Make me to think so twenty Years together;
No settled Senses of the World can match
The Pleasure of that madness. Let't alone.

Pau. I am sorry, Sir, I have thus far stirr'd you; but
I could afflict you further.

Leo. Do Paulina;
For this Affliction has a Taste as sweet
As any cordial Comfort. Still methinks
There is an Air comes from her. What fine Chizzel
Could ever yet cut Breath? Let no Man mock me,
For I will kifs her.

Pau. Good my Lord forbear;
The ruddiness upon her Lip is wet;
You'll marr it, if you kifs it; stain your own
With oily Painting; shall I draw the Curtain!

Leo.
Leo. No, not these twenty Years.
Per. So long could I
Stand by, a Looker on.
Pas. Either forbear,
Quit presently the Chappel, or resolve you
For more amazement; if you can behold it,
I'll make the Statue move indeed; descend,
And take you by the Hand; but then you'll think;
Which I protest against, I am assist'd
By wicked Powers.
Leo. What you can make her do,
I am content to look on; what to speak,
I am content to hear; for 'tis as easie
To make her speak. as move.
Pas. It is requir'd
You do awake your Faith, then all stand still.
O n; those that think it is unlawful Busines;
I am about, let them depart.
Leo. Proceed;
No Foot shall stir.
Pas. Musick; awake her: Strike, [Musick
'Tis time, descend; be Stone no more; approach,
Strike all that look upon with Marvel. Come,
I'll fill your Grave up: stir, nay come away:
Bequeath to Death your Numbness; for from him
Dear Life redeems you; you perceive she stirrs,
[Hermione comes down:
Start not, her Actions shall be holy, as
You hear my Spell is lawful; do not shun her,
Until you see her die again, for then
You kill her double. Nay, present your Hand;
When she was young, you woo'd her; now in Age,
Is she become the Suit or.
Leo. Oh she's warm, [Embracing her.
If this be Magick, let it be an Art
Lawful as Eating.
Pol. She embraces him.
Cam. She hangs about his Neck,
If she pertain to Life, let her speak too.
Pol. Ay, and make it manifest where she has liv'd,
Or how flo't'n from the dead?

Pau. That she is living,
Were it but told you, should be hooted at
Like an old Tale; but it appears she lives,
Tho' yet she speak not. Mark a little while.
Please you to interpo[e, fair Madam, kneel,
And pray your Mother's Blessing; turn good Lady;
Our Perdita is found. [Presenting Perdita, who kneels to Herm.

Her. You Gods look down,
And from your sacred Viols pour your Graces
Upon my Daughter's Head; tell me, mine own,
Where haft thou been preserv'd? Where liv'd? How found
Thy Father's Court? For thou shalt hear that I,
Knowing by Paulina, that the Oracle
Gave hope thou waft in being, have preserv'd
My self, to see the Issue.

Pau. There's Time enough for that;
Left they desire, upon this puth, to trouble
Your Joys with like Relation. Go together
You precious Winners all, your Exultation
Partake to every one; I, an old Turtle,
Will wing me to some wither'd Bough, and there
My Mate, that's never to be found again,
Lament 'till I am loft.

Leo. O Peace, Paulina:
Thou shouldst a Husband take by my Consent,
As I by thine a Wife. This is a Match,
And made between's by Vows. Thou haft found mine,
But how, is to be question'd; for I saw her,
As I thought, dead; and have, in vain, said many
A Prayer upon her Grave. I'll not seek far
(For him, I partly know his Mind) to find thee
An honourable Husband. Come, Camillo,
And take her by the Hand; whose Worth and Honesty
Is richly noted; and here justified
By us, a pair of Kings. Let's from this place.
What? Look upon my Brother: Both your Pardons,
That e'er I put between your holy Looks

My
My ill Suspicion: This your Son-in-law,
And Son unto the King, whom Heav'n's directing;
Is troth-plight to your Daughter. Good Paulina,
Lead us from hence, where we may leisurely
Each one demand, and answer to his part
Perform'd in this wide gap of Time, since first
We were disfeder'd. Hastily lead away. [Exeunt omnes]
THE
LIFE
AND
DEATH
OF
King JOHN.

Printed in the Year MDCCXIV.
Dramatis Personae.

King John:
Prince Henry, Son to the King.
Arthur, Duke of Bretagne, and Nephew to the King.
Pembroke,
Essex,
Salisbury, English Lords.
Hubert,
Bigot,
Faulconbridge, Bastard-Son to Richard the First.
Robert Faulconbridge, suppos'd Brother to the Bastard.
James Gurney, Servant to the Lady Faulconbridge.
Peter of Pomfret, a Prophet.

Philip, King of France.
Lewis, the Dauphin.
Arch-Duke of Austria.
Pandulpho, the Pope's Legate.
Melun, a French Lord.
Chattilion, Ambassador from France to King John.

Elinor, Queen-Mother of England.
Constance, Mother to Arthur.
Blanch, Daughter to Alphonso King of Castile, and Niece to King John.
Lady Faulconbridge, Mother to the Bastard and Robert Faulconbridge.

Citizens of Angiers, Heralds, Executioners, Messengers, Soldiers, and other Attendants.

The SCENE sometimes in England, and sometimes in France.
THE
LIFE and DEATH
OF
King JOHN.

ACT I. SCENE I.

Enter King John, Queen Elinor, Pembroke, Essex, and Salisbury, with Chattilion.

King JOHN.

OW say, Chattilion, what would France with us?
Chat. Thus, after greeting, speaks the King of France
In my Behaviour to the Majesty,
The borrow'd Majesty of England here.

Eli. A strange Beginning; borrow'd Majesty!
K. John. Silence, good Mother, hear the Embassie.
Chat. Philip of France, in right and true behalf
Of thy deceased Brother Geoffrey's Son.
Arthur Plantagenet, lays most lawful Claim

To
To this fair Island, and the Territories:
To Ireland, Poitiers, Anjou, Touraine, Maine,
Desiring thee to lay aside the Sword
Which Iways usurping these several Titles,
Aad put the same into young Author's Hand,
Thy Nephew, and right Royal Soveraign.

K. John. What follows, if we difallow of this?
Chat. The proud Control of fierce and bloody War,
To enforce these Rights so forcibly with-held.

K. John. Here have we War for War, and Blood for Blood;
Controlment for Controlment; so answer France.
Chat. Then take my King's Defiance from my Mouth,
The farthest limit of my Embassie.

K. John. Bear mine to him, and so depart in Peace,
Be thou as Lightning in the Eyes of France;
For ere thou canst report, I will be there,
The Thunder of my Cannon shall be heard.
So hence; be thou the Trumpet of our Wrath,
And full the Prefage of your own Decay:
An honourable Conduct let him have,
Pembroke look to't; farewell Chattisdon.

[Ex. Chat. and Pembroke]

Eli. What now, my Son, have I not ever said
How that Ambitious Conscience would not cease
Till she had kindled France and all the World,
Upon the Right and Party of her Son?
This might have been prevented, and made whole
With very easie Arguments of Love,
Which now the Manage of two Kingdoms must
With fearful bloody Issue arbitrate.

K. John. Our strong Possession and our Right for us;
Eli. Your strong Possession much more than your Right;
Or else it must go wrong with you and me,
So much my Conscience whispers in your Ear,
Which none but Heav'n, and you and I shall hear.

Essex. My Liege, here is the strangest Controversie
Come from the Country to be judg'd by you
That e'er I heard, shall I produce the Men?

K. John. Let them approach.
Our Abbies and our Priories shall pay

This
This Expedition's Charge. What Men are you?

Enter Robert Faulconbridge and the Bastard.

Bast. Your faithful Subject, I, a Gentleman,
Born in Northamptonshire, and eldest Son,
As I suppose, to Faulconbridge,
A Soldier, by the Honour-giving hand
Of Cordelion, Knighted in the Field.

K. John. What art thou?

Bert. The Son and Heir to that same Faulconbridge.

K. John. Is that the Elder, and art thou the Heir?
You came not of one Mother, then it seems?

Bast. Most certain of one Mother, mighty King,
That is well known, and, as I think, one Father:
But for the certain Knowledge of that Truth,
I put you o'er to Heav'n, and to my Mother;
O' that I doubt, as all Mens Children may.

Eli. Out on thee, rude Man, thou dost shame thy Mother;
And wound her Honour with this diffidence.

Bast. I, Madam? No, I have no Reason for it;
That is my Brother's Plea, and none of mine,
The which if he can prove, a pops me out,
At least from fair five hundred pound a Year:
Heav'n guard my Mother's Honour, and my Land,

K. John. A good blunt Fellow: Why being younger Born
Doth he lay claim to thine Inheritance?

Bast. I know not why, except to get the Land;
But once he slander'd me with Bastardy:
But whether I be as true begot or no,
That still I lay upon my Mother's Head,
But that I am as well begot, my Liege,
(Fair fall the Bones that took the Pains for me)
Compare our Faces, and be judge your Self.
If old Sir Robert did beget us both,
And were our Father, and this Son like him:
O old Sir Robert Father, on my Knee
I give Heav'n thanks I was not like to thee.

K. John. Why what a mad-cap hath Heav'n lent us here?

Eli. He hath a Trick of Cordelion's Face,
The accent of his Tongue affects him:
Do you not read some Verses of my Son

Vol. III. H
In the large Composition of this Man?

K. John. Mine Eye hath well examined his Parts,
And finds them perfect Richard: Sirrah, speak,
What doth move you to claim your Brother's Land?

Baf. Because he hath a half-face, like my Father,
With half that Face would he have all my Land,
A half-fac'd Great, five hundred Pound a Year?

Rob. My gracious Liege, when that my Father liv'd,
Your Brother did employ my Father much——

Baf. Well, Sir, by this you cannot get my Land,
Your Tale must be how he employ'd my Mother.

Rob. And once dispatch'd him in an Embassie
To Germany, there with the Emperor
To treat of high Affairs touching that time:
The Advantage of his Absence took the King,
And in the mean time sojourn'd at my Father's;
Where, how he did prevail, I shame to speak:
But truth is truth, large lengths of Seas and Shores
Between my Father and my Mother lay,
As I have heard my Father speak himself,
When this same lively Gentleman was got.
Upon his Death-bed he by Will bequeath'd
His Lands to me, and took it on his Death
That this my Mother's Son was none of his;
And if he were, he came into the World
Full fourteen Weeks before the Course of time:
Then good my Liege, let me have what is mine,
My Father's Land, as was my Father's Will.

K. John. Sirrah, your Brother is Legitima'te,
Your Father's Wife did after Wedlock bear him:
And if she did play false, the Fault was hers,
Which Fault lyes on the Hazards of all Husbands
That marry Wives. Tell me, how if my Brother,
Who, as you say, took pains to get this Son,
Had of your Father claim'd this Son for his,
In toth. good Friend, your Father might have kept
This Calf, bred from his Cow, from all the World:
In toth. he might; then if he were my Brother's,
My Brother might not claim him; nor your Father,
Bring none of his, refuse him; this concludes,
of King John. 171

My Mother's Son did get your Father's Heir,
Your Father's Heir must have your Father's Land.

Rob. Shall then my Father's Will be of no force
To dispossess that Child which is not his?

Bast. Of no more force to dispossess me, Sir,
Than was his Will to get me, as I think.

Eliz. Whether hadst thou rather be a Faulconbridge,
And, like thy Brother, to enjoy thy Land:
Or the reputed Son of Cordelion,
Lord of thy Presence, and no Land beside?

Bast. Madam, and if my Brother had my Shape,
And I had his, Sir Robert's his, like him,
And if my Legs were two such riding Rods,
My Arms such Eel-skins stuf't, my Face so thin,
That in mine Ear I durst not stick a Rosc,
Left Men should say, look where three Farthings goes,
And to his Shape were Heir to all this Land,
Would I might never stir from off this Place,
I would give it every Foot to have this Face:
I would not be Sir Nobbe in any case.

Eliz. I like thee well; wilt thou forsake thy Fortune,
Bequeath thy Land to him, and follow me?
I am a Soldier, and now bound to France.

Bast. Brother, take you my Land, I'll take my Chance;
Your Face hath got five hundred Pound a Year,
Yet sell your Face for five Pence, and 'tis dear.

Madam. I'll follow you unto the Death.

Eliz. Nay, I would have you go before me thither.

Bast. Our Country manners give our Betters way.

K. John. What is thy Name?

Bast. Philip, my Liege, so is my Name begun,
Philip, good old Sir Robert's Wife's eldest Son.

K. John. From henceforth bear his Name
Whole Form thou bearest:
Kneel thou down Philip, but rise more great,
Arise Sir Richard and Plantagenet.

Bast. Brother by th'Mother's side, give me your Hand,
My Father gave me Honour, yours gave Land.
Now blessed be the Hour, by Night or Day,
When I was got, Sir Robert was away.

H 2  Eliz.
Eli. The very Spirit of Plantagenet:
I am thy Grandam, Richard, call me so.
Bast. Madam, by chance, but not by truth, what tho';
Something about a little from the right,
In at the Window, or else o'er the Hatch:
Who dares not stir by Day, must walk by Night,
And have is have, however Men do catch;
Near or far off, well won is still well shot;
And I am I, howe'er I was begot.

K. John. Go, Faulconbridge, now hast thou thy desire;
A Landless Knight makes thee a Landed Squire:
Come Madam, and come Richard, we must speed
For France, for France, for it is more than need.

Bast. Brother, adieu, good Fortune come to thee,
For thou wast got i' th' way of Honesty. [Ex. all but Bast.
A Foot of Honour better than I was,
But many a many Foot of Land the worse.
Well, now can I make any Joan a Lady;
Good-den, Sir Richard, Godamercy Fellow,
And if his Name be George, I'll call him Peter;
For new made Honour doth forget Mens Names:
'Tis too respective and too sociable
For your Conversion, now your Traveller,
He and his Tooth-pick, at my Worship's Mefs,
And when my Knightly Stomach is suffic'd,
Why then I luck my Teeth, and Catechize
My picked Man of Countrys; My Dear Sir,
Thus leaning on mine Elbow I begin,
I shall beseech you; that is Question now,
And then comes Answer like an Ablsey-Book:
O Sir, says Answer, at your best Command,
At your Employment, at your Service, Sir:
No, Sir, says Question, I, sweet Sir, at yours,
And so e'er Answer knows what Question would,
Saving in Dialogue of Compliment,
And talking of the Alps and Apennines,
The Pyrenean and the River Po,
It draws towards Supper in conclusion so.
But this is worshipful Society,
And fits the mounting Spirit like my Self:
For he is but a Bastard to the time
That doth not smok of Observation,
And so am I whether I smack or no;
And not alone in Habit and Device,
Exterior Form, outward Accoutrement;
But from the inward Motion to deliver
Sweet, sweet, sweet Poison for the Ages Tooth,
Which though I will not practise to deceive,
Yet, to avoid deceit, I mean to learn;
For it shall strew the Footsteps of my Rising:
But who comes in such haste in ridingRobes?
What Woman-post is this? Hath she no Husband
That will take Pains to blow a Horn before her?
O me, 'tis my Mother; how now, good Lady?
What brings you here to Court so hastily?

Enter Lady Faulconbridge and James Gurney.

Lady. Where is that Slave, thy Brother? Where is he?
That holds in chase mine Honour up and down.

Bast. My Brother Robert, old Sir Robert's Son,
Colbrand the Giant, that fame mighty Man,
Is it Sir Robert's Son that you seek so?

Lady. Sir Robert's Son? ay, thou unreverend Boy,
Sir Robert's Son, why scornest thou at Sir Robert?
He is Sir Robert's Son! and so art thou.

Bast. James Gurney, wilt thou give us leave a while?

Gur. Good leave, good Philip.

Bast. Philip, Sparrow; James.

There's Toys abroad, anon I'll tell thee more.[Exit James.

Madam, I was not old Sir Robert's Son.
Sir Robert might have eat his Part in me
Upon Good Friday, and ne'er broke his Fast:
Sir Robert could do well, marry, to confes!
Could get me! Sir Robert could not do it;
We know his Handy-work, therefore good Mother
To whom am I beholding for these Limbs?
Sir Robert never holp to make this Leg.

Lady. Haft thou conspir'd with thy Brother too,
That for thine own Gain should it defend mine Honour?
What means this Scorn, thou most untoward Knave?

H 3

Bast.
What, I am dub’d, I have it on my Shoulder:
But Mother, I am not Sir Robert’s Son,
I have disclaim’d Sir Robert and my Land,
Legitimation, Name, and all is gone;
Then, good my Mother, let me know my Father;
Some proper Man, I hope; who was it, Mother?
Lady. Hast thou deny’d thy self a Faulconbridge?
Bass. As faithfully as I deny the Devil.
Lady. King Richard Cordelion was thy Father;
By long and vehement Suit I was seduc’d
To make Room for him in my Husband’s Bed.
Heav’n lay not my Transgression to my charge;
Thou art the Illuc of my dear Offence,
Which was so strongly urg’d past my Defence.
Bass. Now, by this Light, were I to get again,
Madam, I would not with a better Father.
Some Sins do bear their Privilege on Earth,
And so doth yours; your Fault was not your Folly;
Needs must you lay your Heart at his Dispose,
Subjected Tribute to commanding Love,
Against whose Fury and unmatched Force,
The awless Lion could not wage the Fight;
Nor keep his princely Heart from Richard’s Hands.
He that per Force robs Lions of their Hearts,
May easily win a Woman’s; ay, my Mother,
With all my Heart I thank thee for my Father:
Who lives and dares but say, thou didst not well
When I was got, I’ll send his Soul to Hell.
Come, Lady, I will shew thee to my Kin,
And they shall say, when Richard me begot;
If thou hadst said him nay, it had been Sin;
Who says it was, he lyes; I say, ’twas not. [Exeunt.
ACT II. SCENE I.

SCENE, before the Walls of Angiers.

Enter Philip King of France, Lewis the Dauphin, the Arch-Duke of Austria, Constance, and Arthur.

Lewis. Before Angiers, well met brave Austria.

Arthur, that great Fore-runner of thy Blood
Richard, that robb'd the Lion of his Heart,
And fought the holy Wars in Palestine,
By this brave Duke came early to his Grave;
And for amends to his Posterity,
At our Importance hither is he come,
To spread his Colours, Boy, in thy behalf;
And to rebuke the Usurpation
Of thy unnatural Uncle, English John.
Embrace him, love him, give him welcome hither.

Arthur. God shall forgive you Cordelion's Death
The rather, that you give his Offspring Life,
Shadowing their Right under your Wings of War;
I give you welcome with a powerless Hand,
But with a Heart full of unstained Love,
Welcome before the Gates of Angiers, Duke.

Lewis. A noble Boy! who would not do thee right?

Austria. Upon thy Cheek lay I this zealous Kifs,
As Seal to this Indenture of my Love;
That to my home I will no more return,
'Till Angiers, and the Right thou haft in France;
Together with that pale, that white-fac'd Shore,
Whose Foot spurns back the Ocean's roaring Tides;
And coops from other Lands her Islanders,
Even 'till that England, hcdg'd in with the Main,
That water-walled Bulwark, still secure
And confident from foreign Purposes,
Even 'till that outmost Corner of the West
Salute thee for her King; 'till then, fair Boy,
Will I not think of home, but follow Arms.
What, I am dub’d, I have it on my Shoulder:
But Mother, I am not Sir Robert’s Son,
I have disclaim’d Sir Robert and my Land,
Legitimation, Name, and all is gone;
Then, good my Mother, let me know my Father;
Some proper Man, I hope; who was it, Mother?
Lady. Hast thou deny’d thy self a Faulconbridge?
Baff. As faithfully as I deny the Devil.
Lady. King Richard Cordelion was thy Father;
By long and vehement Suit I was seduc’d
To make Room for him in my Husband’s Bed.
Heav’n lay not my Transgression to my charge;
Thou art the Issue of my dear Offence,
Which was so strongly urg’d past my Defence.
Baff. Now, by this Light, were I to get again,
Madam, I would not wish a better Father.
Some Sins do bear their Privilege on Earth,
And so doth yours; your Fault was not your Folly;
Needs must you lay your Heart at his Dispose,
Subjected Tribute to commanding Love,
Against whose Fury and unmatched Force,
The awles Lion could not wage the Fight;
Nor keep his princely Heart from Richard’s Hands.
He that per Force robs Lions of their Hearts,
May easily win a Woman’s; ay, my Mother,
With all my Heart I thank thee for my Father:
Who lives and dares but say, thou didst not well
When I was got, I’ll send his Soul to Hell.
Come, Lady, I will shew thee to my Kin,
And they shall say, when Richard me begot.
If thou hadst said him nay, it had been Sin;
Who says it was, he lyes; I say, ’twas not. [Exeunt.

ACT
Of King John.

ACT II. SCENE I.

SCENE, before the Walls of Angiers.

Enter Philip King of France, Lewis the Dauphin, the
Arch-Duke of Austria, Constance, and Arthur.

Lew. Before Angiers, well met brave Austria.

Arthur, that great Fore-runner of thy Blood
Richard, that robb'd the Lion of his Heart,
And fought the holy Wars in Palæstine,
By this brave Duke came early to his Grave;
And for amends to his Posterity,
At our Importance hither is he come,
To spread his Colours, Boy, in thy behalf;
And to rebuke the Usurpation
Of thy unnatural Uncle, English John.
Embrace him, love him, give him welcome hither.

Arth. God shall forgive you Cordelion's Death
The rather, that you give his Offspring Life,
Shadowing their Right under your Wings of War;
I give you welcome with a powerless Hand,
But with a Heart full of unstained Love,
Welcome before the Gates of Angiers, Duke.

Lewis. A noble Boy! who would not do thee right?

Auft. Upon thy Cheek lay I this zealous Kiss,
As Seal to this Indenture of my Love;
That to my home I will no more return,
'Till Angiers, and the Right thou hast in France;
Together with that pale, that white-faced Shore,
Whose Foot spurns back the Ocean's roaring Tides;
And coops from other Lands her Islanders,
Even 'till that England, hidg'd in with the Main,
That water-walled Bulwark, still secure
And confident from foreign Purposes,
Even 'till that outmost Corner of the West
Salute thee for her King; 'till then, fair Boy,
Will I not think of home, but follow Arms.
Confi. O take his Mother's Thanks, a Widow's Thanks;
'Till your strong Hand shall help to give him Strength,
To make a more Requital to your Love.

Anfr. The Peace of Heav'n is theirs, who lift their Swords
In such a just and charitable War.

K. Philip. Well then, to work, our Cannon shall be bent
Against the Brows of this refitting Town;
Call for our chiefest Men of Discipline,
To call the Plots of best Advantages.
We'll lay before this Town our Royal Bones,
Wade to the Market-Place in Frenchmen's Blood,
But we will make it subject to this Boy.

Confi. Stay for an Answer to your Embassie,
Left unadvis'd you stain your Swords with Blood.
My Lord Chattillon may from England bring
That Right in Peace which here we urge in War,
And then we shall repent each Drop of Blood,
That hot rash Haste so indirectly shed.

Enter Chattillon.

K. Philip. A Wonder, Lady! lo! upon thy With
Our Messenger Chattillon, is arriv'd;
What England says, say briefly, gentle Lord,
We coldly pause for thee. Chattillon speak.

Chat. Then turn your Forces from this paltry Siege;
And stir them up against a mightier Task.
England, impatient of your just Demands,
Hath put himself in Arms, the adverse Winds,
Whose Leisure I have staid, have given him time
To Land his Legions all as soon as I.
His Marches are expedient to this Town,
His Forces strong, his Soldiers confident.
With him along is come the Mother-Queen;
An Ate stirring him to Blood and Strife,
With her her Neice, the Lady Blanch of Spain;
With them a Bafard of the King deceas'd,
And all th' unsettled Humours of the Land;
Rash, inconsiderate, fiery Voluntaries,
With Ladies Faces, and fierce Dragons Spleens,
Have sold their Fortunes at their native Homes,
Bearing their Birthright proudly on their Backs,
To make a Hazard of new Fortunes here;
In brief, a braver Choice of dauntles Spirits
Than now the English Bottoms have waft o'er;
Did never float upon the swelling Tide,
To do offence and scathe in Christendom.
The Interruption of their churlish Drums
Cuts off more Circumstance; they are at hand,

[Drums beat.

To parly or to fight, therefore prepare.

K. Philip. How much unlock'd for is this Expedition!

Ans. By how much unexpected, by so much

We must awake, endeavour for Defence,
For Courage mounteth with Occasion:
Let them be welcome then, we are prepare'd.

Enter King of England, Bastard, Elinor, Blanch, Pembroke and others.

K. John. Peace be to France, if France in Peace permit
Our just and lineal Entrance to our own;
If not, bleed France, and Peace ascend to Heav'n.
Whilst we, God's wrathful Agent, do correct
Their proud Contempt that beats his Peace to Heav'n.

K. Philip. Peace be to England, if that War return.

From France to England, there to live in Peace.
England we love, and for that England's sake
With burthen of our Armour here we sweat;
This Toil of ours should be a Work of thine;
But thou from loving England art so far,
That thou haft under-wrought its lawful King,
Cut off the Sequence of Potterity, Out-faced Infant State, and done a Rape
Upon the Maiden-virtue of the Crown.
Look here upon thy Brother Geoffrey's Face;
These Eyes, these Brows, were moulded out of his;
This little Abstract doth contain that large
Which dy'd in Geoffrey; and the Hand of Time
Shall draw this Brief into as large a Volume.
That Geoffrey was thy elder Brother born,
And this his Son, England was Geoffrey's Right,
And this is Geoffrey's; in the Name of God,
How comes it then that thou art call'd a King;

H 5

When
The Life and Death

When living Blood doth in these Temples beat,
Which owe the Crown that thou o'er-mastereft?

K. John. From whom hast thou this great Commission
To draw my Answer from thy Articles? [Thoughts
K. Phil. From that supernal Judge that stirs good
In any Breast of strong Authority,
To look into the Blots and Stains of Right,
That Judge hath made me Guardian to this Boy,
Under whose Warrant I impeach thy Wrong,
And by whose Help I mean to chastise it.

K. John. Alack, thou dost usurp Authority.
K. Philip. Excuse it, 'tis to beat usurping down.
Eli. Who is't that thou dost call Usurper, France?
Conf. Let me make Answer: Thy usurping Son.
Eli. Out Infolent, thy Baffard shall be King,
That thou may'st be a Queen, and check the World!

Conf. My Bed was ever to thy Son as true,
As thine was to thy Husband, and this Boy,
Liker in Feature to his Father Geoffrey,
Than thou and John, in Manners being as like
As Rain to Water, or Devil to his Dam.
My Boy a Baffard! By my Soul I think
His Father never was so true begot;
It cannot be, and if thou wert his Mother.

Eli. There's a good Mother, Boy, that blots thy Father?
Conf. There's a good Grandam, Boy,
That would blot thee.

Aug. Peace.

Bass. Hear the Crier.

Aug. What the Devil art thou?

Bass. One that will play the Devil, Sir, with you,
And a may catch your Hide and you alone.
You are the Hare, of whom the Proverb goes,
Whofe Valour plucks dead Lions by the Beard,
I'll smock your Skin-Coat, and I catch you right;
Sirrah, look to't, I'faith I will, I'faith.

Blanche. O well did he become that Lion's Robe,
That did disrobe the Lion of that Robe.

Bass. It lyes as lightly on the Back of him,
As great Alcides Shoes upon an As.
of King John.

But, As, I'll take that Burthen from your Back,
Or lay on that shal make your Shoulders crack,

_Aus._ What Cracker is this same that deafs our Ears
With this abundance of superfluous Breath?

King Lewis, determine what we shall do streight.

_Levi._ Women and Fools break off your Conference:
King _John_, this is the very Sum of all;
England, and Ireland, Angiers, Touraine, Main,
In right of _Arthur_ do I claim of thee:
Wilt thou resign them, and lay down thy Arms?

_K. John._ My Life as soon. I do desie thee, _France._
_Arthur_ of _Britain_, yield thee to my Hand,
And out of my dear _Love_ I'll give thee more,
Than e'er the Coward-Hand of _France_ can win;
Submit thee, Boy.

_Eli._ Come to thy Grandam, Child.

_Conf._ Do, Child, go to it Grandam, Child,
Give Grandam Kingdom, and it Grandam will
Give it a Plum, a Cherry and a Fig,
There's a good Grandam:

_Arth._ Good my Mother, Peace,

I would that I were low laid in my Grave,
I am not worth this Coil that's made for me;

_Eli._ His Mother shames him so, poor Boy he weeps.

_Conf._ Now shame upon you where she does or no.
His Grandam's Wrong, and not his Mother's Shames,
Draws those Heav'n-moving Pearls from his poor Eyes,
Which Heav'n shall take in nature of a Fee;
Ay, with these fad Chrysal Beads Heav'n shall be brib'd
To do him Justice, and Revenge on you.

_Eli._ Thou mons'trous Slanderer of Heav'n and Earth.

_Conf._ Thou mons'trous Injurer of Heav'n and Earth,
Call me not Slanderer; thou and thine usurp
The Domination, Royalties and Rights
Of this oppressed Boy; this is thy eldest Son's Son,
Infortunate in nothing but in thee:
Thy Sins are visited in this poor Child,
The Cannon of the Law is laid on him,
Being but the second Generation
Removed from thy sin-conceiving Womb.

_K. John._
K. John. Bedlam have done.
Conf. I have but this to say,
That he is not only plagued for her Sin,
But God hath made her Sin and her, the Plague
On this removed Issue, plagu'd for her,
And with her Plague her Sin; his Injury
Her Injury, the Beadle to her Sin,
All punish'd in the Person of this Child,
And all for her; a Plague upon her.

Eli. Thou unadvised Scold, I can produce
A Will that bars the Title of thy Son.
Conf. Ay, who doubts that? a Will; a wicked Will;
A Woman's Will; a canker'd Grandam's Will.

K. Philip. Peace Lady, pause, or be more temperate;
It ill becometh this Presence to cry Amen
To these ill tuned Repetitions.
Some Trumpet summon hither to the Walls
These Men of Angiers; let us hear them speak,
Whose Title they admit, Arthur's or John's.

[Trumpet sounds; Enter a Citizen upon the Walls.

Cit. Who is it that hath warn'd us to the Walls?
K. Philip. 'Tis France for England.
K. John. England for it self,
You Men of Angiers, and my loving Subjects.—
K. Phil. You loving Men of Angiers, Arthur's Subjects;
Our Trumpet call'd you to this gentle Parle——
K. John. For our Advantage; therefore hear us first:
These Flags of France, that are advanced here
Before the Eye and Prospect of your Town,
Have hither march'd to your Endamagement.
The Cannons have their Bowels full of Wrath;
And ready mounted are they to spit forth
Their Iron Indignation against your Walls:
All Preparation for a bloody Siege,
And merciless Proceeding, by these French,
Confront your City's Eyes, your winking Gates;
And but for our Approach, those sleeping Stones,
That as a Waste do girdle you about,
By the Compulsion of their Ordinance

By
By this time from their fixed Beds of Lime
Had been dishabited, and wide Havock made
For bloody Power to rush upon your Peace.
But on the Sight of us your lawful King,
Who painfully with much expedient March,
Have brought a counter-check before your Gates,
To save unscratch'd your City's threatened Cheeks:
Behold the French amaz'd youchsafe a Parle;
And now instead of Bullets wrap'd in Fire,
To make a shaking Fever in your Walls,
They shoot but calm Words, folded up in Smoak,
To make a faithless Error in your Ears;
Which trust accordingly, kind Citizens,
And let us in. Your King, whose labour'd Spirits
Fore-weary'd in this Action of swift Speed,
Craves Harbourage within your City Walls.

K. Philip. When I have said, make Answer to us both!

Loe in this right Hand, whose Protecion
Is most divinely vow'd upon the Right
Of him it holds, stands young Plantagenet,
Son to the elder Brother of this Man,
And King o'er him, and all that he enjoys:
For this down-trodden Equity, we tread
In warlike March, these Greens before your Town,
Being no further Enemy to you
Than the constraint of Hospitable Zeal,
In the relief of this oppressed Child,
Religiously provokes. Be pleased then
To pay that Duty which you truly owe,
To him that owes it, namely, this young Prince;
And then our Arms, like to a muzzled Bear,
Save in Aspect, hath all Offence seal'd up:
Our Cannons Malice vainly shall be spent
Against th' invulnerable Clouds of Heav'n;
And with a blessed, and un-vext Rejire,
With un-hack'd Swords, and Helmets all unbruised,
We will bear home that lufty Blood again,
Which here we came to spout against your Town,
And leave your Children, Wives, and you in Peace.
But if you fondly pass our proffer'd Offer,

'Tis
'Tis not the Rounder of your old-fac'd Walls
Can hide you from our Messengers of War;
Though all these Englishe, and their Discipline,
Were harbour'd in their rude Circumference:
Then tell us, shall your City call us Lord,
In that behalf which we have challenge'd it?
Or shall we give the Signal to our Rage,
And stalk in Blood to our Possession?

Cont. In brief, we are the King of England's Subjects,
For him, and in his Right, we hold this Town.

K. John. Acknowledge then the King, and let me in.
Cont. That can we not; but he that proves the King,
To him will we prove Loyal; 'till that time
Have we ramm'd up our Gates against the World.

K. John. Dost not the Crown of England prove the King!
And if not that, I bring you Witnesses,
Twice fifteen thousand Hearts of England's Breed—
Bast. Baffards, and else.

K. John. To verify our Title with their Lives.
K. Philip. As many, and as well born Bloods as those—
Bast. Some Baffards too.

K. Philip. Stand in his Face to contradict his Claim.
Cont. 'Till you compound whose Right is worthiest,
We for the worthiest hold the Right from both.

K. John. Then God forgive the Sin of all those Souls,
That to their everlasting Residence,
Before the Dew of Evening fall, shall fleet
In dreadful Trial of our Kingdom's King.


Bast. Saint George that swindg'd the Dragon,
And e'er since sits on's Horseback at mine Hostels Door;
Teach us some Fence. Sirrah, were I at home
At your Den, Sirrah, with your Lionefs,
I would set an Ox-Head to your Lion's Hide,
And make a Monster of you. [To Austria,
Aust. Peace, no more.

Bast. O tremble; for you hear the Lion roar.
K. John. Up higher to the Plain, where we'll set forth,
In best Appointment, all our Regiments.
Bast. Speed then to take Advantage of the Field.

K. Philip.
of King John

K. Philip. It shall be so; and at the other Hill
Command the rest to stand. God and our Right! [Exeunt.
Here, after Excursions, enter the Herald of France with
Trumpets to the Gates.

F.Her. You Men of Angiers, open wide your Gates,
And let young Arthur, Duke of Bretagne, in;
Who by the Hand of France, this Day hath made
Much Work for Tears in many an English Mother,
Whose Sons lye scatter'd on the bleeding Ground;
Many a Widow's Husband groveling lyes,
Coldly embracing the discolour'd Earth,
And Victory with little Lofs doth play
Upon the dancing Banners of the French,
Who are at hand triumphantly display'd
To enter Conquerors; and to proclaim
Arthur of Bretagne, England's King, and yours.

Enter English Herald with Trumpet.

E.Her. Rejoyce, you Men of Angiers; ring your Bells;
King John, your King, and England's, doth approach,
Commander of this hot malicious Day.
Their Armours, that march'd hence to Silver bright,
Hither return all gilt in Frenchmen's Blood.
There fluck no Plume in any English Crest,
That is removed by a Staff of France.
Our Colours do return in those same Hands
That did display them when we first march'd forth;
And like a jolly Troop of Huntsmen come
Our lofty English, all with purpled Hands,
Dy'd in the dying Slaughter of their Foes.
Open your Gates, and give the Victors Way.

Cit. Heralds, from off our Towers, we might behold;
From first to last, the Onset and Retire
Of both your Armies, whose Equality
By our best Eyes cannot be cenfur'd;
Blood hath bought Blood, and Blows have answer'd Blows;
Strength march'd with Strength, and Power confronted
Both are alike, and both alike we like; [Power.
One must prove greatest. While they weigh so even,
We hold our Town for neither; yet for both.
The Life and Death

Enter the two Kings with their Powers at several Doors.

K. John. France, hast thou yet more Blood to cast away?
Say, shall the Current of our Right run on;
Whole Passage, vext with thy Impediment,
Shall leave his native Channel, and o'er-swell,
With Course disturb'd, even thy confining Shores;
Unless thou let his Silver Water keep
A peaceful Progress to the Ocean.

K. Philip. England, thou hast not say'd one Drop of Blood
In this hot Trial, more than we of France;
Rather lost more. And by this Hand I swear,
That fivays the Earth this Climate overlooks,
Before we will lay down our just-born Arms,
We'll put thee down, 'gainst whom these Arms we bear,
Or add a Royal Number to the dead;
Gracing the Scroul that tells of this War's loss,
With Slaughter coupled to the Name of Kings.

Bast. Ha! Majesty; how high thy Glory towers,
When the rich Blood of Kings is set on Fire.
Oh now doth Death line his dead Chaps with Steel;
The Swords of Soldiers are his Teeth, his Phangs,
And now he reaps, mowing the Flesh of Men
In undetermin'd Differences of Kings.
Why stand these Royal Fronts amazed thus?
Cry Havock, Kings, back to the stained Field
You equal Potents, fiery kindled Spirits:
Then let Confusion of one Part confirm
The other's Peace; 'till then, Blows, Blood, and Death.

K. John. Whole Party do the Townsmen yet admit?

K. Philip. Speak Citizens, for England, who's your King?

Citi. The King of England, when we know the King.

K. Philip. Know him in us, that here hold up his Right.

K. John. In us, that are our own great Deputy,
And bear Possession of our Person here,
Lord of our Presence, Angiers, and of you.

Citi. A greater Power than we denies all this;
And 'till it be undoubted, we do lock
Our former Scruple in our strong barr'd Gates:
Kings of our Fear, untill our Fears resolv'd
Be by some certain King purg'd and depos'd.

Bast.
Bash. By Heav'n, these Scroyles of Angiers flout you Kings;  
And stand securely on their Battlements,  
As in a Theatre, whence they gape and point  
At your industrious Scenes, and Acts of Death.  
You Royal Presences be rul'd by me;  
Do like the Mutines of Jerusalem,  
Be Friends a while, and both conjointly bend  
Your sharpest Deeds of Malice on this Town.  
By East and West let France and England mount  
Their battering Cannon charged to the Mouths,  
'Till their Soul-fearing Clamours have braul'd down  
The flinty Ribs of this contemptuous City.  
I'd play incessantly upon these Jades;  
Even 'till unsealed Delocation  
Leave them as naked as the vulgar Air:  
That done, disserver your united Strengths;  
And part your mingled Colours once again.  
Turn Face to Face, and bloody Point to Point;  
Then in a Moment Fortune shall cull forth,  
Out of one Side, her happy Minion,  
To whom in favour she shall give the Day,  
And kiss him with a glorious Victory.  
How like you this wild Counsel, mighty States;  
Smacks it not something of the Policy?  

K. John. Now by the Sky that hangs above our Heads,  
I like it well. France, shall we knit our Powers,  
And lay this Angiers even with the Ground,  
Then after fight who shall be King of it?  

Bash. And if thou haft the Mettle of a King,  
Being wrong'd as we are by this peevish Town,  
Turn thou the Mouth of thy Artillery,  
As we will ours, against these saucy Walls;  
And when that we have dash'd them to the Ground,  
Why then defie each other, and pell-mell  
Make work upon our selves for Heav'n or Hell.  

K. Philip. Let it be so; say, where will you assault?  

K. John. We from the West will send Destruction  
Into this City's Bosom.  

Ausf. I from the North.
K. Philip. Our Thunder from the South, 
Shall rain their Drift of Bullets on this Town.

Bea. O prudent Discipline! From North to South; 
Aufr. and France shoot in each others Mouth, 
I'll fir them to it; come away, away.

Cit. Hear us great Kings, vouchsafe a while to stay, 
And I shall shew you Peace, and fair-fac'd League. 
Win you this City without Streak or Wound; 
Rescue those breathing Lives to die in Beds, 
That here come Sacrifices for the Field; 
Persevere not, but hear me, mighty Kings.

K. John. Speak on; with Favour we are bent to hear. 

Cit. That Daughter there of Spain, the Lady Blanch, 
Is near to England, look upon the Years 
Of Lewis the Dauphin, and that lovely Maid. 
If lusty Love should go in quest of Beauty, 
Where should he find it fairer, than in Blanch? 
If zealous Love should go in search of Virtue, 
Where should he find it purer than in Blanch? 
If Love ambitious, sought a Match of Birth, 
Whose Veins bound richer Blood than Lady Blanch? 
Such as she is, in Beauty, Virtue, Birth, 
Is the young Dauphin every way compleat: 
If not compleat of, say he is not the; 
And she again wants nothing, to name Want; 
If Want it be not, that she is not he. 
He is the half Part of a blessed Man, 
Left to be finished by such as she; 
And she a fair divided Excellence, 
Whose fulness of Perfection lyes in him. 
O two such Silver Currents, when they join, 
Do glorifie the Banks that bound them in: 
And two such Shores, to two such Streams made one; 
Two such controlling Bounds shall you be, Kings, 
To these two Princes, if you marry them: 
This Union shall do more than Battery can, 
To our fast closed Gates: For at this Match, 
With swifter Spleen than Powder can enforce, 
The Mouth of Passage shall we fling wide ope, 
And give you entrance; but without this Match,
of King John.

The Sea enraged is not half so deaf,
Lions more confident, Mountains and Rocks
More free from Motion, no not Death himself
In mortal Fury half so peremptory,
As we to keep this City.

Bast. Here's a Stay,
That shakes the rotten Carkass of old Death
Out of his Rags. Here's a large Mouth indeed,
That spits forth Death, and Mountains, Rocks, and Seas,
Talks as familiarly of roaring Lions,
As Maids of thirteen do of Puppy-dogs.
What Cannoneer begot this lifty Blood,
He speaks plain Cannon fire, and smock, and bounce;
He gives the Bastinado with his Tongue:
Our Ears are cudgel'd, not a Word of his
But buffets better than a Fist of France;
Zounds I was never so bethumpt with Words,
Since I first call'd my Brother's Father Dad.

Elia. Son, lift to this Conjunction, make this Match,
Give with our Neice a Dowry large enough;
For by this Knot, thou shalt so surely tie
Thy now unfruitful Assurance to the Crown,
That young green Boy shall have no Sun to ripe
The Bloom that promiseth a mighty Fruit:
I see a yielding in the Looks of France:
Mark how they whisper, urge them while their Souls
Are capable of this Ambition,
Left Zeal now melted by the windy Breath
Of soft Petitions, Pity and Remorse,
Cool and congeal again to what it was.

Citi. Why answer not the Double Majesties,
This friendly Treaty of our threatened Town?

K. Philip. Speak England first, that hath been forward first
To speak unto this City: What say you?

K. John. If that the Dauphin there, thy Princely Son,
Can in this Book of Beauty read I love;
Her Dowry shall weigh equal with a Queen,
For Angiers, and fair Touraine, Maine, Poyetiers,
And all that we upon this side the Sea,
Except this City now by us beleag'd,
Find liable to our Crown and Dignity,
Shall gild her Bridal Bed, and make her rich
In Titles, Honours, and Promotions;
And she in Beauty, Education, Blood,
Holds Hands with any Prince of the World.

K. Philip. What say'st thou, Boy? Look in the Lady's Face?
Lewis. I do, my Lord, and in her Eye I find
A Wonder, or a wondrous Miracle,
The Shadow of my self form'd in her Eye,
Which being but the Shadow of your Son,
Becomes a Sun, and makes your Son a Shadow:
I do protest I never lov'd my self
'Till now, insaxed I beheld my self,
Drawn in the flattering Table of her Eye.

[Whispering with Blanch;

Bast. Drawn in the flattering Table of her Eye,
Hang'd in the frowning wrinkle of her Brow,
And quarter'd in her Heart, he doth espie
Himself Love's Traitor; this is pity now,
That hang'd, and drawn, and quarter'd there should be,
In such a Love, so vile a Lout as he.

Blanch. My Uncle's Will in this respect is mine.
If he see ought in you that makes him like,
That any thing he sees which moves his liking,
I can with ease translate it to my Will:
Or if you will, to speak more properly,
I will enforce it easily to my Love.
Further I will not flatter you my Lord,
That all I see in you is worthy Love,
Than this, that nothing do I see in you,
Though churlish Thoughts themselves should be your Judge;
That I can find, should merit any Hate.

K. John. What say these young ones? What say you, my

Blanch. That she is bound in Honour still to do
What you in Wisdom still vouchsafe to say.

K John. Speak then, Prince Dauphin, can you love this
Lewis. Nay, ask me if I can refrain from Love,
For I do love her most unfeignedly.

K. John. Then do I give Volquesfen, Touraine, Main,
Poictiers, and Anjou, these five Provinces

With
With her to thee, and this addition more.
Full thirty thousand Marks of English Coin.

**Philip of France,** if thou be pleas'd withal,
Command thy Son and Daughter to join Hands.

**K. Philip.** It likes us well; young Princes, close your Hands.

**An.** And your Lips too, for I am well affur'd,
That I did so, when I was first affur'd.

**K. Philip.** Now Citizens of Angiers ope your Gates,
Let in that amity which you have made,
For at Saint Marie's Chappel presently,
The Rites of Marriage shall be solemniz'd.

Is not the Lady Constance in this Troop?
I know she is not, for this Match made up,
Her Presence would have interrupted much.

Where is she and her Son, tell me, who knows?

**Lewis.** She is sad and passionate at your Highness Tent:

**K. Philip.** And by my Faith, this League that we have made
Will give her Sadness very little cure:

Brother of England, how may we content
This Widow Lady? In her Right we came,
Which we, God knows, have turn'd another way,

To our own Vantage.

**K. John.** We will heal up all,
For we'll create young Arthur Duke of Britain,
And Earl of Richmond, and this rich fair Town

We make him Lord of. Call the Lady Constance,
Some speedy Messenger bid her repair

To our Solemnity: I trust we shall,
If not fill up the Measure of her Will,
Yet in some measure satisfy her so,

That we shall stop her Exclamation.

Go we, as well as haste will suffer us,
To this unlook'd for, unprepared Pomp. [Ex. all but Baft.

**Baff.** Mad World, mad Kings, mad Composition;

**John to stop Arthur's Title in the whole;**

Hath willingly departed with a part;

And France, whose Armour Conscience buckled on,
Whom Zeal and Charity brought to the Field,
As God's own Soldier, round'd in the Ear

With that same Purpose-changer, that fly Devil.

That
That Broker, that still breaks the Pate of Faith,
That daily Break-Vow, he that wins of all,
Of Kings, of Beggars, old Men, young Men, Maids,
Who having no external thing to lose,
But the word Maid, cheats the poor Maid of that,
That smooth-fac'd Gentleman, tickling Commodity,
Commodity, the Bias of the World,
The World, who of it self is poised well,
Made to run even, upon even Ground;
'Till this Advantage, this vile drawing Bias,
This sway of Motion, this Commodity,
Makes it take head from all indifferency,
From all direction, purpose, course, intent;
And this same Bias, this Commodity,
This Bawd, this Broker, that all changing-world,
Clapt on the outward Eye of fickle France,
Hath drawn him from his own determin'd aid,
From a resolv'd and honourable War,
To a most base and vile concluded Peace.
And why rai I on this Commodity?
But for because he hath not wooed me yet:
Not that I have the Power to clutch my Hand,
When his fair Angels would salute my Palm,
But for my Hand, as unattempted yet,
Like a poor Beggar, raileth on the Rich.
Well, whiles I am a Beggar, I will rail,
And say there is no sin but to be rich:
And being rich, my Virtue then shall be,
To say there is no Vice, but Beggary,
Since Kings break Faith upon Commodity,
Gain be my Lord, for I will worship thee. [Exit.

Ester Constance, Arthur and Salisbury.

Conf. Gone to be marry'd! Gone to swear a Peace!
False Blood to false Blood join'd! Gone to be Friends!
Shall Laws have Blanch, and Blanch those Provinces?
It is not so, thou haft snipeke. mistheard;
Be well advis'd, tell o'er thy Tale again,
It cannot be, thou dost but fly'tis so.
I trust I may not trust thee, for thy Word
Is but the vain Breath of a common Man:

Believe
Believe me, I do not believe thee Man,
I have a King’s Oath to the contrary.
Thou shalt be punish’d for thus frighting me,
For I am sick, and capable of Fears,
Opprest with Wrongs, and therefore full of Fears,
A Widow, husbandless, subject to Fears,
A Woman naturally born to Fears;
And though thou now confess thou didst but jest,
With my vext Spirits I cannot take a Truce,
But they will quake and tremble all this Day.
What dost thou mean by shaking of thy Head?
Why dost thou look so sadly on my Son?
What means that Hand upon that Breast of thine?
Why holds thine Eye that lamentable Rheum,
Like a proud River peering o’er his Bounds?
Be these sad Signs confirmers of thy Words?
Then speak again; not all thy former Tale,
But this one word, whether thy Tale be true.

_Sal._ As true, as I believe you think them false
That give you cause to prove my saying true.

_Conf._ Oh if thou teach me to believe this Sorrow,
Teach thou this Sorrow how to make me die,
And let Belief and Life encounter so,
As doth the Fury of two desperate Men,
Which in the very meeting fall and die.

_Lewis marry Blanch! O Boy, then where art thou?
France Friend with England! what becomes of me?
Fellow be gone. I cannot brook thy fight;
This News hath made thee a most ugly Man.

_Sal._ What other Harm have I, good Lady, done,
But spoke the Harm that is by others done?

_Conf._ Which Harm within it self so hainous is,
As it makes harmful all that speak of it.

_Arth._ I do beseech you, Madam, be content.

_Conf._ If thou that bidst me be content, wert grim,
Ugly, and flamboyant to thy Mother’s Womb,
Full of unpleasing Blots, and lightless Stains,
Lame, foolish, crooked, swart, prodigious,
Patch’d with foul Moles, and Eye-offending Marks,
I would not care, I then would be content,

For
For then I should not love thee: No, nor thou
Become thy great Birth, nor deserve a Crown.
But thou art fair, and at thy Birth, dear Boy,
Nature and Fortune join'd to make thee great.
Of Nature's Gifts thou may'st with Lillies boast,
And with the half blown Rose. But Fortune, oh,
She is corrupted, chang'd, and won from thee,
Sh' Adulterates hourly with thine Unkle John,
And with her golden Hand hath pluckt on France
To tread down fair respect of Sovereignty,
And made his Majesty the Bawd to theirs.
France is a Bawd to Fortune, and King John,
That strumpet Fortune, that usurping John:
Tell me, thou Fellow, is not France forsworn?
Envenom him with Words, or get thee gone,
And leave these Woes alone, which I alone
Am bound to under-bear.
S. I. Pardon me, Madam,
I may not go without you to the Kings.
Conf. Thou may'st, thou shalt, I will not go with thee;
I will instruct my Sorrow to be proud,
For Grief is proud, and makes his Owner stoop;
To me and to the State of my great Grief,
Let Kings assemble: For my Grief's so great
That no Supporter but the huge firm Earth
Can hold it up: Here I and Sorrows sit,
Here is my Throne, bid Kings come bow to it.

ACT III. SCENE I.

Enter King John, King Philip, Lewis, Blanch, Elinor, Philip the Bastard, Austria, and Constance.

K. Philip. THIS true, fair Daughter; and this blessed Day,
Ever in France shall be kept Festival:
To solemnize this Day the glorious Sun
Stays in his Course, and plays the Alchymist,
Turning with splendour of his precious Eye

The
The meager clody Earth to glitt'ring Gold:
The yearly course that brings this Day about
Shall never see it, but a Holy-day.

Conf. A wicked Day, and not a holy Day.
What hath this Day deserv'd? What hath it done,
That it in golden Letters should be set
Among the high Tides in the Kalendar?
Nay, rather turn this Day out of the Week,
This Day of Shame, Oppression, Perjury.
Or if it must stand still, let Wives with Child
Pray that their Burthen may not fall this Day,
Left that their Hopes prodigiously be crost:
But on this Day, let Seamen fear no Wrack,
No Bargains break that are not this Day made;
This Day all things begun come to ill End,
Yea, Faith it self, to hollow Falshood change.

K. Philip. By Heav'n, Lady, you shall have no caufe
To curse the fair Proceedings of this Day:
Have I not pawn'd to you my Majesty?

Conf. You have beguil'd me with a Counterfeit
Resembling Majesty, which being touch'd and try'd,
Proves valueless: You are forsworn, forsworn.
You came in Arms to spill my Enemies Blood,
But now in Arms, you strengthen it with yours.
The grasping Vigour, and rough Frown of War
Is cold in Amity, and painted Peace,
And our Oppression hath made up this League:
Arm, Arm, you Heav'n's, against these perjur'd Kings:
A Widow cries, be Husband to me, Heav'n's,
Let not the Hours of this ungodly Day
Wear out the Days in Peace; but ere Sun-set,
Set armed Discord 'twixt these perjur'd Kings.
Hear me, oh hear me!

Aust. Lady Constance, Peace.

Conf. War, War, no Peace; Peace is to me a War:
O Lymogen, O Austria, thou dost shame
That bloody Spoil: Thou Slave, thou Wretch, thou Coward,
Thou little Valiant, great in Villany:
Thou ever strong upon the stronger Side;
Thou Fortune's Champion, that dost never fight.)

Vol. III. 1
But when her humorous Ladyship is by
To teach thee Safety; thou art perjur’d too,
And sooth’d up Greatness. What a Fool art thou,
A ramping Fool, to brag, to stamp, and swear,
Upon my Party; thou cold-blooded Slave,
Hast thou not spoke like Thunder on my side,
Been sworn my Soldier, bidding me depend
Upon thy Stars, thy Fortune, and thy Strength?
And dost thee now fall over to my Foes?
Thou wear’st a Lion’s Hide? Doff it for shame,
And hang a Calves-skin on those recreant Limbs.

_Auf. O that a Man should speak those words to me._
_Bast. And hang a Calves-skin on those recreant Limbs._
_Auf. Thou dar’st not say so, Villain, for thy Life._
_Bast. And hang a Calves-skin on those recreant Limbs._

_K. John._ We like not this, thou dost forget thy self.

_Ende Pandulph._

_K. Philip._ Here comes the holy Legate of the Pope.
_Pand. Hail, you anointed Deputies of Heav’n;_ To thee, King _John_, my holy Errand is;
I _Pandulph_ of fair _Milan_ Cardinal,
And from Pope _Innocent_ the Legate here,
_Do in his Name religiously demand
Why thou against the Church, our holy Mother,
So wiffully dost spurn, and force perforce
Keep _Stephen Langton_, chosen Archbishop
Of _Canterbury_, from that holy See?
This in our foresaid holy Father’s Name,
Pope _Innocent_, I do demand of thee.

_K. John._ What earthly Name to Interrogatories
Can tax the Free-birth of a sacred King?
Thou canst not, Cardinal, devise a Name
So flight, unworthy, and ridiculous
To charge me to an answer, as the Pope:
Tell him this Tale, and from the Mouth of _England_,
Add thus much more; that no _Italian_ Priest
Shall tithe or toll in our Dominions:
But as we, under Heav’n, are supreme Head,
So under it that great Supremacy
Where we do reign, we will alone uphold

Without
Without th' Assistance of a mortal Hand:
So tell the Pope, all Reverence let apart
To him and his usurp'd Authority.

K. John. Though you, and all the Kings of Christendom
Are led so grossly by this medling Priest,
Dreading the Curse that Mony may buy out,
And, by the Merit of vile Gold, dross, dust,
Purshafe corrupted Pardon of a Man,
Who in that false sells Pardon from himself:
Though you, and all the rest so grossly led,
This jugling Witch-craft with Revenue cherish,
Yet I alone, alone, do me oppofe
Against the Pope, and count his Friends my Foes.

Pand. Then by the lawful Power that I have,
Thou shalt stand Curft, and Excommunicate,
And blessed shal be he that doth revolt
From his Allegiance to an Heretick,
And meritorious shal that Hand be call'd,
Canonized and worshipp'd as a Saint,
That takes away by any secret Courfe
Thy hateful Life.

Conf. O lawful let it be
That I have room with Rome to curse a while.
Good Father Cardinal, cry thou Amen
To my keen Curfes; for without my Wrong
There is no Tongue hath power to curse him right.

Pand. There's Law and Warrant. Lady, for my Curfe.

Conf. And for mine too; when Law can do no right,
Let it be lawful, that Law bar no wrong:
Law cannot give my Child his Kingdom here;
For he that holds his Kingdom, holds the Law;
Therefore since Law it self is perfect wrong,
How can the Law forbid my Tongue to curse?

Pand. Philip of France, on Peril of a Curfe,
Let go the Hand of that Arch-heretick,
And raise the Power of France upon his Head,
Unless he do submit himself to Rome.

Eli. Look'ft thou pale, France? Do not let go thy Hand.

Conf. Look to that Devil, lest that France repent,
And by disjoining Hands Hell lose a Soul.

Aust. King Philip, listen to the Cardinal.

Bast. And hang a Calves-skin on his recreant Limbs.

Aust. Well, Ruffian, I must pocket up these wrongs,

Because—

Bast. Your Breeches best may carry them.

K. John. Philip, what say’st thou to the Cardinal?

Conf. What should he say, but as the Cardinal?

Lewis. Bethink you Father, for the difference

Is purchase of a heavy Curse from Rome,

Or the light loss of England for a Friend;

Fargo the easier.

Blanch. That’s the Curse of Rome.

Conf. O Lewis, stand fast, the Devil tempts thee here

In likeness of a new untrimmed Bride.

Blanch. The Lady Constance speaks not from her Faith:

But from her Need.

Conf. Oh, if thou grant my Need,

Which only lives but by the Death of Faith,

That Need, must needs infer this Principle,

That Faith would live again by Death of Need:

O then tread down my Need, and Faith mounts up:

Keep my Need up, and Faith is trodden down.

K. John. The King is mov’d, and answers not to this;

Conf. O be remov’d from him; and answer well.

Aust. Do so, King Philip, hang no more in doubt.

Bast. Hang nothing but a Calves-skin, most Sweet Lout;

K. Philip. I am perplexed, and know not what to say.

Pand. What can’t thou say, but will perplex thee more,

If thou stand Excommunicate, and Curst?

K. Philip. Good reverend Father, make my Person yours,

And tell me how you would beftow your self?

This Royal Hand and mine are newly knit,

And the Conjunction of our inward Souls

Marry’d in League, coupled and link’d together

With all religious Strength of sacred Vows;

The latest Breath, that gave the sound of words,

Was deep sworn Faith, Peace, Amity, true Love

Between our Kingdoms and our Royal selves.

And even before this Truce, but new before,
No longer than we well could wash our Hands,
To clap this Royal Bargain up of Peace,
Heav'n knows they were besmeared and over-stain'd
With Slaughter's Pencil; where Revenge did paint
The fearful difference of incensed Kings:
And shall these Hands, so lately purged of Blood,
So newly join'd in Love, so strong in both,
Unyoke this seizure, and this kind regret?
Play fast and loose with Faith? So left with Heav'n;
Make such unconstant Children of our selves,
As now again to snatch our Palm from Palm?
Unswear Faith sworn, and on the Marriage-bed
Of smiling Peace to march a bloody Hoist,
And make a Riot on the gentle Brow
Of true Sincerity? O holy Sir,
My reverend Father, let it not be so;
Out of your Grace, devise, ordain, impose
Some gentle Order, and then we shall be blest
To do your Pleasure, and continue Friends.

Pand. All Form is formless, Order orderless,
Save what is opposite to England's Love.
Therefore to Arms, be Champion of our Church,
Or let the Church our Mother breathe her Curse,
A Mother's Curse, on her revolting Son.
France, thou may'st hold a Serpent by the Tongue;
A cased Lyon by the mortal Paw,
A falling Tyger safer by the Tooth,
Than keep in Peace that Hand which thou dost hold.

K. Philip. I may disjoin my Hand, but not my Faith.

Pand. So mak'st thou Faith an Enemy to Faith,
And like a Civil War set'st Oath to Oath,
Thy Tongue against thy Tongue. O let thy Vow
First made to Heav'n, first be to Heav'n perform'd,
That is, to be the Champion of our Church.
What since thou swor'st, is sworn against thy self,
And may not be performed by thy self;
For that which thou hast sworn to do amiss,
Is not amiss, when it is truly done:
And being not done, where doing tends to ill,
The Truth is then most done, not doing it:
The better Act of Purposes mislook,
Is to mistake again, though indirect,
Yet Indirection thereby grows direct,
And Falshood Falshood cures, as Fire cools Fire
Within the scorched Veins of one new burn'd.
It is Religion that doth make Vows kept,
But thou haft sworn against Religion:
By what thou swear'st, against the thing thou swear'st:
And mak'st an Oath the surety for thy Truth,
Against an Oath the Truth; thou art unsure
To swear, swear only not to be forsworn;
Else what a Mockery should it be to swear?
But thou dost swear, only to be forsworn,
And most forsworn, to keep what thou dost swear;
Therefore thy latter Vows, against thy first,
Is in thy self Rebellion to thy self:
And better Conquest never canst thou make,
Than arm thy constant and thy nobler Parts
Against these giddy loose Suggestions:
Upon which better Part, our Pray'r's come in,
If thou vouchsafe them. But if not, then know
The Peril of our Curses light on thee
So heavy as thou shalt not shake them off,
But in Despair, dye under their black weight,
Lust. Rebellion, flat Rebellion.
Bast. Will't not be?
Will not a Calves-skin stop that Mouth of thine?
Lewis. Father, to Arms.
Blanch. Upon thy Wedding-day?
Against the Blood that thou haft married?
What, shall our Feast be kept with slaughter'd Men?
Shall braying Trumpets, and loud churlish Drums,
Clamours of Hell, be measures to our Pomp?
O Husband, hear me: Ay, slack, how new
Is Husband in my Mouth? Even for that Name
Which 'till this time my Tongue did ne'er pronounce;
Upon my Knee I beg, go not to Arms
Against mine Uncle.
Const. O, upon my Knee, made hard with kneeling,
I do pray to thee, thou virtuous Dauphin,
Alter not the Doom fore-thought by Heav'n.

Blanch. Now shall I see thy Love, what Motive may
Be stronger with thee than the Name of Wife?

Conf. That which upholdeth him, that thee upholds
His Honour. Oh thine Honour, Lewis, thine Honour.

Lewis. I muse your Majesty doth seem so cold,
When such profound Respects do pull you on?

Pand. I will denounce a Curse upon his Head. [Thee:
K. Philip. Thou shalt not need. England, I will fall from
Conf. O fair return of banish'd Majesty.

Eliz. O foul revolt of French Inconstancy. [Hour.
K. John. France, thou shalt rue this Hour within this
Balf. Old Time the Clock-Setter, that bald Sexton,
Time,

Is it as he will? Well then, France shall rue.

Blanch. The Sun's o'ercast with Blood: Fair Day adieu.

Which is the side that I must go withal?
I am with both, each Army hath a Hand,
And in their Rage, I having hold of both,
They whirl asunder, and disembark me.

Husband, I cannot pray that thou may'st win:
Uncle, I needs must pray that thou may'st lose:
Father, I may not wish the Fortune thine:
Grandam, I will not wish thy Wishes thrive:
Whoever wins, on that side shall I lose:
Affired Lofs, before the Match be plaid.

Lewis. Lady with me, with me thy Fortune lies.

Blanch. There where my Fortune lives, there my Life-
dies.

K. John. Cousin, go draw our Puissance together.

France. I am burn'd up with inflaming Wrath,
A Rage, whose heat hath this Condition,
That nothing can allay. nothing but Blood,
The Blood and dearest valu'd Blood of France. [turn

K. Philip. Thy Rage shall burn thee up, and thou shalt
To Ashes, ere our Blood shall quench that Fire:
Look to thy self, thou art in jeopardy.

K. John. No more than he that threats. To Arms let's hie:

[Exeunt.

I 4  S C E N E
Scene II.

Alarms, Excursions: Enter Bastard with Austria's Head.

Bast. Now by my Life, this Day grows wondrous hot; Some airy Devil hovers in the Sky, And pours down Mischief. Austria's Head lie there, Enter King John, Arthur, and Hubert.

While Philip breathes,

K. John. Hubert, keep this Boy. Philip, make up; My Mother is affailed in our Tent, And ta'en, I fear.

Bast. My Lord, I rescued her: Her Highness is in safety, fear you not, But on, my Liege, for very little Pains Will bring this Labour to an happy end. [Exeunt. Alarms, Excursions, Retreat. Enter King John, Elinor, Arthur, Bastard, Hubert, and Lords.

K. John. So shall it be; your Grace shall flay behind So stronglyguarded: Cousin, look not sad, Thy Grandam loves thee, and thy Uncle will As deare be to thee, as thy Father was.

Arth. O this will make my Mother die with Grief,

K. John. Cousin, away for England, hastle before, And ere our coming see thou shake the Bags Of hoarding Abbots, imprisoned Angels Set at Liberty: the fat Ribs of Peace Must by the hungry now be fed upon: Use our Commillation in its utmost Force.

Bast. Bell, Book, and Candle, shall not drive me back; When Gold and Silver beckns me to come on: I leave your Highness: Grandam, I will pray, (If ever I remember to be holy) For your fair Safety; so I kifs your Hand.

Eli. Farewel, gentle Cousin.


Eli. Come hither little Kinsman, hark, a Word.

K. John. Come hither, Hubert. O my gentle Hubert, We owe thee much; within this Wall of Flesh There
There is a Soul counts thee her Creditor,
And with Advantage means to pay thy Love:
And, my good Friend, thy voluntary Oath
Lives in this Bosom, dearly cherished.
Give me thy Hand, I had a thing to say—
But I will fit it with some better tune.
By Heav'n, Hubert, I am almost ashamed
to say what good Respect I have of thee.

Hub. I am much bounden to your Majesty.

K. John. Good Friend, thou hast no cause to say so yet;
But thou shalt have; and creep time ne'er so slow,
Yet it shall come for me to do thee good.
I had a thing to say—but let it go:
The Sun is in the Heav'n, and the proud Day,
Attended with the Pleasures of the World,
Is all too wanton; and too full of gawds,
To give me Audience: If the midnight Bell
Did, with his Iron Tongue and brazen Mouth,
Sound on into the drowsie Race of Night;
If this fame were a Church-yard where we stand,
And thou possession with a thousand Wrongs;
Or if that lively Spirit, Melancholy,
Had bak'd thy Blood, and made it heavy, thick,
Which else runs tickling up and down the Veins,
Making that Idiot Laughter keep Mens Eyes,
And strain their Cheeks to idle Merriment,
A Passion hateful to my Purposes;
Or if that thou couldst see me without Eyes,
Hear me without thine Ears, and make reply
Without a Tongue, using Conceit alone,
Without Eyes, Ears, and harmful sound of words;
Then, in despight of brooded watchful Day,
I would into thy Bosom pour my Thoughts:
But, ah, I will not—yet I love thee well,
And by my troth I think thou lov'st me well.

Hub. So well, that what you bid me undertake,
Though that my Death were adjunct to my Act,
By Heav'n I would do it.

K. John. Do not I know thou wouldst?
Good Hubert, Hubert, Hubert, throw thine Eye
On
On yon young Boy: I'll tell thee what, my Friend,
He is a very Serpent in my way,
And wheresoe'er this Foot of mine doth tread,
He lyes before me; dost thou understand me?
Thou art his Keeper.

Hub. And I'll keep him so,
That he shall not offend your Majesty.


Hub. My Lord?


Hub. He shall not live.


I could be merry now. Hubert, I love thee;
Well, I'll not say what I intend for thee:
Remember:—Madam, fare you well.
I'll send those Powers o'er to your Majesty.

Eli. My Blessing go with thee.


Hubert shall be your Man, to attend on you
With all true Duty; on toward Calais, hoa. [Exeunt.

SCENE III.

Enter King Philip, Lewis, Pandulpho, and Attendants.

K. Philip. So by a roaring Tempest on the Flood,
A whole Armado of convicted Sail
Is scatter'd and disjoin'd from fellowship.

Pand. Courage and Comfort, all shall yet go well.

K. Philip. What can go well, when we have run so ill?
Are we not beaten? Is not Angiers lost?

Arthur ta'en Prisoner? Divers dear Friends slain?
And bloody England into England gone,
O'er-bearing Interruption, spight of France:

Lewis. What he hath won, that hath he fortify'd:
So hot a Speed, with such Advice dispos'd,
Such temperate Order in so fierce a Cause,
Doth want Example; who hath read, or heard
Of any kindred-Action like to this?

K. Philip. Well could I bear that England had this Praise,
So we could find some Pattern of our Shame.

Enter
Look, who comes here? A Grave unto a Soul,
Holding th’eternal Spirit against her Will,
In the vile Prison of afflicted Breath;
I prithee, Lady, go away with me.

Conf. Lo, now; now see the Issue of your Peace.

K. Phil. Patience, good Lady; comfort, gentle Constance.

Conf. No, I defie all Counsel, all Redress,
But that which ends all Counsel, true Redress;
Death, Death, oh amiable, lovely Death,
Thou odoriferous Stench; found Rottenness,
Arise forth from the Couch of lasting Night,
Thou Hate and Terror to Prosperity,
And I will kiss thy detestable Bones;
And put my Eye-Balls in thy vaulty Brows,
And ring these Fingers with thy houhold Worms,
And stop this Gap of Breath with fulsom Duff,
And be a Carrion Monster like thy self;
Come, grin on me, and I will think thou smilest,
And buls thee as thy Wife; Misery’s Love!
O come to me.

K. Philip. O fair Affliction, Peace.

Conf. No, no, I will not, having Breath to cry;
O that my Tongue were in the Thunder’s Mouth,
Then with a Passion I would shake the World,
And rouze from Sleep that fell Anatomy
Which cannot hear a Lady’s feeble Voice,
Which scorns a modest Invocation.

Pand. Lady, you utter Madness, and not Sorrow.

Conf. Thou art not holy to believe me so;
I am not mad; this Hair I tear is mine,
My Name is Constance, I was Geoffrey’s Wife:
Young Arthur is my Son, and he is loft:
I am not mad, I would to Heav’n I were,
For then ‘tis like I should forget my self.
O, if I could, what Grief should I forget!
Preach some Philosophy to make me mad,
And thou shalt be canoniz’d, Cardinal;
For, being not mad, but sensible of Grief,
My reasonable Part produces Reason.
How I may be deliver’d of these Woes,
And teaches me to kill or hang my Self.
If I were mad, I should forget my Son,
Or madly think a Babe of Clouts were he:
I am not mad; too well, too well I feel
The different Plague of each Calamity.

K. Philip. Bind up those Tresses; O what Love I note
In the fair multitude of those her Hairs;
Where but by chance a silver Drop hath fall’d,
Even to that Drop ten thousand wiery Friends
Do gliew themselves in siciable Grief,
Like true, inseparable faithful Loves,
Sticking together in Calamity.

Conf. To England, if you will.
K. Philip. Bind up your Hairs.

Conf. Yes, that I will; and wherefore will I do it?
I tore them from their Bonds, and cry’d aloud,
O, that these Hands could so redeem my Son,
As they have given these Hairs their Liberty;
For now I envy at their Liberty,
And will again commit them to their Bonds,
Because my poor Child is a Prisoner.
And Father Cardinal, I have heard you say
That we shall see and know our Friends in Heav’n;
If that be true, I shall see my Boy again.

For since the Birth of Cain, the first Male-Child,
To him that did but Yesterday subsurge,
There was not such a gracious Creature-born.
But now will Canker-Sorrow eat my Bud,
And chase the native Beauty from his Cheek,
And he will look as hollow as a Ghost,
As dim and meagre as an Agues Fit,
And so he’ll die; and rising so again,
When I shall meet him in the Court of Heav’n
I shall not know him; therefore never, never
Must I behold my pretty Arthur more.

Pand. You hold too hainous a respect of Grief.
Conf. He talks to me that never had a Son.
K. Philip You are as fond of Grief, as of your Child.
Conf. Grief fills the Room up of my absent Child:
Lyes in his Bed, walks up and down with me;
Puts on his pretty Looks, repeats his Words,
Remembers me of all his gracious Parts;
Stuffs out his vacant Garments with his Form,
Then have I Reason to be fond of Grief.
Fare you well; had you such a Los as I,
I could give better Comfort than you do.
I will not keep this Form upon my Head,
When there's such Disorder in my Wit.
O Lord, my Boy, my Arthur, my fair Son!
My Life, my joy, my Food, my all the World,
My Widow-Comfort, and my Sorrow's Cure!
[Exit.
  K. Philip. I fear some Outrage, and I'll follow her.
[Exit.

Lewis. There's nothing in this World can make me joy,
Life is as tedious as a twice told Tale,
Vexing the dull Ear of a drowsie Man;
A bitter Shame hath spoil'd the sweet Words taste,
That it yields nought but Shame and Bitterness,
Pand. Before the curing of a strong Disease,
Even in the Instant of repair and health,
The Fit is stronger: Evils that take Leave,
On their Departure, most of all new evil.
What have you lost by losing of this Day?

Lewis. All Days of Glory, Joy, and Happiness;
Pand. If you had won it, certainly you had.
No, no; when Fortune means to Men most good,
She looks upon them with a threatening Eye.
'Tis strange to think how much King John hath lost
In this, which he accounts so clearly won.
Are not you griev'd that Arthur is his Prisoner?
Lewis. As heartily as he is glad he hath him.
Pand. Your Mind is all as youthful as your Blood.
Now hear me speak with a prophetick Spirit;
For even the Breath of what I mean to speak,
Shall blow each Duff, each Straw, each little rub
Out of the Path which shall directly lead
Thy Foot to England's Throne: And therefore mark:
John hath feiz'd Arthur, and it cannot be,
That whilst warm Life plays in that Infant's Veins,
The misplac’d John should entertain an Hour,
A Minute, nay one quiet Breath of Reft.
A Scepter snatch’d with an unruly Hand,
Must be as boyishly maintain’d as gain’d.
And he that stands upon a slippery Place,
Makes nice of no vile Hold to flay him up.
That John may stand, then Arthur needs must fall,
So be it, for it cannot be but so.

Lewis. But what shall I gain by young Arthur’s fall?

Pand. You, in the right of Lady Blanch your Wife,
May then make all the Claim that Arthur did.

Lewis. And lose it, Life and all, as Arthur did.

Pand. How green you are, and fresh in this old World?

John lays you Plots; the Times conspire with you;
For he that steeps his Safety in true Blood,
Shall find but bloody Safety and untrue.
This Act so evilly born shall cool the Hearts
Of all his People, and freeze up their Zeal,
That none so small Advantage shall step forth
To check his Reign, but they will cherish it;
No natural Exhalation in the Sky,
No Scope of Nature, no distemper’d Day,
No common Wind, no customed Event,
But they will pluck away his natural Cause,
And call them Meteors, Prodigies, and Signa,
Abortives; Prefages, and Tongues of Heav’n,
Plainly denouncing Vengeance upon John.

Lewis. May be he will not touch young Arthur’s Life;
But hold himself safe in his Prisonment.

Pand. O, Sir, when he shall hear of your Approach,
If that young Arthur be not gone already,
Even at this News he dies; and then the Hearts
Of all his People shall revolt from him,
And kiss the Lips of unacquainted Change,
And pick strong Matter of Revolt and Wrath,
Out of the bloody Fingers Ends of John.
Methinks I see this Hurley all on foot;
And O, what better matter breeds for you,
Than I have nam’d, The Bastard Faulconbridge
Is now in England, ranfacking the Church,
of King J o h n .

Offending Charity. If but a dozen French
Were there in Arms, they would be as a Call
To train ten thousand English to their side;
Or, as a little Snow, tumbled about,
Anon becomes a Mountain. O noble Dauphin,
Go with me to the King. 'tis wonderful,
What may be wrought out of their Discontent.
Now that their Souls are top full of Offence,
For England go; I will whet on the King.

Lewis. Strong Reason makes strong Actions, let us go;
If you say ay, the King will not say no. [Exit.

ACT IV. SCENE I.

Enter Hubert and Executioner.

Hub. HEAT me these Irons hot, and look you fland
   Within the Arras, when I strike my Foot
Upon the Bosome of the Ground, rush forth
And bind the Boy, which you shall find with me,
Fast to the Chair: Be heedful; hence, and watch.

Exe. I hope your Warrant will bear out the Deed!

Hub. Uncleanly Scruples! fear not you; look to't.
Young Lad come forth; I have to say with you.

Enter Arthur.

Arth. Good Morrow, Hubert.


Arth. As little Prince, having so great a Title
To be more Prince, as may be. You are sad.

Hub. Indeed I have been merrier.

Arth. Mercy on me;

Methinks no Body should be sad but I;
Yet I remember when I was in France,
Young Gentlemen would be as sad as Night,
Only for Wantonness; by my Christendom,
So I were out of Prison, and kept Sheep,
I should be as merry as the Day is long:
And so I would be here, but that I doubt
My Uncle practises more Harm to me.
He is afraid of me, and I of him.
Is it my Fault that I was Geoffrey's Son?
No indeed it's not, and I would to Heav'n
I were your Son, so you would love me, Hubert.

Hub. If I talk to him, with his Innocent Prate
He will awake my Mercy, which lyes dead;
Therefore I will be sudden, and dispatch. [Aside]

Arth. Are you sick, Hubert? you look pale to Day;
Insooth I would you were a little sick,
That I might fit all Night and watch with you.
I warrant I love you more than you do me.

Hub. His Words do take Possession of my Bosom.
Read here, young Arthur. [Shewing a Paper]
How now, foolish Rheume,
Turning dishpitious Torture out of Door!
I must be brief, left Resolution drop
Cut at mine Eyes in tender Womanish Tears.—
Can you not read it? Is it not fair writ?

Arth. Too fairly, Hubert, for so foul Effect.
Must you with hot Irons burn out both mine Eyes?

Hub. Young Boy, I must.

Arth. And will you?

Hub. And I will.

Arth. Have you the Heart? When your Head did but
I knit my Handkerchief about your Brows, [ake,
(The best I had, a Princess wrought it me)
And I did never ask it you again;
And with my Hand, at Midnight held your Head;
And like the watchful Minutes, to the Hour,
Still and anon cheard'd up the heavy Time,
Saying, what lack you? and, where lyes your Grief?
Or what good Love may I perform for you?
Many a poor Man's Son would have lain still,
And ne'er have spoke a loving Word to you:
But you, at your sick Service had a Prince:
Nay, you may think my Love was crafty Love;
And call it Cunning. Do, and if you will,
If Heav'n be pleas'd, that you must use me ill,
Why then you must. Will you put out mine Eyes?

These
These Eyes that never did, nor never shall
So much as frown on you?

Hub. I have sworn to do it;
And with hot Irons must I burn them out;
Arth. Ah, none but in this Iron Age would do it.
The Iron of it self, though heat red hot,
Approaching near these Eyes, would drink my Tears,
And quench its fiery Indignation,
Even in the Matter of mine Innocence:
Nay, after that, consume away inRuft,
But for containing Fire to harm mine Eye.
Are you more stubborn hard, than hammer'd Iron?
And if an Angel should have come to me,
And told me Hubert should put out mine Eyes,
I would not have believ'd him; no Tongue but Hubert's.

Hub. Come forth; do as I bid you do.
Arth. O save me, Hubert, save me! my Eyes are out
Even with the fierce Looks of these bloody Men.

Hub. Give me the Iron I say, and bind him here.
Arth. Alas, what need you be so boisterous rough?
I will not struggle, I will stand stone-still.
For Heav'n sake, Hubert, let me not be bound:
Nay, hear me, Hubert, drive these Men away,
And I will sit as quiet as a Lamb.
I will not stir, nor wince, nor speak a Word,
Nor look upon the Iron angrily:
Thruft but these Men away and I'll forgive you,
Whatever Torment you do put me to.

Hub. Go, stand within; let me alone with him.

Exe. I am best pleas'd to be from such a Deed.
Arth. Alas, I then have chid away my Friend,
He hath a stern Look, but a gentle Heart;
Let him come back, that his Compassion may
Give Life to yours.

Hub. Come, Boy, prepare your self.

Arth. Is there no Remedy?
Hub. None, but to lose your Eyes.

Arth. O Heaven, that there were but a Moth in yours,
A Grain, a Duff, a Gnat, a wandering Hair,
Any Annoyance in that precious Sense;

Then
Then feeling what small things are boisterous there,
Your vile intent must needs seem horrible.

Hub. Is this your promise? Go too, hold your Tongue:
Arth. Hubert, the Utterance of a brace of Tongues,
Must needs want pleading for a pair of Eyes:
Let me not hold my Tongue, let me not, Hubert;
Or, Hubert, if you will, cut out my Tongue,
So I may keep mine Eyes. O spare mine Eyes,
Though to no use, but still to look on you.
Lo, by my troth, the Instrument is cold,
And would not harm me.

Hub. I can heat it, Boy.
Arth. No, in good sooth, the Fire is dead with Grief.
Being create for Comfort, to be us’d
In undeerv’d Extrems; see else your felt,
There is no Malice in this burning Coal,
The Breath of Heav’n hath blown his Spirit out,
And strew’d repentant Ashes on his Head.

Hub. But with my Breath I can revive it, Boy.
Arth. And if you do, you will but make it blush,
And glow with shame of your Proceedings, Hubert:
Nay, it perchance will sparkle in your Eyes;
And, like a Dog that is compell’d to fight,
Snatch at his Master that doth set him on.
All things that you should use to do me Wrong
Deny their Office; only you do lack
That Mercy which fierce Fire, and Iron extends,
Creatures of note for Mercy, lacking Uses.

Hub. Well, see to live; I will not touch thine Eye
For all the Treasure that thine Uncle owes:
Yet am I sworn, and I did purpose, Boy,
With this same very Iron to burn them out.

Arth. O now you look like Hubert; All this while
You were disguis’d.

Hub. Peace: No more. Adieu,
Your Uncle must not know but you are dead,
I’ll fill these dogged Spies with false Reports:
And, pretty Child, sleep doubtless, and secure,
That Hubert, for the Wealth of all the World,
Will not offend thee.
of King John. 211

Arth. O Heav’n! I thank you, Hubert.
Hub. Silence, no more; go closely in with me.
Much Danger do I undergo for thee. [Exeunt.

SCENE II.

Enter King John, Pembroke, Salisbury, and other Lords.

K. John. Here once again we sit, once again crown’d,
And look’d upon, I hope, with cheerful Eyes.
Pemb. This once again, but that your Highness pleas’d,
Was once superfluous; you were crown’d before,
And that high Royalty was ne’er pluck’d off:
The Faiths of Men, ne’er stain’d with Revolt:
Freh Expec’tation troubled not the Land
With any long’d-for Change; or better State.
Sal. Therefore to be posses’d with double Pomp,
To guard a Title that was rich before;
To gild refined Gold, to paint the Lilly,
To throw a Perfume on the Violet,
To smooth the Ice, or add another Hew
Unto the Rainbow, or with Taper-Light
To seek the beauteous Eye of Heav’n to garnish,
Is wasteful and ridiculous Excess.
Pemb. But that your royal Pleasure must be done,
This Act is as an ancient Tale new told,
And in the last repeating troublesome,
Being urged at a time unseasonable.
Sal. In this the antick and well noted Face
Of plain old Form is much disfigured,
And like a shifted Wind unto a Sail,
It makes the Course of Thoughts to fetch about;
Startles and frights Consideration:
Makes found Opinion sick, and Truth suspected,
For putting on so new a fashion’d Robe.
Pemb. When Workmen strive to do better than well,
They do confound their Skill in Covetousness;
And oftentimes excusing of a Fault,
Dorh make the Fault the worse by the Excuse:
As Patches set upon a little Breach,
Discredit more in hiding of the Fault,
Than did the Fault before it was so patch’d.

Sal. To this Effect, before you were new crown’d,
We breath’d our Counsel; but it pleas’d your Highness
To over-bear it, and we are all well pleas’d,
Since all, and every part of what we would
Do make a stand, at what your Highness will.

K. John. Some Reasons of this double Coronation
I have possess’d you with, and think them strong.
And more, more strong the less that is my Fear,
I shall endue you with: Mean time, but ask
What you would have reform’d, that is not well,
And well shall you perceive, how willingly
I will both hear and grant you your Requests.

Pemb. Then I, as one that am the Tongue of these
To found the Purposes of all their Hearts,
Both for my self, and them; but chief of all,
Your Safety; for the which, my self and them
Bend their best Studies; heartily request
The Infranchisement of Arthur, whose Restraint
Doth move the murmuring Lips of Discontent
To break into this dangerous Argument.
If what in Rest you have, in Right you hold,
Why then your Fears, which as they say, attend
The Steps of Wrong, should move you to mew up,
Your tender Kinman, and to choke his Days
With barbarous Ignorance, and deny his Youth
The rich Advantage of good Exercise.
That the Times Enemies may not have this
To grace Occasions: Let it be our Suit,
That you have bid us ask, his Liberty,
Which for our Goods we do no further ask,
Than, whereupon our Weal on you depending,
Counts it your Weal he have his Liberty.

Enter Hubert.

K. John. Let it be so; I do commit his Youth
To your Direction. Hubert, what News with you?

Pemb. This is the Man should do the bloody Deed:
He shew’d his Warrant to a Friend of mine.
The Image of a wicked heinous Fault

Lives
Lives in his Eye; that close Aspect of his
Does shew the Mood of a much troubled Breast,
And I do fearfully believe 'tis done,
What we so fear'd he had a Charge to do.

Sal. The Colour of the King doth come and go,
Between his Purpose and his Conscience,
Like Heralds 'twixt two dreadful Battels set:
His Passion is so ripe, it needs must break.

Pemb. And when it breaks, I fear will issue thence
The foul Corruption of a sweet Child's Death.

K. John. We cannot hold Mortality's strong Hand.
Good Lords, although my Will to give is living,
The Suit which you demand is gone, and dead.
He tells us Arthur is deceas'd to Night.

Sal. Indeed we fear'd his Sickness was past cure.

Pemb. Indeed we heard how near his Death he was;
Before the Child himself felt he was sick.
This must be answer'd either here or hence.

K. John. Why do you bend such solemn Brows on me?
Think you I hear the Shears of Deffiny?
Have I Commandment on the Pulse of Life?

Sal. It is apparent foul-play, and 'tis shame
That Greatness should so grossly offer it:
So thrive it in your Game, and so farewell.

Pemb. Stay yet, Lord Salisbury, I'll go with thee,
And find th'Inheritance of this poor Child,
His little Kingdom of a forced Grave.
That Blood which ow'd the Breath of all this Isle,
Three Foot of it doth hold; bad World the while,
This must not be thus born, this will break out
To all our Sorrows, and ere long I doubt. [Exeunt.

Enter Messenger.

K. John. They burn in Indignation; I repent:
There is no sure Foundation set on Blood;
No certain Life achiev'd by others Death. [Aside.
A fearful Eye thou haft; where is that Blood [To the Mel.
That I have seen inhabit in thosc Cheeks?
So foul a Sky clears not without a Storm;
Pour down thy Weather: How goes all in France?
Mef. From France to England never such a Power;  
For any Foreign Preparation,  
Was levy'd in the Body of a Land.  
The Copy of your Speed is learn'd by them:  
For when you should be told they do prepare,  
The Tidings come, that they are all arriv'd.

K. John. Oh where hath our Intelligence been drunk?  
Where hath it slept? Where is my Mother's Care?  
That such an Army should be drawn in France,  
And she not hear of it?

Mef. My Liege, her Ear  
Is stopp'd with Dust: The first of April dy'd  
You noble Mother; and, as I hear, my Lord,  
The Lady Constance in a Frenzie dy'd  
Three Days before; but this from Rumours Tongue  
Idely heard; if true, or false, I know not.

K. John. With-hold thy Speed, dreadful Occasion;  
O make a League with me, 'till I have pleas'd  
My discontented Peers. What? Mother dead?  
How wildly then walks my Estate in France?  
Under whose Conduct came those Powers of France,  
That thou for Truth giv't out are landed here?

Mef. Under the Dauphin.

Enter Bastard and Peter of Pomfret.

K. John. Thou hast made me giddy  
With these ill Tidings. Now, What says the World  
To your Proceedings? Do not seek to fluff  
My Head with more ill News, for it is full.  
Bast. But if you be afraid to hear the worst,  
Then let the worst unheard fall on your Head.

K. John. Bear with me, Cousin; for I was amaz'd  
Under the Tide; but now I breath again  
Aloft the Flood, and can give Audience  
To any Tongue, speak it of what it will.

Bast. How I have sped among the Clergy-men,  
The Sums I have collected shall express:  
But as I travelled hither through the Land,  
I find the People strangely fantastick;  
Poffeit with Rumours, full of idle Dreams,  
Not knowing what they fear, but full of Fear.
And here's a Prophet that I brought with me
From forth the Streets of Pomfret, whom I found
With many hundreds treading on his Heels:
To whom he sung in rude harsh sounding Rhimes,
That ere the next Ascension-Day at Noon,
Your Highness should deliver up your Crown.

K. John. Thou idle Dreamer, wherefore didst thou so?
Peter. Fore-knowing that the Truth will fall out so.
K. John. Hubert, away with him; imprison him,
And on that Day at Noon, whereon he says
I shall yield up my Crown, let him be hang'd.
Deliver him to Safety, and return,
For I must use thee. O my gentle Cousin,
Hearst thou the News abroad, who are arriv'd?

Bas. The French, my Lord; Mens Mouths are full of it:
Besides, I met Lord Bigot and Lord Salisbury,
With Eyes as red as new enkindled Fire,
And others more, going to seek the Grave
Of Arthur, whom they say is kill'd to Night,
On your Suggestion.

K. John. Gentle Kinsman, go
And thrust thy self into their Companies.
I have a Way to win their Loves again:
Bring them before me.

Bas. I will seek them out.
K. John. Nay, but make haste; the better Foot before:
O, let me have no Subjects Enemies,
When adverse Foreigners affright my Towns
With dreadful Pomp of stout Invasion.
Be Mercury, set Feathers to thy Heels,
And flie, like Thought, from them to me again.

Bas. The Spirit of the Time shall teach me Speed.

[Exit.

K. John. Spoke like a sprightly Noble Gentleman,
Go after him; for he perhaps shall need
Some Messenger betwixt me and the Peers,
And be thou he.

Me. With all my Heart, my Liege.

K. John. My Mother dead!

[Exit.
Enter
Enter Hubert.

Hub. My Lord, they say five Moons were seen to-night:
Four fixed, and the fifth did whirl about
The other four, in wondrous Motion.

K. John. Five Moons?

Hub. Old Men and Beldams, in the Streets
Do Prophecy upon it dangerously:
Young Arthur's Death is common in their Mouths,
And when they talk of him, they shake their Heads,
And whisper one another in the Ear.
And he that speaks, doth gripe the hearer's Wrist,
Whilst he that hears makes fearful Action
With wrinkled Brows, with Nods, with rolling Eyes.
I saw a Smith stand with his Hammer, thus,
The whilst his Iron did on th' Anvil cool,
With open Mouth swallowing a Taylor's News;
Who with his Shears, and Measure in his Hand,
Standing on Slippers, which his nimble Haste
Had hastily thrust upon contrary Feet,
Told of a many thousand warlike French,
That were embattled, and rank'd in Kent.
Another lean, unwash'd Artificer,
Cuts off his Tale, and talks of Arthur's Death.

K. John. Why seek'st thou to possess me with these Fears?
Why urgest thou so oft young Arthur's Death?
Thy Hand hath murdered him: I had a mighty Cause
To with him dead, but thou hast none to kill him.

Hub. Had none, my Lord? why, did you not provoke me?

K. John. It is the Curse of Kings, to be attended
By Slaves that take their Humours for a Warrant,
To break the bloody Houfe of Life,
And on the winking of Authority
To understand a Law; to know the Meaning
Of dangerous Majesty, when perchance it frowns
More upon Humour, than advis'd Respect.

Hub. Here is your Hand and Seal for what I did,

K. John. Oh, when the last Account 'twixt Heaven and
Is to be made, then shall this Hand and Seal [Earth
Witness against us to Damnation.

How
How oft the Sight of Means to do ill Deeds,
Make Deeds ill done? Hadst not thou been by,
A Fellow by the Hand of Nature mark'd,
Quoted, and sign'd to do a Deed of Shame,
This Murther had not come into my Mind.
But taking Note of thy abhorred Aspect,
Finding thee fit for bloody Villany,
Apt, liable to be employ'd in Danger,
I faintly broke with thee of Arthur's Death.
And thou, to be endeaRed to a King,
Made it no Conscience to destroy a Prince.

Hub. My Lord—

K. John. Hadst thou but shook thy Head, or made a Pause
When I spake darkly what I purposed:
Or turn'd an Eye of Doubt upon my Face;
As bid me tell my Tale in express Words,
Deep Shame had struck me dumb, made me break off,
And those thy Fears might have wrought Fears in me:
But thou didn't understand me by my Signs,
And didn't in Signs again parley with Sin,
Yea, without stop didn't let thy Heart consent,
And consequently thy rude Hand, to act
The Deed, which both our Tongues held vile to name,
Out of my Sight, and never see me more.
My Nobles leave me, and my State is bray'd,
Even at my Gates, with Ranks of foreign Powers;
Nay, in the Body of this fleshly Land,
This Kingdom, this Confine of Blood and Breath,
Hostility and civil Tumult reigns,
Between my Conscience, and my Cousin's Death.

Hub. Arm you against your other Enemies,
I'll make a Peace between your Soul, and you.
Young Arthur is alive: This Hand of mine
Is yet a Maiden, and an innocent Hand,
Not painted with the Crimson Spots of Blood:
Within this Bosom, never entred yet
The dreadful Motion of a murderous Thought,
And you have slander'd Nature in my Form,
Which howsoever rude exteriorly,
Is yet the Cover of a fairer Mind,
Then to be Eucher of an innocent Child.

K. John.
K. John. Doth Arthur live? O haste thee to the Peers,
Throw this Report on their incensed Rage,
And make them tame to their Obedience.
Forgive the Comment that my Passion made
Upon thy Feature, for my Rage was blind,
And foul Imaginary Eyes of Blood
Presented thee more hideous than thou art.
Oh, answer not, but to my Closet bring
The angry Lords, with all expedient Haste.
I conjure thee but slowly: Run more fast. [Exeunt.

SCENE III. A Prison.

Enter Arthur on the Walls.

Arthur. The Wall is high, and yet will I leap down;
Good Ground be pitiful, and hurt me not:
There's few or none do know me, if they did,
This Ship-Boy's Semblance hath disguis'd me quite.
I am afraid, and yet I'll venture it.
If I get down, and do not break my Limbs,
I'll find a thousand Shifts to get away;
As good to die, and go; as die, and stay. [Leaps down.
Oh me, my Uncle's Spirit is in these Stones:
Heav'n take my Soul, and England take my Bones. [Dies.

Enter Pembroke, Salisbury and Bigot.

Sal. Lords, I will meet him at St. Edmondbury;
It is our Safety, and we must embrace
This gentle Offer of the perilous time.

Pemb. Who brought that Letter from the Cardinal?

Sal. The Count Melun, a noble Lord of France,
Whose private with me of the Dauphin's Love,
Is much more general than these Lines import.

Bigot. To Morrow Morning let us meet him then:
Sal. Or rather then set forward, for 'twill be
Two long Days Journey, Lords, or e'er we meet.

Enter Bastard.

Bast. Once more to Day well met, distemper'd Lords,
The King by me requests your Presence straight.
Sal. The King hath dispossett himself of us;
We will not line his thin bestained Clake
With
of King John.

With our pure Honours: nor attend the Foot
That leaves the Print of Blood where-e'er it walks:
Return, and tell him so: We know the worst.

Bass. What e'er you think, good Words I think were best:
Sal. Our Griefs, and not our Manners, reason now.

Bass. But there is little Reason in your Grief,
Therefore were Reason you had Manners now.

Pemb. Sir, Sir, Impatience hath his Privilege.
Bass. 'Tis true, to hurt his Master, no Man else:
Sal. This is the Prison: What is he lies here?

Pemb. Oh Death, made proud with pure and princely
The Earth had not a hole to hide this Deed. [Beauty:
Sal. Murder, as hating what himself hath done,
Doth lay it open to urge on Revenge.

Bigot. Or when he doom'd this Beauty to the Grave;
Found it too precious princely for a Grave.

Sal. Sir Richard, what think you? Have you beheld,
Or have you read, or heard, or could you think?
Or do you almost think, although you see,
That you do see? Could Thought, without this Object,
Form such another? This is the very Top,
The Height, the Crest, or Crest unto the Crest
Of Murder's Arms; this is the bloodiest Shame,
The wildest Savagery, the vilest Streak
That ever wall-ey'd Wrath, or slaying Rage
Presented to the Tears of soft Remorse.

Pemb. All Murders past, do stand excus'd in this;
And this so sole, and so unmatchable,
Shall give a Holiness, a Purity,
To the yet unbegotten Sin of times;
And prove a deadly blood-shed, but a Jeft,
Examplied by this heinous Spectacle.

Bass. It is a damned and a bloody Work,
The graceless Action of a heavy Hand,
If that it be the Work of any Hand.

Sal. If that it be the Work of any Hand?
We had a kind of Light, what would ensue:
It is the Shameful Work of Hubert's Hand,
The Practice, and the Purpose of the King:
From whose Obedience I forbid my Soul,
Kneeling before this Ruin of sweet Life,
And breathing to this breathless Excellence,
The Incense of a Vow, a holy Vow:
Never to taste the Pleasures of the World,
Never to be infected with Delight,
Nor conversant with Ease and Idleness,
Till I have set a Glory to this Hand,
By giving it the Worship of Revenge.


Enter Hubert.

Hub. Lords, I am hot with haste, in seeking you;

Arthur doth live, the King hath sent for you.

Sal. Oh he is bold, and blushes not at Death;

Avant thou hateful Villain, get thee gone.

Hub. I am no Villain.

Sal. Must I rob the Law?

Bast. Your Sword is bright, Sir, put it up again.

Sal. Not till I sheath it in a Murderer’s Skin.

Hub. Stand back, Lord Salisbury, stand back, I say;

By Heav’n, I think my Sword’s as sharp as yours.

I would not have you, Lord, forget your self,

Nor tempt the Danger of my true Defence;

Left I, by marking of your Rage, forget

Your Worth, your Greatnes, and Nobility.

Biga. Out Dunghill, dar’st thou brave a Nobleman?

Hub. Not for my Life; but yet I dare defend

My innocent Life against an Emperor.

Sal. Thou art a Murderer.

Hub. Do not prove me so;

Yet I am none. Whole Tongue so’er speaks false,

Not truly speaks; who speaks not truly, lyes.

Pemb. Cut him to pieces.

Bast. Keep the Peace, I say.

Sal. Stand by, or I shall gaul you Faulconbridge.

Bast. Thou wert better gaul the Devil, Salisbury.

If thou but frown on me, or stir thy Foot,

Or teach thy haftly Spleen to do me Shame,

I’ll strike thee dead. Put up thy Sword betime,

Or I’ll so maul you, and your tostling-Iron,

That you shall think the Devil is come from Hell.
Bigot. What will you do, renowned Faulconbridge?

Second a Villain, and a Murderer?

Hub. Lord Bigot, I am none.

Bigot. Who kill'd this Prince?

Hub. 'Tis not an Hour since I left him well:

I honour'd him, I lov'd him, and will weep

My Date of Life out, for his sweet Life's Loss.

Sal. Trust not those cunning Waters of his Eyes;

For Villany is not without such Rheume;

And he, long traded in it, makes it seem

Like Rivers of Remorse and Innocency.

Away with me, all you whose Souls abhor

Th' uncleanly Savour of a Slaughter-House,

For I am stifled with the Smell of Sin.

Bigot. Away toward Bury, to the Dauphin there.

Pemb. There tell the King he may enquire us out.

[Exeunt Lords.

Baf. Here's a good World; knew you of this fair Work?

Beyond the infinite and boundless Reach of Mercy

(if thou didst this Deed of Death) art thou damn'd, Hubert.

Hub. Do but hear me, Sir.

Baf. Ha? I'll tell thee what,

Thou'rt damn'd as black— nay nothing is so black;

Thou art more deep damn'd than Prince Lucifer.

There is not yet so ugly a Fiend of Hell:

As thou shalt be, if thou didst kill this Child.

Hub. Upon my Soul.

Baf. If thou didst but confess

To this most cruel Act, do but despair,

And if thou want'st a Cord, the smallest Thread

That ever Spider twisted from her Womb

Will serve to strangle thee: A Rush will be a Beam

To hang thee on: Or wouldn't thou drown thy self,

Put but a little Water in a Spoon,

And it shall be as all the Ocean,

Enough to stifle such a Villain up.

I do suspect thee very grievously.

Hub. If I in Act, Consent, or Sin of Thought,

Be guilty of the stealing that sweet Breath,

Which was embosomed in this beauteous Clay,
Let Hell want Pains enough to torture me.
I left him well.

Baj. Go, bear him in thine Arms.
I am amaz'd methinks; and lose my Way
Among the Thorns and Dangers of this World.
How e'ase dost thou take all England up,
From forth this Morse of dead Royalty?
The Life, the Right, and Truth of all this Realm
Is fled to Heav'n, and England now is left
To rug and scramble, and to part by th' Teeth
The unow'd Interest of proud swelling State:
Now for the bare-pickt Bone of Majesty,
Doth dogged War bristle his angry Crest,
And sharleth in the gentle Eyes of Peace:
Now Powers from home, and Discontents at home
Meet in one Line: and vast Confusion waits,
As doth a Raven on a sick-fallen Beast,
The imminent Decay of wrested Pomp:
Now happy he, whose Cloak and Center can
Hold out this Tempest. Bear away that Child,
And follow me with speed; I'll to the King;
A thousand Busineses are brief at Hand,
And Heav'n it self doth frown upon the Land. [Exeunt.

ACT V. SCENE I.

Enter King John, Pandulph, and Attendants.

K. John. THUS I have yielded up into your Hand
The Circle of my Glory.

Pand. Take again
From this my Hand, as holding of the Pope,
Your Sovereign Greatness and Authority.

K. John. Now keep your holy Word, go meet the French,
And from his Holiness use all your Power
To stop their Marches 'fore we are enflam'd.
Our discontented Counties do revolt,
Our People quarrel with Obedience,

Swearing
Swearing Allegiance, and the love of Soul
To stranger-Blood, to foreign Royalty;
This Inundation of distemper'd Humour,
Refts by you only to be qualify'd.
Then pause not; for the present Time's so sick,
That present Med'cine must be minisfred.
Or Overthrow incurably infrues.

_ Pandy. _ It was my Breath that blew this Tempest up,
Upon your stubborn Usage of the Pope:
But since you are a gentle Convertite,
My Tongue shall hulf again this Storm of War,
And make fair Weather in your buffeting Land.
On this Ascension-Day, remember well,
Upon your Oath of Service to the Pope,
Go I to make the French lay down their Arms. [Exit.

_ K. John. _ Is this Ascension-Day? Did not the Prophet
Say, that before Ascension-Day at Noon,
My Crown I should give off? even so I have:
I did suppose it should be on Constrain,
But, Heav'n be thank'd, it is but voluntary.

Enter Bastard.

_ Bast. _ All Kent hath yielded, nothing there holds out
But Dover-Castle: London hath receiv'd,
Like a kind Host, the Dauphin and his Powers.
Your Nobles will not hear you, but are gone
To offer Service to your Enemy;
And wild Amazement hurries up and down
The little Number of your doubtful Friends.

_ K. John. _ Would not my Lords return to me again,
After they heard young Arthur was alive?

_ Bast. _ They found him dead, and cast into the Streets;
An empty Casket, where the Jewel of Life
By some damnd Hand was robb'd and ta'en away.

_ K. John. _ That Villain Hubert told me he did live.

_ Bast. _ So on my Soul he did, for ought he knew:
But wherefore do you droop? Why look you sad?
Be great in Act, as you have been in Thought:
Let not the World see Fear and sad Diffrruff
Gover the Motion of a Kingly Eye;
Be stirring as the time, be Fire with Fire;

_ K. 4 _ Threaten
Threaten the Threatner, and out-face the Brow
Of bragging Horror: So shall inferior Eyes,
That borrow their Behaviours from the Great,
Grow great by your Example, and put on
The dauntless Spirit of Resolution.
Away, and glitter like the God of War
When he intendeth to become the Field;
Shew Boldness and aspiring Confidence.
What, shall they seek the Lion in his Den;
And fright him there? and make him tremble there?
Oh let it not be said: Forage, and run
To meet Displeasure farther from the Doors,
And grapple with him ere he come to night.

K. John. The Legate of the Pope hath been with me,
And I have made a happy Peace with him;
And he hath promised to dismiss the Powers
Led by the Dauphin.

Bast. Oh inglorious League:
Shall we upon the footing of our Land,
Send fair-play-Orders and make Compromise,
Insinuation, Parly, and base Truce
To Arms invasive? Shall a beardless Boy,
A cockred-silken Wanton brave our Fields,
And feed his Spirit in a war-like Soil,
Mocking the Air with Colours idely spread,
And find no check? Let us, my Liege, to Arms:
Perchance the Cardinal cannot make your Peace;
Or if he do, let it at least be said
They saw we had a purpose of defence.

K. John. Have thou the ordering of this present time.

Bast. Away then with good Courage; yet I know
Our Party may well meet a prouder Foe.

SCENE II.

Enter, in Arms, Lewis, Salisbury, Melun, Pembroke,
Bigot, and Soldiers.

Lewis. My Lord Melun, let this be copied out,
And keep it safe for our remembrance:
Return the President to these Lords again;
That having our fair Order written down,
Both they and we, perusing o'er these Notes;
May know wherefore we took the Sacrament,
And keep our Faiths firm and inviolable.

Sal. Upon our sides it never shall be broken.

And, noble Dauphin, albeit we swear
A voluntary Zeal, and an un-urg'd Faith
To your Proceedings; yet believe me, Prince,
I am not glad that such a Sore of Time
Should seek a Plaister by contemn'd Revolt,
And heal the inveterate Canker of one Wound,
By making many: Oh it grieves my Soul,
That I must draw this Metal from my Side
To be a Widow-maker: Oh, and there
Where honourable Rescue, and Defence,
Cries out upon the Name of Salisbury.

But such is the Infection of the time,
That for the Health and Physick of our Right;
We cannot deal but with the very Hand
Of stern Injustice, and confused Wrongs;
And is't not Pity, oh my grieved Friends,
That we, the Sons and Children of this Isle,
Were born to see so bad an Hour as this,
Wherein we step after a Stranger, march
Upon her gentle Bosom, and fill up
Her Enemies Ranks? I must withdraw and weep
Upon the spot of this enforced Cause,
To grace the Gentry of a Land remote,
And follow unacquainted Colours here:
What here? O Nation that thou couldst remove;
That Neptune's Arms who clippeth thee about,
Would bear thee from the knowledge of thy self,
And cripple thee unto a Pagan Shore,
Where these two Christion Armies might combine
The Blood of Malice, in a vein of League,
And not to spend it so un-neighbourly.

Lewis. A noble Temper dost thou shew in this,
And great Affections wrestling in thy Bosom
Doth make an Earthquake of Nobility,

K 5
Oh what a noble Combat haft thou fought,
Between Compulsion, and a brave Respect:
Let me wipe off this honourable Dew,
That silverly doth progress on thy Cheeks:
My Heart hath melted at a Lady's Tears,
Being an ordinary Inundation:
But this Effusion of such Manly Drops,
This Shower blown up by tempest of the Soul,
Startles mine Eyes, and makes me more amaz'd
Than had I seen the vaulty top of Heav'n
Figur'd quite o'er with burning Meteors.
Lift up thy Brow, renowned Salisbury,
And with a great Heart heave away this Storm:
Commend these Waters to those Baby-Eyes,
That never saw the Giant-World enraged,
Nor met with Fortune, other than at Feasts,
Full warm of Blood, of Mirth, of Goslimping,
Come, come, for thou shalt thrust thy Hand as deep
Into the Purse of rich Prosperity
As Lewis himself; so, Nobles shall you all,
That knit your Sinews to the strength of mine.

Enter Pandulpho.

And even there, methinks an Angel spake,
Look where the holy Legate comes apace,
To give us Warrant from the Hand of Heav'n,
And on our Actions set the Name of Right
With holy Breath.

Pand. Hail, noble Prince of France.

The next in this: King John hath reconcil'd
Himself to Rome, his Spirit is come in,
That so stood out against the holy Church,
That great Metropolis and See of Rome:
Therefore thy threatening Colours now wind up,
And tame the Savage Spirit of wild War,
That like a Lion fostered up at Hand,
It may lyce gently at the foot of Peace,
And be no further harmful than in shew:

Lewis. Your Grace shall pardon me, I will not back;
I am too high-born to be propertied,
To be a secondary at Controul,
Or useful Serving-man, and Instrument
To any Sovereign State throughout the World:
Your Breath first kindled the dead Coal of Wars,
Between this chastis’d Kingdom and my self,
And brought in Matter that should feed this Fire:
And now ’tis far too huge to be blown out
With that same weak Wind which enkindled it:
You taught me how to know the face of Right,
Acquainted me with Interest to this Land,
Yea thrust this Enterprize into my Heart,
And come ye now to tell me John hath made
His Peace with Rome? What is that Peace to me?
I, by the Honour of my Marriage-bed,
After young Arthur, claim this Land for mine;
And now it is half conquer’d, must I back,
Because that John hath made his Peace with Rome?
Am I Rome’s Slave? What Penny hath Rome born?
What Men provided? What Munition sent
To under-prop this Action? Is’t not I,
That under-go this Charge? Who else but I,
And such as to my Claim are liable,
Sweat in this Business, and maintain this War?
Have I not heard these Islanders shout out
Vive le Roy, as I have bank’d their Towns?
Have I not here the best Cards for the Game
To win this easy Match, plaid for a Crown?
And shall I now give o’er the yielded Set?
No, no, on my Soul it shall never be said.

Pand. You look but on the outside of this Work:
Lewis. Outside or inside, I will not return,
’Till my Attempt so much be glorified,
As to my ample Hope was promised,
Before I drew this gallant head of War,
And call’d these fiery Spirits from the World
To out-look Conquest, and to win Renown
Even in the Jaws of Danger, and of Death: [Trumpet sounds.
What lofty Trumpet thus doth summon us?

Enter Bastard.

Bast. According to the fair-play of the World,
Let me have Audience: I am sent to speak:
My holy Lord of Milain, from the King
I come, to learn how you have dealt for him:
And as you answer, I do know the Scope
And warrant limited unto my Tongue.

Pand. The Dauphin is too willful, opposite,
And will not temporize with my Entreaties:
He flatly says, he'll not lay down his Arms.

Baf. By all the Blood that ever Fury breath'd,
The Youth says well. Now hear our English King,
For thus his Royalty doth speak in me:
He is prepar'd, and Reason too he should.
This apish and unmannery Approach,
This harness'd Mask, and unadvised Revel,
This unheard Sawcines and boyish Troops,
The King doth smile at, and is well-prepar'd
To whip this dwarfish War, these Pigmy Arms
From out the Circle of his Territories.
That Hand which had the Strength, even at your Door,
To cudgel you, and make you take the hatch,
To dive like Buckets in concealed Wells,
To crouch in Litter of your Stable Planks,
To lye like Pawns, lock'd up in Cheifs and Trunks,
To herd with Swine, to seek sweet Safety out.
In Vaults and Prisons, and to thrill and shake
Even at the crying of our Nation's Crow,
Thinking his Voice an armed English Man;
Shall that victorious Hand be feebled here,
That in your Chambers gave you Chastisement?
No; know the gallant Monarch is in Arms,
And like an Eagle, o'er his Aiery tow's,
To fouze Annoyance that comes near his Nest;
And you degenerate, you ingrate Revolts,
You bloody Nero's ripping up the Womb
Of your dear Mother-England, blush for shame:
For your own Ladies, and pale-vifag'd Maids,
Like Amazons, come tripping after Drums:
Their Thimbles into armed Gantlets change,
Their Needles to Lances, and their gentle Hearts
To fierce and bloody Inclination.

Lewis. There end thy Brave, and turn thy Face in Peace,
We grant thou canst not cold us; fare thee well.
We hold our time too precious to be spent
With such a Babler.
   Pand. Give me leave to speak.
   Bafl. No, I will speak.
   Lewis. We will attend to neither:
Strike up the Drums, and let the Tongue of War
Plead for our Interest, and our being here.
   Bafl. Indeed your Drums being beaten, will cry out;
And so shall you, being beaten; do but start
An echo with the Clamour of thy Drum,
And even at hand, a Drum is ready brac'd,
That shall reverberate all, as loud as thine.
Sound but another, and another shall,
As loud as thine, rattle the Welkin's Ear,
And mock the deep-mouth'd Thunder; for at hand
(Not trusting to this halting Legate here,
Whom he hath us'd rather for sport than need)
Is warlike John; and in his Forehead sits
A bare-ribb'd Death, whose Office is this Day
To feast upon whole thousands of the French.
   Lewis. Strike up our Drums, to find this Danger out.
   Bafl. And thou shalt find it, Dauphin, do not doubt.

[Exeunt]

**Scene III.**

**Alarms. Enter King John and Hubert.**

**K. John.** How goes the Day with us? Oh tell me, Hubert.
**Hub.** Badly, I fear; how fares your Majesty?
**K. John.** This Fever that hath troubled me so long,
Lyes heavy on me: oh, my Heart is sick.

**Enter a Messenger.**

**Meff.** My Lord, your valiant Kinman, Faulconbridge,
Desires your Majesty to leave the Field,
And send him word by me, which way you go.
**K. John.** Tell him toward Swinsted, to the Abby there.
**Meff.** Be of good Comfort: For the great Supply,
That was expected by the Dauphin here,
Are wrack'd three Nights ago on Goodwin Sands.

*This*
The Life and Death

This News was brought to Richard but even now,
The French fight coldly, and retire themselves.

K. John. Ay me, this Tyrant Feaver burns me up,
And will not let me welcome this good News.
Set on toward Swinfield; to my Litter straight,
Weakness possesth me, and I am faint. [Exit.

SCENE IV.

Enter Salisbury, Pembroke and Bigot.

Sal. I did not think the King so floz'd with Friends.
Pemb. Up once again; put Spirit in the French:
If they miscarry, we miscarry too.

Sal. That mif-begotten Devil, Faulconbridge,
In spight of spight, alone upholds the Day.
Pemb. They say King John sore sick, hath left the Field.
Enter Melun wounded.

Melun. Lead me to the Revolts of England here.
Sal. When we were happy, we had other Names.
Pemb. It is the Count Melun.
Sal. Wounded to Death.

Melun. Fly, noble English, you are bought and sold;
Unthread the rude Eye of Rebellion,
And welcome home again disca-ed Faith,
Seek out King John, and fall before his Feet:
For if the French be Lords of this loud Day,
He means to recompence the Pains you take,
By cutting off your Heads; thus hath he sworn,
And I with him, and many more with me,
Upon the Altar at St. Edmondsbury,
Even on that Altar, where we swore to you
Dear Amity, and everlasting Love.

Sal. May this be possible! May this be true?

Melun. Have I not hideous Death within my View,
Retaining but a quantity of Life,
Which bleeds away, even as a Form of Wax
Resolveth from his Figure 'gainst the Fire?
What in the World should make me now deceive,
Since I must loie the use of all Deceit?
Why should I then be faise, since it is true

That
That I must die here, and live hence, by Truth?  
I say again, if Lewis do win the Day,  
He is forsworn if e'er those Eyes of yours  
Behold another Day, break in the East:  
But even this Night, whose black contagious Breath  
Already smokes about the burning Creft  
Of the old, feeble, and day-wearied Sun,  
Even this ill Night, your breathing shall expire,  
Paying the Fine of rated Treachery,  
Even with a treacherous Fine of all your Lives;  
If Lewis, by your assistance win the Day.  
Commend me to one Hubert, with your King:  
The Love of him, and this Respect besides,  
For that my Grandire was an Englishman,  
Awakes my Confience to confess all this.  
In lieu whereof, I pray you bear me hence  
From forth the noise and rumour of the Field;  
Where I may think the remnant of my Thoughts  
In peace; and part this Body and my Soul,  
With Contemplation, and devout Desires,  
Sal. We do believe thee, and beseech my Soul,  
But I do love the Favour, and the Form  
Of this most fair Occasion, by the which  
We will untread the steps of damned flight,  
And like a bated and retired Flood,  
Leaving our Rankness, and irregular Course,  
Stoop low within those Bounds we have o'er-look'd,  
And calmly run on in Obedience,  
Even to our Ocean, to our great King John.  
My Arm shall give thee help to bear thee hence,  
For I do see the cruel Pangs of Death  
Right in thiae Eye. Away, my Friends, new flight;  
And happy Newness that intends old Right.  
[Exeunt]

SCENE V.

Enter Lewis and his Train.

Lewis. The Sun of Heav'n, methought, was loth to set;  
Bat flaid, and made the Western Welkin blush;  
When th' English measure backward their own Ground
The Life and Death

In faint Retire: Oh bravely came we off,
When with a Volley of our needles Shot,
After such bloody Toil, we bid good Night,
And wound our tottering Colours clearly up;
Last in the Field, and almost Lords of it.

Enter a Messenger.

Mess. Where is my Prince, the Dauphin?
Lewis. Here, what News?

Mess. The Count Melun is slain; the English Lords
By his Perswasion are at length fall'n off,
And your Supply, which you have wish'd so long,
Are cast away, and sunk on Goodwin Sands.

Lewis. Ah foul shrewd News. Behrew thy very Heart;
I did not think to be so sad to Night
As this hath made me. Who was he that said
King John did fly an Hour or two before
The trembling Night did part our weary Powers?

Mess. Who ever spoke it, it is true, my Lord.

Lewis. Well; keep good Quarter, and good care to Night;
The Day shall not be up so soon as I,
To try the fair Adventure of to-Morrow. [Exit.

SCENE VI.

Enter Bastard and Hubert severally.

Hub. Who's there? Speak, hoa, speak quickly, or I shoot.
Bast. A Friend. What art thou?
Hub. Of the part of England.
Bast. Whither dost thou go?
Hub. What's that to thee?

Why may not I demand of thine Affairs,
As well as thou of mine?

Bast. Hubert, I think.

Hub. Thou hast a perfect Thought:
I will upon all Hazards well believe
Thou art my Friend, that know'st my Tongue so well:
Who art thou?

Bast. Who thou wilt; and if thou please
Thou may'st be-friend me so much, as to think
I come one way of the Plantagenet.

Hub
of King John.

Hub. Unkind Remembrance; thou, and endless Night;
Have done me flame; brave Soldier, pardon me,
That any accent breaking from thy Tongue,
Should scape the true acquaintance of mine Ear.

Bafl. Come, come; sans complement, what News abroad?

Hub. Why here walk I, in the black Brow of Night,
To find you out.

Bafl. Brief then: and what's the News?

Hub. O my sweet Sir, News fitting to the Night;
Black, fearful, comfortless, and horrible.

Bafl. Show me the very Wound of this ill News,
I am no Woman, I'll not swoon at it.

Hub. The King I fear is poison'd by a Monk,
I left him almost speechless, and broke out
To acquaint you with this Evil, that you might
The better arm you to the sudden time,
Than if you had at leisure known of this.

Bafl. How did he take it? Who did taste to him?

Hub. A Monk, I tell you, a resolved Villain,
Whose Bowels suddenly burst out; the King
Yet speaks, and peradventure may recover.

Bafl. Who didst thou leave to tend his Majesty?

Hub. Why, know you not? The Lords are all come back,
And brought Prince Henry in their Company,
At whose request the King hath pardon'd them,
And they are all about his Majesty.

Bafl. With-hold thine Indignation, mighty Heav'n;
And tempt us not to bear above our Power.
I'll tell thee, Hubert, half my Power this Night
Passing these Flats, are taken by the Tide,
These Lincoln-Washes have devoured them;
My self, well mounted, have escap'd.
Away before: Conduct me to the King.
I doubt he will be dead, or e'er I come. 

[Exeunt]

SCENE VII.

Enter Prince Henry, Salisbury and Bigot.

Henry. It is too late, the Life of all his Blood
Is touch'd corruptibly; and his pure Brain,
The Life and Death

Which some suppose the Soul’s frail dwelling House,
Doth, by the idle Comments that it makes,
Foretel the ending of Mortality.

Enter Pembroke.

Pemb. His Highness yet doth speak, and holds belief,
That being brought into the open Air,
It would allay the burning quality
Of that fell Poison which assaileth him.

Henry. Let him be brought into the Orchard here;
Doth he still rage?

Pemb. He is more patient
Than when you left him; even now he sung.

Henry. Oh vanity of Sickness! fierce Extremes
In their contiguity will not fell themselves.
Death having prey’d upon the outward Parts
Leaves them invisible, and his Siege is now
Against the Mind, the which he pricks and wounds
With many Legions of strange Fantasies,
Which in their throng and press to that last hold,
Confound themselves. ’Tis strange that Death should sing:
I am the Cygnet to this pale faint Swan;
Who chants a doleful Hymn to his own Death,
And from the Organ-pipe of Frailty sings
His Soul and Body to their lastig Rest.

Sal. Be of good comfort, Prince, for you are born
To set a Form upon that indigifit
Which he hath left so shapeless and so rude.

King John brought in.

K. John. I marry now my Soul hath Elbow-room,
It would not out at Windows, nor at Doors,
There is so hot a Summer in my Bosom,
That all my Bowels crumble up to Dust:
I am a scribbled Form drawn with a Pen,
Upon a Parchment, and against this Fire
Do I shrink up.

Henry. How fares your Majesty?

K. John. Poison’d, ill Fare: Dead, forlook, cast off,
And none of you will bid the Winter come
To thrust his Icy Fingers in my Maw;
Nor let my Kingdoms Rivers take their course
Through my burn’d Bosom: Nor intreat the North
To make his bleak Winds kiss my parched Lips,
And comfort me with cold. I do not ask you much,
I beg cold Comfort; and you are so straight
And so ungrateful, you deny me that.

Henry. Oh that there were some Virtue in my Tears;
That might relieve you.

K. John. The Salt of them is hot.
Within me is a Hell, and there the Poison
Is, as a Fiend, confin'd to tyrannize,
Or unreprievable condemned Blood.

Enter Baslard.

Bast. Oh, I am scalded with my violent Motion
And Spleen of speed to see your Majesty.

K. John. Oh Cousin, thou art come to set mine Eye:
The tackle of my Heart is crackt and burnt,
And turned to one Thread, one little Hair:
My Heart hath one poor String to lay it by,
Which holds but 'till thy News be uttered,
And then all this thou feest, is but a Clod,
And module of confounded Royalty.

Bast. The Dauphin is preparing hitherward,
Were Heav'n he knows how we shall answer him.
For in a Night the best Part of my Power,
As I upon advantage did remove,
Were in the Washes all, unwarily,
Devoured by the unexpected Flood. [The King dies:

Sal. You breath these dead News in as dead an Ear:
My Liege, my Lord; but now a King, now thus.

Henry. Even so must I run on, and even so stop.
What surety of the World, what hope, what stay,
When this was now a King, and now is Clay?

Bast. Art thou gone so? I do but stay behind
To do the Office for thee, of Revenge,
And then my Soul shall wait on thee to Heav'n,
As it on Earth hath been thy Servant still.
Now, now you Stars, that move in your right Spheres,
Where be your Powers? Shew now your mended Faiths,
And instantly return with me again,
To push Destitution, and perpetual Shame
Out of the weak Door of our fainting Land:

Straight
Straight let us seek, or straight we shall be sought;
The Dauphin rages at our very Heels.

Sal. It seems you know not then so much as we:
The Cardinal Pandulph is within at rest,
Who half an hour since came from the Dauphin,
And brings from him such offers of our peace,
As we with Honour and Respect may take,
With purpose presently to leave this War.

Baf. He will the rather do it, when he sees
Our selves well finew'd to our Defence.

Sal. Nay, 'tis in a manner done already,
For many Carriages he hath dispatch'd
To the Sea-side, and put his Cause and Quarrel
To the disposing of the Cardinal,
With whom your self, my self, and other Lords,
If you think meet, this Afternoon will post,
To consummate this business happily.

Baf. Let it be so; and you, my noble Prince,
With other Princes that may best be spare'd,
Shall wait upon your Father's Funeral.

Henry. At Worcester must his Body be interr'd,
For so he will'd it.

Baf. Thither shall it then,
And happily may your sweet self put on
The lineal State and glory of the Land,
To whom with all Submission on my Knee,
I do bequeath my faithful Services,
And true Submission everlastingly.

Sal. And the like tender of our Love we make,
To rest without a spot for evermore.

Hen. I have a kind Soul that would give you Thanks,
And knows not how to do it but with Tears.

Baf. Oh let us pay the Time but needful Wo,
Since it hath been before-hand with our Grieves.
This England never did, nor never shall
Lye at the proud Foot of a Conqueror,
But when it first did help to wound it self.
Now, these her Princes are come home again,
Come the three Corners of the World in Arms,
And we shall shock them: Nought shall make us rue,
If England to it self do rest but true.  

[Exeunt omnes.]
THE LIFE AND DEATH OF King Richard II.

Printed in the YEAR MDCCXIV.
Dramatis Personæ.

**KING Richard the Second.**
Duke of York,
John of Gaunt, Duke of
Lancaster,
Bullingbrooke. Son to John of Gaunt, afterwards King Henry
the Fourth.

Aumerle, Son to the Duke of York.
Mowbray, Duke of Norfolk.
Earl of Salisbury.

Bushy,
Bagot, Servants to King Richard.
Green,

Earl of Northumberland,
Percy, Son to Northumberland,

Rofs,
Willoughby,
Bishop of Carlisle,
Sir Stephen Scroop,
Fitzwater,

Surry,
Abbot of Westminster,
Sir Pierce of Exton.

Queen to King Richard.
Duchess of Gloucester.
Duchess of York.
Ladies attending on the Queen.

Two Gardiners, Keeper, Messenger and other Attendants.

SCENE, ENGLAND.
Enter King Richard, John of Gaunt, with other Nobles and Attendants.

KING RICHARD.

Old John of Gaunt, time honour'd Lancaster,
Haft thou, according to thy Oath and Bond,
Brought hither Henry Hereford thy bold Son,
Here to make good the boisterous late Appeal,
Which then our Leasure would not let us hear,
Against the Duke of Norfolk, Thomas Mowbray?
Gaunt. I have, my Liege.
K. Rich. Tell me moreover, haft thou founded him,
The Life and Death

If the appeal the Duke on ancient Malice,
Or worthily, as a good Subject should,
On some known ground of Treachery in him?

Gaut. As near as I could sift him on that Argument,
On some apparent Danger seen in him
Aim'd at your Highness, no inveterate Malice.

K. Rich. Then call them to our Presence, Face to Face,
And frowning Brow to Brow, our selves will hear
Th' Accuser, and the Accused freely speak:
High stomach'd are they both, and full of Ire,
In Rage, dear as the Sea; hasty as Fire.

Enter Bullingbroke and Mowbray.

Bulling. Many Years of happy Days besal
My gracious Sovereign, my most loving Liege.

Morb. Each Day still better others Happines;
Until the Heav'n's envying Earth's good Hap,
Add an immortal Title to your Crown.

K. Rich. We thank you both, yet one but flatters us,
As well appeareth by the Cause you come;
Namely, to appeal each other of high Treason.
Cousin of Hereford, what dost thou object
Against the Duke of Norfolk, Thomas Mowbray?

Bulling. First Heav'n be the Record to my Speech,
In the Devotions of a Subject's Love,
Tendring the precious Safety of my Prince,
And free from other misbegotten Hate,
Come I Appealant to this Princely Presence,
Now Thomas Mowbray do I turn to thee,
And mark my greeting well; for what I speak,
My Body shall make good upon this Earth,
Or my divine Soul answer it in Heav'n.

Thou art a Traitor and a Miscreant;
Too good to be so, and too bad to live.
Since the more fair and glorious is the Sky,
The uglier seem the Clouds that in it fly;
Once more, the more to aggravate the Note,
With a foul Traitor's Name fluff I thy Throat,
And wish, to please my Sovereign, ere I move,
What my Tongue speaks, my right drawn Sword may prove.

Morb. Let not my cool Words here accuse my Zeal.
of King Richard II.

Tis not the Trial of a Woman's War,
The bitter Clamour of too eager Tongues,
Can arbitrate this Cause betwixt us twain;
The Blood is hot that must be cool'd for this.
Yet can I not of such tame Patience boast,
As to be hush'd, and nought at all to say.
First the fair Reverence of your Highness curbs me,
From giving Reins and Spurs to my free Speech,
Which else would post, until it had return'd
These Terms of Treason doubly down his Throat.
Setting aside his high Blood's Royalty,
And let him be no Kinsman to my Liege,
I do defie him, and I spit at him,
Call him a slanderous Coward, and a Villain;
Which to maintain, I would allow him odds,
And meet him, were I ty'd to run a-foot
Even to the frozen Ridges of the Alps,
Or any other Ground inhabitable,
Where-ever Englishman durst let his Foot;
Mean time, let this defend my Loyalty,
By all my Hopes most fallly doth he lie.

Bulling. Pale trembling Coward, there I throw my Gage,
Disclaiming here the Kindred of a King,
And lay aside my high Blood's Royalty,
Which Fear, not Reverence, makes thee to except;
If guilty Dread hath left thee so much Strength,
As to take up mine Honour's Pawn, then stoop.
By that and all the Rights of Knighthood else,
Will I make good against thee Arm to Arm,
What have I spoken, or thou canst devise.

Mowbray, I take it up, and by that Sword I swear,
which gently laid my Knighthood on my Shoulder,
I'll answer thee in any fair Degree,
Or Chivalrous design of knightly Trial;
And when I mount, alive may I not light,
If I be Traitor, or unjustly fight.

K. Rich. What doth our Cousin lay to Mowbray's Charge?
It must be great that can inherit us
So much as of a Thought of Ill in him.

Bulling. Look what I said, my Life shall prove it true.
The Life and Death

That Mowbray hath receiv'd eight thousand Nobles,
In name of Lendings for your Highness Soldiers,
The which he hath detain'd for lewd Imployments;
Like a false Traitor and injurious Villain;
Besides, I say, and will in Battel prove,
Or here, or elsewhere, to the furthest Verge
That ever was survey'd by English Eye;
That all the Treasun for these eighteen Years,
Comploated and contriv'd in this Land,
Fetch from false Mowbray their first Head and Spring;
Further I say, and further will maintain
Upon his bad Life, to make all this good,
That he did plot the Duke of Gloucester's Death,
Suggest his soon believing Adversaries,
And consequently, like a Traitor Coward,
Slid out his innocent Soul through Streams of Blood;
Which Blood, like sacrificing Abel's, cries,
Even from the tongueless Caverns of the Earth,
To me for Justice, and rough Chastisement;
And by the glorious worth of my Descent,
This Arm shall do it, or this Life be spent.


Thomas of Norfolk, what say'st thou to this?

Mowb. O let my Sovereign turn away his Face,
And bid his Ears a little while be deaf,
Till I have told this Slender of his Blood,
How God and good Men hate so foul a Liar.

K. Rich. Mowbray, impartial are our Eyes and Ears.
Were he my Brother, nay, our Kingdom's Heir,
As he is but my Father's Brother's Son;
Now by my Scepter's awe, I make a Vow,
Such neighbour-nearness to our sacred Blood,
Should nothing privilege him, nor partialize
The unstooping Firmness of my upright Soul.
He is our Subject. Mowbray, so art thou,
Free Speech and fears I to thee allow.

Mowb. Then. Bullying broke, as low as to thy Heart,
Through the false Passage of thy Throat. thou liest
Three parts of that Receipt I had for Callice
Disburst I to his Higness Soldiers;
The other part referv'd I by content,
For that my Sovereign Liege was in my Debt;
Upon remainder of a dear Account,
Since last I went to France to fetch his Queen:
Now swallow down that Lie. For Gloucester's Death,
I new him not, but to mine own Disgrace,
Neglected my sworn Duty in that Cause.
For you, my noble Lord of Lancaster,
The honourable Father to my Foe,
Once I did lay an Ambush for your Life;
A Trespass that doth vex my grieved Soul;
But ere I last receiv'd the Sacrament,
I did confess it, and exactly begg'd
Your Grace's Pardon; and I hope I had i
This is my Fault; as for the rest appeal'd,
It issues from the Rancor of a Villain;
A Recreant and most degenerate Traitor,
Which in my self I boldly will defend,
And interchangeably hurl down my Gage
Upon this overweening Traitor's Foot,
To prove my self a loyal Gentleman,
Even in the best Blood chamber'd in his Bosom.
In haste whereof most heartily I pray
Your Highness to assign our Trial-Day.

K. Rich. Wrath-kindled Gentlemen, be rul'd by me;
Let's purge this Choler without letting Blood:
This we prescribe, though no Physician.
Deep Malice makes too deep Incision.
Forget, forgive, conclude and be agreed,
Our Doctors say, this is no time to bleed.
Good Uncle, let this end where it begun,
We'll calm the Duke of Norfolk, you your Son:

Gaunt. To be a Make-peace shall become my Age;
Throw down, my Son, the Duke of Norfolk's Gage.

K. Rich. And, Norfolk, throw down his.
Gaunt. When Harry, when? Obedience bids,
Obedience bids, I should not bid again.

K. Rich. Norfolk, throw down, we bid; there is no boot.
Memb. My self I throw, dread Sovereign, at thy Foot.

L. 2. My
My Life thou shalt command, but not my Shame;
The one my Duty owes; but my fair Name,
Despight of Death that lives upon my Grave,
To dark Dishonours use, thou shalt not have.
I am disgrach'd, impeach'd, and baffled here,
Pierc'd to the Soul, with Slanders venom'd Spear.
The which no Blame can cure, but his Heart Blood
Which breath'd this Poison.

K. Rich. Rage must be withstood:
Give me his Gage: Lions make Leopards tame.

Mowb. Yea, but not change his Spots: Take but my Shame;
And I resign my Gage. My dear, dear Lord,
The purest Treasures mortal times afford,
Is spotles Reputation; that away,
Men are but gilded Loam, or painted Clay.
A Jewel in a ten-times barr'd up Chest,
Is a bold Spirit in a Loyal Breast,
Mine Honour is my Life; both grow in one;
Take Honour from me, and my Life is done.
Then, dear my Liege, mine Honour let me try,
In that I live, and for that will I die.

K. Rich. Cousin, throw down your Gage; do you begin.

Bulling. Oh Heav'n defend my Soul from such foul Sin,
Shall I seem Crest-fal'n in my Father's Sight,
Or with pale beggar'd Fear impeach my hight
Before this out-dar'd Baffard? Ere my Tongue
Shall wound my Honour with such feeble Wrong,
Or sound to bate a Parle, my Teeth shall tear
The flavius Motive of recanting Fear,
And spirit bleeding in his high Disgrace,
Where Shame doth harbour, even in Mombray's Face.

[Exeunt Gaunt.

K. Rich. We were not born to sue, but to command,
Which since we cannot do to make you Friends,
Be ready, as your Lives shall answer it,
At Coventry, upon Saint Lambert's Day;
There shall your Swords and Lances arbitrate
The swelling Difference of your settled Hate:
Since we cannot atone you, you shall see
Justice decide the Victor's Chivalry.
of King Richard II. 245

Lord Marshal, command our Officers at Arms,
Be ready to direct these home Alarms. [Exeunt.

SCENE II.

Enter Gaunt and Duchess of Gloucester.

Gaunt. Alas, the part I had in Gloucester's Blood,
Doth more solicit me than your Exclamations,
To stir against the Butchers of his Life.
But since Correction lyeth in those Hands
Which made the Fault that we cannot correct,
Put we our Quarrel to the Will of Heav'n;
Who when they see the Hours ripe on Earth,
Will rain hot Vengeance on Offenders' Heads.

Duchess. Finds Brotherhood in thee no sharper Spur
Nath Love in thy old Blood no living Fire?
Edward's seven Sons, whereof thy self art one,
Were as seven Vials of his sacred Blood;
Or seven fair Branches springing from one Root:
Some of those seven are dry'd by Nature's Course;
Some of those Branches by the Definitive cut:
But Thomas, my dear Lord, my Life, my Gloucester;
One Vial full of Edward's sacred Blood,
One flourishing Branch of his most Royal Root,
Is crack'd, and all the precious Liquor spilt;
Is hackt down, and his Summer Leaves all faded
By Envy's Hand, and Murder's Bloody Axe.
Ah Gaunt! his Blood was thine; that Bed, that Womb,
That Mettle, that self-Mould that fashion'd thee,
Made him a Man; and though thou liv'st and breath'st,
Yet art thou slain in him; thou dost consent
In some large Measure to thy Father's Death;
In that thou seest thy wretched Brother die,
Who was the Model of thy Father's Life.
Call it not Patience, Gaunt, it is Despair;
In suffering thus thy Brother to be slaughter'd,
Thou shew'st the naked Pathway to thy Life,
Teaching stern Murther how to butcher thee.
That which in mean Men, we entitle Patience,
Is pale cold Cowardice in noble Breasts.

L 3

What
What shall I say? to safeguard thine own Life,
The best way is to venge my Gloster's Death.

_Gaunt._ Heav'n's is the Quarrel; for Heav'n's Substitute,
His Deputy anointed in his Sigh,
Hath caus'd his Death; the which if wrongfully
Let Heav'n revenge, for I may never lift
An angry Arm against his Minister.

_Dutch._ Where then, alas, may I complain my self?

_Gaunt._ To Heav'n, the Widow's Champion and Defence.

_Dutch._ Why then I will: Farewel, old Gaunt;
Thou go'lt to Coventry, there to behold
Our Cousin Hereford and fell Mowbray fight.
O sir my Husband's Wrongs on Hereford's Spear,
That it may enter Butcher Mowbray's Breast:
Or if Misfortune miss the first Career,
Be Mowbray's Sins so heavy in his Bosom,
That they may break his foaming Courser's Back,
And throw the Rider headlong in the Lifts,
A Caytiff recreant to my Cousin Hereford.
Farewel, old Gaunt; thy sometimes Brother's Wife
With her Companion Grief, must end her Life.

_Gaunt._ Sister, farewel; I must to Coventry.
As much: Good stay with thee, as go with me.

_Dutch._ Yet one word more; Grief boundeth where it fa
Not with the empty hollowness, but weight:
I take my Leave, before I have begun;
For Sorrow ends not, when it seemeth done.
Commend me to my Brother, Edward York.
Lo, this is all; nay yet depart not so,
Though this be all, do not so quickly go:
I shall remember more. Bid him—oh, what
With all good Speed at Plasbrie visit me.
Alack, and what should good old York there see
But empty Lodgings, and unfurnish'd Walls,
Un-peopled Offices, un trodden Stones?
And what hear there for Welcome, but my Groans?
Therefore commend me, let him not come there
To seek out Sorrow that dwells everywhere;
Defolate, defolate will I hence, and die;
The last Leave of thee, takes my weeping Eye. [Exeunt.

_SCENE_
Enter Marshal and Aumerle.

Mar. My Lord Aumerle, is Harry Hereford arm’d?
Aum. Yea, at all Points, and longs to enter in.

Mar. The Duke of Norfolk, sprightfully and bold,
Stays but the Summons of the Appealant’s Trumpet.
Aum. Why then the Champions are prepar’d, and stay
For nothing but his Majesty’s Approach. [Flourish.

Enter King Richard, Gaunt, Bushy, Bagot, Green, and
others; then Mowbray in Armour, and an Herald.

K. Rich. Marshal, demand of yonder Champion
The Cause of his Arrival here in Arms;
Ask him his Name, and orderly proceed
To swear him in the Justice of his Cause.

Mar. In God’s Name and the King’s, say who thou art?

[To Mowb.

And why thou com’st, thus knightly clad in Arms?
Against what Man thou com’st, and what’s thy Quarrel;
Speak truly on thy Knighthood, and thine Oath,
And so defend thee Heaven, and thy Valour.

Mowb. My Name is Thomas Mowbray, Duke of Norfolk,
Who hither come, engaged by my Oath,
Which Heav’n defend a Knight should violate,
Both to defend my Loyalty and Truth,
To God, my King, and his succeeding Issue,
Against the Duke of Hereford, that appeals me;
And by the Grace of God, and this mine Arm,
To prove him, in defending of myself,
A Traitor to my God, my King, and me;
And as I truly fight, defend me Heav’n.

A Trumpet sounds. Enter Bullingbrooke, and an Herald.

K. Rich. Marshal, ask yonder Knight in Arms,
Both who he is, and why he cometh hither,
Thus placed in Habiments of War:
And formally according to our Law
Depose him in the Justice of his Cause.

Mar. What is thy Name and wherefore com’st thou hither
Before King Richard, in his Royal Lists? [To Bulling.

L3 Against
Against whom com'st thou? And what's thy Quarrel?
Speak like a true Knight, so defend thee Heav'n.

Bulling. Harry of Hereford, Lancaster and Derby,
Am I, who ready here do stand in Arms,
To prove, by Heav'n's Grace, and my Body's Valour;
In Lifts on Thomas Mowbray Duke of Norfolk,
That he's a Traitor soul, and dangerous,
To God of Heav'n, King Richard, and to me;
And as I truly fight, defend me Heav'n.

Mar. On Pain of Death, no Person be so bold,
Or daring hardy, as to touch the Lifts,
Except the Marshal, and such Officers
Appointed to direct these fair Designs.

Bulling. Lord Marshal, let me kiss my Sovereign's Hand;
And bow my Knee before his Majesty:
For Mowbray and myself are like two Men
That vow a long and weary Pilgrimage,
Then let us take a ceremonious Leave
And loving Farewell of our several Friends.

Mar. The Appealant in all duty greets your Highness,
[To K. Rich.

And craves to kiss your Hand, and take his leave.

K Rich. We will descend and fold him in our Arms.

Cousin of Hereford, as thy Cause is just,
So be thy Fortune in this Royal Fight;
Farewell, my Blood, which if to Day thou shed,
Lament we may, but not Revenge thee dead.

Bulling. Oh let no noble Eye profane a Tear
For me, if I be gor'd with Mowbray's Spear:
As confident, as is the Falcon's flight
Against a Bird, do I with Mowbray fight.
My loving Lord, I take my leave of you,
Of you, my noble Cousin, Lord Aumerle;
Not sick, although I have to do with Death,
But lofty, young, and clearly drawing Breath.
Lo, as at English Feasts, so I regret
The daintiest last, to make the end most sweet.
Oh thou the Earthy Author of my Blood,
Whose youthful Spirit in me regenerate,
Doth with a two-fold Vigour lift me up

To
To reach at Victory above my Head,
Add proof unto mine Armour, with thy Prayers;
And with thy Blessings steel my Lance's Point,
That it may enter Mowbray's Waxen Coat,
And furnish new the Name of John a Gaunt
Even in the lufly 'haviour of his Son.

Gaunt, Heav'n in thy good Cause make thee prosperous;
Be swift like Lightning in the Execution,
And let thy Blows, doubly redoubled,
Fall like amazing Thunder on the Cask
Of thy amaz'd pernicious Enemy.
Rouze up thy youthful Blood, be valiant, and live;

Bulling. Mine Innocence, and St. George to thrive.

Momb. However Heav'n or Fortune cast my Lot,
There lives, or dies, true to King Richard's Throne,
A loyal, just and upright Gentleman:
Never did Captain with a freer Heart
Cast off his Chains of Bondage, and embrace
His Golden uncontro'ld Enfranchisement,
More than my dancing Soul doth celebrate
This feast of Battel, with mine Adversary.
Moist mighty Liege, and my Companion Peers,
Take from my Mouth the wish of happy Years;
As gentle, and as jocund, as to jest,
Go I to fight: Truth hath a quiet Breast.

K. Rich. Farewel, my Lord, securely I esp'y
Virtue with Valour, couched in thine Eye,
Order the Trial, Marshal, and begin.

Mar. Harry of Hereford, Lancaster and Derby,
Receive thy Launce, and Heav'n defend thy Right.

Bulling. Strong as a Tower, in hope, I cry Amen.

Mar. Go bear this Launce to Thomas Duke of Norfolk:

1 Her. Harry of Hereford, Lancaster and Derby,
Sstands here-for God, his Sovereign, and himself;
On pain to be found falle and recreant,
To prove the Duke of Norfolk, Thomas Mowbray,
A Traitor to his God, his King, and him,
And dares him to set forward to the fight.

2 Her. Here standeth Thomas Mowbray, Duke of Norfolk,
On pain to be found falle and recreant,
Both to defend himself, and to approve
Henry of Hereford, Lancaster, and Derby,
To God, his Sovereign, and to him disloyal:
Courageously, and with a free Desire,
Attending but the Signal to begin. [A Charge sounded.

Mr. Sound Trumpets, and set forward Combatants.
Stay, the King hath thrown his Warder down.
K. Rich. Let them lay by their Helmets, and their Spears,
And both return back to their Chairs again:
Withdraw with us, and let the Trumpets sound,
While we return these Dukes what we decree.
[Along Flourish.

Draw near, and lift
What with our Council we have done.
For that our Kingdom's Earth should not be foil'd
With that dear Blood which it hath fostered,
And for our Eyes do hate the dire aspect
Of civil Wounds plough'd up with Neighbours Swords,
Which so rous'd up with boisterous untun'd Drums,
With harsh refounding Trumpets dreadful bray,
And grating shock of wrathful Iron Arms,
Might from our quiet Confines fright fair Peace,
And make us wade even in our Kindred's Blood:
Therefore, we banish you our Territories.
You Ccuin Hereford, upon pain of Death,
'Till twice five Summers have enrich'd our Fields,
Shall not regret our fair Dominions,
But tread the stranger Paths of Banishment.

Bulling. Your Will be done: This must my Comfort be,
That Sun that warms you here, shall shine on me.
And those his golden Beams to you here lent,
Shall point on me, and gild my Banishment.

K. Rich. Norfolk, for thee remains a heavier Doom,
Which I with some unwillingness pronounce.
The fly flow Hours shall not determine
The dateless limit of thy dear Exile:
The hopeless Word, of never to return,
Breathe I against thee, upon pain of Life.

Morb. A heavy Sentence, my most Sovereign Liege,
And all unlook'd for from your Highness Mouth:

A
of King Richard II. 251

A dearer Merit, not so deep a Main,
As to be cast forth in the common Air,
Have I deserved at your Highness Hands.
The Language I have learn'd thefe forty Years,
My native English, now I must forgo,
And now my Tongue's use is to me no more,
Than an unstringed Viol, or a Harp,
Or like a cunning Instrument cas'd up,
Or being open, put into his Hands
That knows no touch to tune the Harmony.
Within my Mouth you have engoal'd my Tongue,
Doubly portcullis'd with my Teeth and Lips;
And dull, unsensing, barren Ignorance,
Is made my Goaler to attend on me.
I am too old to fawn upon a Nurse,
Too far in Years to be a Pupil now:
What is thy Sentence then, but speechless Death,
Which robs my Tongue from breathing native Breath?

K. Rich. It boots thee not to be compassionate;
After our Sentence, plainsing comes too late.

Mowb. Then thus I turn me from my Country's Light,
To dwell in solemn Shades of endless Night.

Lay on our Royal Sword your banish'd Hands;
Swear by the Duty that you owe to Heav'n,
(Our part therein we banish with your selves,)
To keep the Oath that we administer:
You never shall, so help you Truth, and Heav'n,
Embrace each others Love in Banishment,
Nor ever look upon each others Face,
Nor ever write, regret, or reconcile
This low'ring Tempest of your home-bred Hate,
Nor ever by advised purpose meet,
'To plot, contrive, or complot any Ill,
'Gainst us, our State, our Subjects, or our Land.

Bulling. I swear.

Mowb. And I, to keep all this.

Bulling. Norfolk, so far, as to mine Enemy,
By this time, had the King permitted us,
One of our Souls had wandred in the Air,

Banish'd
Banish'd this frail Sepulchre of our Flesh,
As now our Flesh is banish'd from this Land.
Consefs thy Treasons, ere thou fly this Realm,
Since thou haft far to go, bear not along
The cloaking Burthen of a guilty Soul.

Mowb. No, Bullinghroke; if ever I were Traitor,
My Name be blotted from the Book of Life,
And I from Heav'n banish'd as from hence;
But what thou art, Heav'n, thou, and I do know,
And all too soon, I fear, the King shall rue.
Farewel, my Liege; now no way can I stray,
Save back to England; all the World's my way. [Exit.

K. Rich. Uncle, even in the Glasses of thine Eyes
I see thy grieved Heart; thy fad Aspect,
Hath from the Number of his banish'd Years
Pluck'd four away; six frozen Winters spent,
Return with welcome home from Banishment.

Bulling. How long a time lies in one little Word:
Four lagging Winters, and four wanton Springs
End in a Word, such is the Breath of Kings.

Gaunt. I think my Liege, that in regard of me
He shortens four Years of my Son's Exile:
But little Vantage shall I reap thereby;
For ere the six Years that he hath to spend,
Can change the Moons, and bring their times about,
My Oyl-dry'd Lamp, and time-bewafted Light,
Shall be extinct with Age, and endless Night:
My inch of Taper will be burnt, and done,
And blindfold Death not let me see my Son.


Gaunt. But not a Minute, King, that thou canst give;
Shornen my Days thou canst with sudden Sorrow,
And pluck Nights from me, but not lend a Morrow:
Thou canst help Time to furrow me with Age,
But stop no Wrinkle in his Pilgrimage:
Thy Word is current with him, for my Death;
But dead, thy Kingdom cannot buy my Breath.

K. Rich. Thy Son is banish'd upon good advice,
Whereo thy Tongue a party-verdict gave;
Why at our Justice seem'st thou then to low'r?
of King Richard II. 253

Gaunt. Things sweet to taste, prove in digestion sour:
You urg'd me as a Judge, but I had rather
You would have bid me argue like a Father.
Alas, I look'd when some of you should say,
I was too strict to make mine own away:
But you gave leave to my unwilling Tongue,
Against my Will, to do my self this Wrong.

K. Rich. Cousin, farewell; and, Uncle, bid him so:
Six Years we banish him, and he shall go. [Exit.

Flourish.

Aum. Cousin, farewell; what Prefence must not know,
From where you do remain, let Paper shew.

Mar. My Lord, no leave take I, for I will ride
As far as Land will let me, by your side.

Gaunt. Oh to what purpose doft thou hoard thy Words,
That thou return'r't no greeting to thy Friends?

Bulling. I have too few to take my leave of you,
When the Tongue's Office should be prodigal,
To breathe th' abundant dolour of the Heart.

Gaunt. Thy Grief is but thy Absence for a time.

Bulling. Joy absent, Grief is present for that time.

Gaunt. What is six Winters? they are quickly gone.

Bulling. To Men in Joy; but Grief makes one Hour ten.

Gaunt. Call it a Travel that thou tak'ft for pleasure,

Bulling. My Heart will figh, when I miscall it so,

Which finds it an inforced Pilgrimage.

Gaunt. The fullen Passage of thy weary Steps
Esteem a Soil, wherein thou art to set
The precious Jewel of thy home return.

Bulling. Oh who can hold a Fire in his Hand
By thinking on the Frosty Caucasus?
Or cloy the hungry edge of Appetite,
By bare imagination of a Feast?
Or wallow naked in December Snow
By thinking on fantastick Summer's Heat?
Oh no, the apprehension of the good
Gives but the greater feeling to the worse;
Fell Sorrow's Tooth doth never rankle more
Than when it bites, but lanceth not the Sore.
Gaunt. Come, come, my Son, I'll bring thee on thy way;
Had I thy Youth, and Cause, I would not stay.

Bulling. Then England's Ground farewell; sweet Soil adieu,
My Mother and my Nurse, which bears me yet:
Where-er I wander, boast of this I can,
Though banish'd, yet a true-born Englishman. [Exeunt.

SCENE IV.

Enter King Richard, Aumerle, Green, and Bagot:

K. Rich. We did observe. Cousin Aumerle,
How far brought you high Hereford on his way?

Aum. I brought high Hereford, if you call him so,
But to the next High-way, and there I left him.

K. Rich. And say, what fower of parting Tears were shed?

Aum. Faith none by me; except the North-East Wind,
Which then blew bitterly against our Face,
Awak'd the sleepy Rheurne, and so by chance
Did grace our hallow parting with a Tear.

K. Rich. What said our Cousin when you parted with him?

Aum. Farewel, and for my Heart disdain'd that my
Tongue
Should so prophan the word, that taught me craft
To counterfeit Oppression of such Grief,
That word seem buried in my Sorrow's Grave.
Marry, would the word Farewel had lengthen'd Hours,
And added Years to his short Banishment,
He should have had a Volume of Farewells;
But since it would not, he had none of me.

K. Rich. He is our Cousin, Cousin; but 'tis doubt,
When time shall call him home from Banishment,
Whether our Kinsman come to see his Friends,
Our self, and Busby, Bagot here and Green
Observ'd his Courtship to the common People:
How he did seem dive into their Hearts,
With humble, and familiar Courtesie,
What Reverence he did throw away on Slaves;
Wooing poor Crafts-men with the craft of Souls,
And patient under-bearing of his Fortune,
As 'twere to banish their Affects with him.

Off
Off goes his Bonnet to an Oyster-wench,
A brace of Dray-men bid God speed him well,
And had the Tribute of his supple Knee,
With Thanks, my Countrymen, my loving Friends;
As were our England in Reversion his,
And he our Subjects next Degree in hope.

_Green._ Well, he is gone, and with him go these Thoughts:
Now for the Rebels, which stand out in Ireland,
Expedient manage must be made, my Liege,
Ere further leisure yield the further means
For their Advantage, and your Highness loss.

_K.Rich._ We will our self in Perfon to this War;
And for our Coffers, with too great a Court,
And liberal Large gifts, are grown somewhat light,
We are infor'd to farm our Royal Realm,
The Revenue whereof shall furnish us
For our Affairs in hand; if they come short,
Our Substitutes at home shall have blank Charters:
Whereeto, when they shall know what Men are rich,
They shall subscribe them for large Sums of Gold,
And send them after to supply our Wants:
For we will make for Ireland presently.

_Enter Bushy._

_K.Rich._ What News?

_Bushy._ Old John of Gaunt is very sick, my Lord,
Suddenly taken, and hath sent post haste
To intreat your Majesty to visit him.

_K.Rich._ Where lies he?

_Bushy._ At Ely-house.

_K.Rich._ Now put it, Heav'n, in his Physician's Mind;
To help him to his Grave immediately:
The lining of his Coffers shall make Coats
To deck our Soldiers for these Irish Wars.
Come, Gentlemen, let's all go visit him:
Pray Heav'n we may make haste, and come too late:

_[Exeunt._

ACT
ACT II. SCENE I.

Enter Gaunt sick, with the Duke of York.

Gaunt. WILT the King come, that I may breathe
   my last
In wholesome Counsel to his unslaid Youth?

York. Vex not your self, nor strive not with your Breath;
For all in vain comes Counsel to his Ear.

Gaunt. Oh but, they say, the Tongues of dying Men

Inforce Attention like deep Harmony:
Where Words are scarce, they are seldom spent in vain,
For they breath Truth, that breath their Words in pain.
He that no more must say, is listen'd more,
Than they whom Youth and Ease have taught to close;
More are Mens Ends markt than their Lives before,
The setting Sun, and Musick in the close;
As the last taste of Sweets, is sweetest last,
Writ in remembrance, more than things long past;
Though Richard my Life's Counsel would not hear,
My Death's sad Tale may yet undeaf his Ear.

York. No, it is fop't with other flattering Sounds,
As praisés of his State; then there are found
Lascivious Meetes, to whose venom found
The open Ears of Youth doth always listen.
Report of Fashions in proud Italy,
Whose Manners still our tardy spish Nation
Limps after in base Imitation.
Where doth the World thrust forth a Vanity,
So it be new, there's no respect how vile,
That is not quickly buzz'd into their Ears?
That all too late comes Counsel to be heard,
Where Will doth mutiny with Wits regard:
Direct not him, whose way himself will chuse,
'Tis Breath thou lack'st, and that Breath wilt thou lose.

Gaunt. Methinks I am a Prophet new inspir'd,
And thus expiring, do foretel of him,
His rash fierce Blaze of Riot cannot last;
For violent Fires soon burn out themselves.
Small Showers last long, but sudden Storms are short;
He tires betimes, that spurs too fast betimes;
With eager feeding, food doth choke the Feeder;
Light Vanity, infatiate Cormorant,
Consuming means, soon preys upon it self.
This Royal Throne of Kings, this scep'ter'd Isle,
This Earth of Majesty, this Seat of Mars,
This other Eden, demy Paradise,
This Fortress built by Nature for her self,
Against Infection, and the Hand of War;
This happy Breed of Men, this little World,
This precious Stone set in the Silver Sea,
Which serves it in the Office of a Wall,
Or as a Moat defensive to a House,
Against the Envy of less happier Lands,
This blest Plot, this Earth, this Realm, this England,
This Nurse, this teeming Womb of Royal Kings,
Fear'd for their Breed, and famous for their Birth,
Renown'd for their Deeds, as far from home,
For Chriftian Service, and true Chivalry,
As is the Sepulchre in stubborn Fury
Of the World's Ransom, blest Mary's Son;
This Land of such dear Souls, this dear dear Land,
Dear for her Reputation through the World,
Is now Leas'd out, I dye pronouncing it,
Like to a Tenement or pelting Farm;
England bound in with the triumphant Sea,
Whose rocky Shore beats back the envious Siege
Of watry Neptune, is now bound in with Shame;
With Inky Blots, and rotten Parchment Bonds,
That England that was wont to conquer others,
Hath made a shameful Conquest of it self.
Ah! would the Scandal vanish with my Life,
How happy then were my ensuing Death!

Enter King Richard, Queen, Aumerle, Bushy, Green, Bagot,
Rois, and Willoughby.

York. The King is come, deal mildly with his Youth;
For young hot Colts, being rag'd, do rage the more.
Queen. How fares our noble Uncle, Lancaster?
K. Rich. What Comfort, Man? How is't with aged Gaunt?
Gaunt.
Gaunt. Oh how that Name befits my Composition! 
Old Gaunt indeed and gaunt in being old: 
Within me Grief hath kept a tedious Fast,
And who abstains from Meat, that is not gaunt;
For sleeping England long time have I watched,
Watching breeds Leanness, Leanness is all gaunt;
The Pleasure that some Fathers feed upon,
Is my strict Fast, I mean my Childrens Looks,
And therein fasting haft thou made me gaunt;
Gaunt am I for the Grave, gaunt as a Grave,
Whose hollow Womb inherits nought but Bones.

K. Rich. Can sick Men play so nicely with their Names?
Gaunt. No, Misery makes Sport to mock it self:
Since thou dost seek to kill my Name in me,
I mock my Name, great King, to flatter thee.

K. Rich. Should dying Men flatter those that live?
Gaunt. No, no, Men living flatter those that die.

K. Rich. Thou now a dying, say'ft thou flatter'ft me.
Gaunt. Oh no, thou dy'st, though I the sicker be.

K. Rich. I am in health, I breathe, I see thee ill.
Gaunt. Now he that made me, knows I see thee ill:
Ili in my self to see, and in thee seeing ill.

Thy Death-bed is no lesser than the Land,
Wherein thou liest in Reputation sick;
And thou, too careless Patient as thou art,
Committst thy anointed Body to the cure
Of those Physicians that first wounded thee:
A thousand Flatterers sit within thy Crown,
Whose compass is no bigger than thy Hand,
And yet ingaged in so small a Verge,
The waste is no whit lesser than thy Land.
Oh had thy Grandire with a Prophet's Eye,
Seen how his Son's Son should destroy his Sons,
From forth thy reach he would have laid thy Shame,
Deposing thee before thou wert poSsessed,
Which art poSsessed now to depose thy self.

Why, Cousin, wert thou Regent of the World,
It were a shame to let this Land by Lease:
But for thy World enjoying but this Land,
Is it not more than Shame, to shame it so?

Landlord
Landlord of England art thou, and not King:  
Thy state of Law, is bondslave to the Law,  
And ----  

K. Rich. And thou, a Lunatick lean-witted Fool  
Presuming on an Agues privilege,  
Dar’st with thy frozen Admonition  
Make pale our Check, chaising the Royal Ble o  
With Fury, from his Native Residence:  
Now by my Seat’s right Royal Majesty  
Wert thou not Brother to great Edward’s Son,  
This Tongue that runs so roundly in thy Head,  
Should run thy Head from thy unreverent Shoulders:  

Gaunt. Oh spare me not, my Brother Edward’s Son,  
For that I was his Father Edward’s Son:  
That Blood already, like the Pelican,  
Thou haft tapt out, and drunkenly carows’d.  
My Brother Gloster, plain well meaning Soul,  
Whom fair befal in Heav’n ’mongst happy Souls,  
May be a President and Witness good,  
That thou respect’t not spilling Edward’s Blood;  
Join with the present Sickness that I have,  
And thy Unkindness be like crooked Age,  
To crop at once a too long wither’d Flower,  
Live in thy Shame, but dye not shame with thee,  
These words hereafter thy Tormentors be.  
Convey me to my Bed, then to my Grave:  
Love they to live, that Love and Honour have.  

[K. Rich. And let them die, that Age and Sullens have;  
For both haft thou, and both become the Grave.  

York. I do beseech your Majesty impute his Words  
To wayward sicklinesfs, and Age in him:  
He loves you on my Life, and holds you dear  
As Harry Duke of Hereford, were he here.  

K. Rich. Right, you say true; as Hereford’s Love, so his;  
As theirs, so mine; and all be as it is,  

Enter Northumberland.  

North. My Liege, old Gaunt commends him to your Ma—  
K. Rich. What say’s he?  

[jefty.  

North. Nay nothing, all is said:  
His Tongue is now a stringless Instrument,  

Words;
Words, Life, and all, old Lancaster hath spent.

York. Be York the next, that must be bankrupt for.

Though Death be poor, it ends a mortal Woe.

K. Rich. The ripest Fruit first falls, and so doth he.

His time is spent, our Pilgrimage must be:

So much for that. Now for our Irish Wars,

We must supplant those rough rug-headed Kerns,

Which live like Venom, where no Venom else

But only they, have Privilege to live.

And for these great Affairs do ask some charge;

Towards our Assistance, we do seize to us

The Plate, Coin, Revenues, and Moveables,

Whereof our Uncle Gaunt did stand possess'd.

York. How long shall I be patient? Oh how long-

Shall tender Duty make me suffer Wrong?

Not Gloster's Death, not Hereford's Banishment;

Nor Gaunt's Rebukes, nor England's private Wrongs;

Nor the Prevention of poor Bullingbrooke,

About his Marriage, nor my own Disgrace,

Have ever made me lower my patient Cheek,

Or bend one Wrinkle on my Soveraign's Face.

I am the last of noble Edward's Sons,

Of whom thy Father, Prince of Wales, was first:

In Wars was never Lion rag'd more fierce;

In Peace, was never gentle Lamb more mild,

Than was that young and princely Gentleman;

His Face thou haft, for even so look'd he,

Accomplish'd with the Number of thy Hours:

But when he frown'd, it was against the French,

And not against his Friends: His noble Hand

Did win what he did spend; and spent not that,

Which his triumphant Father's Hand had won.

His Hands were guilty of no Kindreds Blood,

But bloody with the Enemies of his Kin;

Oh Richard, York is too far gone with Grief,

Or else he never would compare between.

K. Rich. Why Uncle, what's the matter?

York. Oh, my Liege, pardon me if you please; if not,

I, pleas'd not to be pardon'd, am content with all:

Seek you to seize, and gripe into your Hands
The Royalties and Rights of banish’d Hereford?
Is not Gaunt dead, and doth not Hereford live?
Was not Gaunt just, and is not Harry true?
Did not the one deserve to have an Heir?
Is not his Heir a well-deserving Son?
Take Hereford’s Rights away, and take from Time
His Charters, and his customary Rights.
Let not to Morrow then enue to Day,
Be not thy self. For how art thou a King
But by fair Sequence and Succession?
Now afore God, God forbid I say true,
If you do wrongfully seize Hereford’s Right,
Call in his Letters Patents that he hath,
By his Attorneys-General, to sue
His Livery, and deny his offer’d Homage,
You pluck a thousand Dangers on your Head,
You lose a thousand well disposed Hearts,
And prick my tender Patience to those Thoughts
Which Honour and Allegiance cannot think.

K. Rich. Think what you will; we seize into our Hands,
His Plate, his Goods, his Mony, and his Lands.

York. I’ll not be by the while; My Liege, farewel:
What will enue hereof, there’s none can tell.
But by bad Course may be understood,
That their Events can never fall out good. [Exit;

K. Rich. Go Bussie to the Earl of Wiltshire streight,
Bid him repair to us to Ely-house,
To see this Busines done: To morrow next
We will for Ireland, and ’tis time I trow;
And we create, in absence of our self,
Our Uncle York Lord Governor of England:
For he is just, and always lov’d us well.
Come on our Queen, to morrow must we part;
Be merry, for our time of stay is short. [Flourish.

[Exeunt King, Queen, &c.,

Muscot Northumberland, Willoughby, and Ros.

North. Well, Lords, the Duke of Lancaster is dead.
Ros. And living too, for now his Son is Duke.
Willo. Barely in Title, not in Revenue.
North. Richly in both, if Justice had her Right.
Ros.
Rof. My Heart is great; but it must break with silence,
Ere't be disburthen'd with a liberal Tongue.
North. Nay, speak thy Mind; and let him ne'er speak more
That speaks thy Words again to do thee harm.
Willo. Tends that thou'dst speak to the Duke of Hereford?
If it be so, out with it boldly, Man:
Quick is mine Ear to hear of good towards him.
Rof. No good at all that I can do for him,
Unless you call it good to pity him,
Bereft and gilded of his Patrimony.
North. Now afore Heav'n, it's Shame such Wrongs are born;
In him a Royal Prince, and many more,
Of noble Blood in this declining Land;
The King is not himself, but safely led
By Flatterers; and what they will inform
Merely in Hate 'gainst any of us all,
That will the King severely prosecute
'Gainst us, our Lives, our Children, and our Heirs.
Rof. The Commons hath he pill'd with grievous Taxes,
And quite lost their Hearts; the Nobles hath he fin'd
For ancient Quarrels, and quite lost their Hearts.
Willo. And daily new Exactions are devis'd;
As Blanks, Benevolences, and I wot not what:
But what o'God's Name doth become of this?
North. Wars have not wasted it, for war'd he hath not,
But safely yielded upon Compromise,
That which his Ancestors achiev'd with Blows:
More hath he spent in Peace, than they in Wars.
Rof. The Earl of Wiltshire hath the Realm in Farm.
Willo. The King's grown Bankrupt, like a broken Man.
North. Reproach and Dissolution hangeth over him.
Rof. He hath not Mony for these Irish Wars,
His Burthenous Taxations notwithstanding,
But by the robbing of the banish'd Duke.
North. His noble Kinshman — most degenerate King!
But Lords, we hear this fearful Tempesting,
Yet seek no Shelter to avoid the Storm:
We see the Wind fit fore upon our Sails,
And yet we strake not, but securely perish.
Ros. We see the very Wreck that we must suffer,
And unavoided is the Danger now;
For suffering is the Cause of our Wreck.
North. Not so: Even through the hollow Eyes of Death
I spy Life peering; but I dare not say
How near the Tidings of our Comfort is.
Willo. Nay, let us share thy Thoughts, as thou dost ours;
Ros. Be confident to speak, Northumberland,
We three are but thy fel; and speaking so,
Thy Words are but as Thoughts, therefore be bold.
North. Then thus: I have from Port le Blau,
A Bay in Britain, receiv'd Intelligence,
That Harry Duke of Hereford, Rainald Lord Cobham,
That late broke from the Duke of Exeter,
His Brother. Archibishop late of Canterbury,
Sir Thomas Erpingham, Sir John Ramsey,
Sir John Norberie, Sir Robert Waterton, and Francis Quoin,
All these well furnish'd by the Duke of Britain,
With eight tall Ships, three thousand Men of War,
Are making hither with all due Expedition,
And shortly mean to touch our Northern Shore;
Perhaps they had ere this, but that they stay
The first departing of the King for Ireland.
If then we shall shake off our slavish Yoak,
Imp out our drooping Country's broken Wing,
Redeem from broken Pawn the blemish'd Crown,
Wipe off the Dust that hides our Scepter's Gilt,
And make high Majesty look like it self,
Away with me in haste to Ravenpug;
But if you faint, as fearing to do so,
Stay, and be secret, and my self will go,
Ros. To Horse, to Horse; urge Doubts to them that fear.
Willo. Hold out my Horse, and I will first be there. [Exeunt.

SCENE II.

Enter Queen, Bushy, and Bagot.

Bushy. Madam, your Majesty is too much sad:
You promis'd, when you parted with the King,
To lay aside self-harming Heaviness,
And
And entertain a cheerful Disposition.

Queen. To please the King, I did; to please my self I cannot do it; yet I know no Caufe.
Why I should welcome such a Gueft as Grief,
Save bidding farewell to so sweet a Gueft
As my sweet Richard; yet again methinks
Some unborn Sorrow, ripe in Fortune's Womb,
Is coming toward me, and my inward Soul
With nothing trembles; at something it grieves,
More than with parting from my Lord the King.

Bushy. Each Substance of a Grief hath twenty Shadow:
Which shews like Grief it self, but is not so:
For Sorrow's Eye, glazed with blinding Tears,
Divides one thing entire, to many Objects,
Like Perspectives, which rightly gaz'd upon
Shew nothing but Confusion; ey'd awry,
Distinguish Form: So your sweet Majestie,
Looking awry upon your Lord's Departure,
Find Shapes of Grief, more than himself to wail,
Which look'd on as it is, is nought but Shadows
Of what it is not; then thrice gracious Queen,
More than your Lord's Departure weep not, more's not seen:
Or if it be, 'tis with falle Sorrow's Eye,
Which for things true, weeps things imaginary.

Queen. It may be so; but yet, my inward Soul
Perfuades me it is otherwise: How-e'er it be,
I cannot but be sad; so heavy sad,
As though on thinking on no Thought I think,
Makes me with heavy nothing faint and shrink.

Bushy. 'Tis nothing but Conceit, my gracious Lady.

Queen. 'Tis nothing lesse; Conceit is still deriv'd
From some fore-father Grief, mine is not so,
For nothing hath begot my something Grief;
Or something, hath the nothing that I grieve,
'Tis in Reversion that I do possefs;
But what it is, that is not yet known, what
I cannot Name, 'tis namelesse. Wo I wot.

Enter Green.

Green. Heav'n save your Majestie, and well met Gentlemen.
I hope the King is not yet lipt for Ireland.

Queen.
Queen. Why hop'st thou so? 'Tis better hope he is:
For his Designs crave haste, good Hope,
Then wherefore dost thou hope he is not shipt?

Green. That he, our Hope, might have retir'd his Power,
And driven into despair an Enemies Hope,
Who strongly hath set footing in this Land.
The banish'd Bullingbrooke repeals himself;
And with up-lifted Arms is safe arriv'd
At Ravensburg.

Queen. Now God in Heav'n forbid.

Green. O, Madam, 'tis too true; and what is worse,
The Lord Northumberland, his young Son Henry Percy,
The Lords of Roff, Beaumont, and Willoughby,
With all their powerful Friends, are fled to him.

Bushy. Why have you not proclaim'd Northumberland,
And the rest of that revolted Faction, Traitors?

Green. We have: Whereupon the Earl of Worcester
Hath broke his Staff, resign'd his Stewardship.
And all the Household Servants fled with him to Bullingbrooke.

Queen. So Green, thou art the Midwife of my Woe,
And Bullingbrooke my Sorrow's dismal Heir:
Now hath my Soul brought forth her Prodigy,
And I a gasping new delivered Mother,
Have Wo to Wo, Sorrow to Sorrow join'd.

Bushy. Despair not, Madam.

Queen. Who shall hinder me?
I will despair, and be at enmity
With cozening Hope; he is a Flatterer,
A Paralitke, a keeper back of Death,
Who gently would disslove the Bands of Life,
Which false Hopes linger in Extremity.

Enter York.

Green. Here comes the Duke of York.

Queen. With Signs of War about his aged Neck,
Oh full of careful Business are his Looks:
Uncle, for Heav'n's sake speak comfortable Words.

York. Comfort's in Heav'n, and we are on the Earth,
Where nothing lives but Crosses, Care and Grief;
Your Husband he is gone to save far off,
Whilst others come to make him lose at home.
Here am I left to underprop his Land;
Who, weak with Age, cannot support my self;
Now comes his sick Hour that his Surfeit made,
Now shall he try his Friends that flattered him.

Enter a Servant.

Serv. My Lord, your Son was gone before I came.

York. He was; why so, go all which way it will:
The Nobles they are fled, the Commons they are cold,
And will, I fear, revolt on Hereford's side.
Sirrah, get thee to Plashie, to my Sister Gloster;
Bid her send me presently a thousand Pound:
Hold, take my Ring.

Serv. My Lord, I had forgot
To tell your Lordship, to Day I came by, and call'd there,
But I shall grieve you to report the rest.

York. What is't, Knave?

Serv. An Hour before I came, the Dutchess dy'd.

York. Hear'n for his Mercy, what a Tide of Woes.

Come rushing on this woful Land at once?
I know not what to do: I would to Hear'n,
So my Untruth had not provok'd him to it,
The King had cut off my Head with my Brother's.
What, are there Post's dispatch'd for Ireland?
How shall we do for Mony for those Wars?
Come Sister, (Cousin, I would say,) pray pardon me.
Go Fellow, get thee home, provide some Cart's.

Tor the Servant.
And bring away the Armour that is there.

Gentlemen, will you muster Men?

If I know how, or which way to order these Affairs
Thus disorderly thrust into my Hands,
Never believe me. Both are my Kinsmen;
Th' one is my Soveraign, whom both my Oath
And Duty bids defend; th' other again
Is my Kinsman, whom the King hath wrong'd,
Whom Conscience and my Kindred bids to right?
Well, somewhat we must do: Come, Cousin,
I'll dispose of you. Gentlemen, go muster up your Men,
And meet me presently at Barkley Castle:
I should to Plashie too, but time will not permit;
All is uneven, and every thing is lost at six and seven.

[Exeunt York and Queen.

Bishy.
Busby. The Wind fits fair for News to go to Ireland, But none returns; for us to levy Power Proportional to th' Enemy, is all impossible.

Green. Besides, our Nearness to the King in love, Is near the Hate of those love not the King.

Bagot. And that's the wavering Commons, for their Love Lies in their Purpse, and who so empties them, By so much fills their Hearts with deadly hate.

Busby. Wherein the King stands generally condemn'd.

Bagot. If Judgment lye in them, then so do we, Because we have been ever near the King.

Green. Well; I will for Refuge straight to Bristol Castle, The Earl of Wiltshire is already there.

Busby. Thither will I with you; for little Office Will the hateful Commons perform for us, Except like Curs, to tear us all in Pieces: Will you go along with us?

Bagot. No, I will to Ireland to his Majesty.

Farewel: If Hearts Prefages be not vain, We three here part, that ne'er shall meet again.

Busby. That's as York strives to beat back Bullingbroke.

Green. Alas poor Duke, the Task he undertakes Is numbring Sands, and drinking Oceans dry, Where one on his side fights, thouands will flye.

Busby. Farewel at once, for once, for all, and ever.

Green. Well, we may meet again.

Bagot. I fear me never. [Exeunt.

Scene III.

Enter Bullingbroke, and Northumberland.

Bulling. How far is it, my Lord, to Barkley now?

Noth. Believe me, noble Lord,
I am Stranger here in Glou'shire.
These high wild Hills, and rough uneven Ways, Draw out our Miles, and make them wearisome: And yet our fair Discourse hath been as Sugar, Making the hard Way sweet and delectable, But I bethink me what a weary Way

M 2

From
From Ravensburg to Cottshold will be found,
In Refs and Wiltshby, wanting your Company,
Which I protest hath very much beguil'd
The Tediousness and Process of my Travel:
But theirs is sweetned with the Hope to have
The present Benefit that I possess:
And hope to joy, is little less in Joy,
Than Hope enjoy'd: By this, the weary Lords
Shall make their way seem short, as mine hath done,
By fight of what I have, your noble Company.

Butling. Of much less Value is my Company,
Than your good Words: But who comes here?

Enter Percy.

North. It is my Son, young Harry Percy.
Sent from my Brother Worcester: Whencesoever,
Harry, how fares your Uncle?

Percy. I had thought, my Lord, to have learn'd his
Health of you.

North. Why, is he not with the Queen?

Percy. No, my good Lord, he hath forsook the Court,
Broken his Staff of Office, and disperst
The Household of the King.

North. What was his Reason?

He was not so resolv'd, when we last spake together.

Percy. Because your Lordship was proclaimed Traitor.

But he, my Lord, is gone to Ravensburg,
To offer Service to the Duke of Hereford,
And sent me over by Barkley, to discover
What Power the Duke of York had levy'd there,
Then with Direction to repair to Ravensburg.

North. Have you forgot the Duke of Hereford, Boy?

Percy. No, my good Lord; for that is not forgot
Which ne'er I did remember; to my Knowledge,
I never in my Life did look on him.

North. Then learn to know him now; this is the Duke.

Percy. My gracious Lord, I tender you my Service,
Such as it is, being tender, raw, and young,
Which elder Days shall ripen, and confirm
To more approved Service and Defend.

Butling. I thank thee, gentle Percy, and be sure
I count my self in nothing else so happy,
As in a Soul remembrance my good Friends:
And as my Fortune ripens with thy Love,
It shall be still thy true Love's Recompence,
My Heart this Covenant makes, my Hand thus seals it;

North. How far is it to Barkley? and what stir
Keeps good old York there with his Men of War?
Percy. There stands the Castle by yond Tuft of Trees,
Mann'd with three hundred Men. as I have heard,
And in it are the Lords of York, Barkley and Seymour;
None else of Name, and noble Estimate.

Enter Ross and Willoughby.

North. Here come the Lords of Ross and Willoughby,
Blood with spurring, fiery red with haste.

Bulling. Welcome, my Lords; I wot your Love pursues
A banish'd Traitor; all my Treasury
Is yet but unfelt Thanks, which more enrich'd,
Shall be your Love and Labours Recompence.

Ross. Your Presence makes us rich, most noble Lord.
Will. And far surmounts our Labour to attain it.

Bulling. Evermore Thanks, th' Exchequer of the poor,
Which, 'till my infant fortune comes to Years,
Stands for my Bounty. But who comes here?

Enter Barkley.

North. It is my Lord of Barkley, as I guess.
Bark. My Lord of Hereford, my Message is to you.

Bulling. My Lord, my Answer is to Lancaster,
And I am come to seek that Name in England,
And I must find that Title in your Town,
Before I make reply to ought you say.

Bark. Mistake me not, my Lord, 'tis not my meaning
To raze one Title of your Honour out.
To you, my Lord, I come, what Lord you will,
From the most glorious of this Land,
The Duke of York, to know what pricks you on
To take Advantage of the absent time,
And fright our native Peace, with self-born Arms.

Enter York.

Bulling. I shall not need transport my Words by you,
Here comes his Grace in Person. My noble Uncle. [Kneels.

York.
The Life and Death

York. Shew me thy humble Heart, and not thy Knee;
Whose Duty is deceivable and false.

Bulling. My gracious Uncle.

York. Tut, tut, Grace me no Grace, nor Uncle me;
I am no Traitor's Uncle; and that Word Grace,
In an ungracious Mouth, is but prophan.
Why have these banish'd, and forbidden Legs,
Dar'd once to touch a Dust of England's Ground?
But more then, why, why have they dar'd to march
So many Miles upon her peaceful Bofom,
Frighting her pale-fac'd Villages with War,
And Oftentation of despisèd Arms?
Comfit thou because the anointed King is hence?
Why, foolish Boy, the King is left behind,
And in my loyal Bofom lyes his Power.
Were I but now the Lord of such hot Youth,
As when brave Gaunt, thy Father, and my self
Rescued the Black Prince, that young Mars of Men,
From forth the Ranks of many thousand French;
On then, how quickly should this Arm of mine,
Now Prisoner to the Palfie, chastifie thee,
And minister Correction to thy Fault.

Bulling. My gracious Uncle, let me know my Fault,
On what Condition stands it, and wherein?

York. Even in condition of the worst degree;
In gross Rebellion, and detested Treason;
Thou art a banish'd Man, and here art come
Before the Expiration of thy time,
In braving Arms against thy Sovereign.

Bulling. As I was banish'd, I was banish'd Hereford;
But as I come, I come for Lancaster.
And, noble Uncle, I beseech your Grace,
Look on my Wrongs with an indifferent Eye:
You are my Father, for methinks in you
I see old Gaunt alive. Oh then, my Father,
Will you permit that I shall stand condemn'd
A wandring Vagabond; my Rights and Royalties
Pluckt from my Arms perforse, and given away
To upstart Unthrifts? Wherefore was I born?
If that my Cousin King, be King of England,
It must be granted I am Duke of Lancaster.
You have a Son, Aumerle, my noble Kinsman,
Had you first dy’d, and he been thus trod down,
He should have found his Uncle Gaunt a Father,
To rowze his Wrongs, and chase them to the Bay.
I am deny’d to sue my Livery here,
And yet my Letters Patents give me leave:
My Father’s Goods are all distraint’d and fold,
And these and all, are all amiss imploy’d.
What would you have me do? I am a Subject,
And challenge Law: Attorneys are deny’d me,
And therefore personally I lay my Claim
To mine Inheritance of free Descent.

North. The noble Duke hath been too much abus’d.
Rof. It stands your Grace upon to do him right.
Willo. Base Men by his Endowments are made great.
York. My Lords of England, let me tell you this,
I have had feeling of my Cousin’s Wrongs,
And labour’d all I could to do him right:
But in this kind, to come in braving Arms,
Be his own Carver, and cut out his Way,
To find out Right with Wrongs, it may not be;
And you that do abet him in this kind,
Cherish Rebellion, and are Rebels all.

North. The noble Duke hath sworn his coming is
But for his own; and for the right of that,
We all have strongly sworn to give him Aid,
And let him ne’er see Joy that breaks that Oath.
York. Well, well, I see the Issue of these Arms;
I cannot mend it, I must needs confess,
Because my Power is weak, and all ill left:
But if I could, by him that gave me Life,
I would attach you all, and make you stoop
Unto the Sovereign Mercy of the King.
But since I cannot, be it known to you,
I do remain as Neuter. So fare you well.
Unles you please to enter in the Castle,
And there repose you for this Night.

Bulling. An Offer, Uncle, that we will accept;
But we must win your Grace to go with us
The Life and Death

To Briffow-Castle, which they say is held
By Bushy, Bagot, and their Complices,
The Caterpillars of the Common-wealth,
Which I have sworn to weed, and pluck away.

York. It may be I will go with you, but yet I'll pause,
For I am loath to break our Country's Laws:
Nor Friends, nor Foes, to me welcome you are,
Things past redress, are now with me past Care. [Exit.

SCENE IV.

Enter Salisbury, and a Captain.

Cap. My Lord of Salisbury, we have lain ten Days,
And hardly kept your Countrymen together,
And yet we hear no Tidings from the King:
Therefore we all disperse our selves: Farewel.

Salis. Stay yet another Day, thou trusty Welshman,
The King reposeth all his Trust in thee.

Cap. 'Tis thought the King is dead, we will not stay,
The Bay-Trees in our Country are all wither'd,
And Meteors fright the fixed Stars of Heav'n;
The pale fac'd Moon looks bloody on the Earth,
And lean-look'd Prophets whisper fearful Change;
Rich Men look sad, and Ruffians dance and leap;
The one in fear to lose what they enjoy,
The other to enjoy by Rage and War:
These Signs forerun the Death of Kings.
Farewel; our Countrymen are gone and fled,
As well assur'd, Richard their King is dead. [Exit.

Salis. Ah Richard, with Eyes of heavy Mind,
I see thy Glory like a shooting Star,
Fall to the base Earth from the Firmament:
Thy Sun sets weeping in the lowly West,
Witnessing Storms to come, Wo, and Unrest:
Thy Friends are fled to wait upon thy Foes,
And crostly to thy good, all Fortune goes. [Exit.

ACT
Enter Bullingbroke, York, Northumberland, Ross, Percy
With Willoughby, with Bushy and Green Prisoners.

Bulling. Ring forth these Men:
Bushy and Green, I will not vex your Souls,
Since present your Souls must part your Bodies,
With too much urging your pernicious Lives,
For 'twere no Charity; yet to wash your Blood
From off my Hands, here in the View of Men,
I will unfold some Causes of your Deaths.
You have mis-led a Prince, a royal King,
A happy Gentleman in Blood and Lineaments,
By you unhappy'd, and disfigur'd clean:
You have in manner with your sinful Hours
Made a Divorce betwixt his Queen and him,
Broke the Possession of a royal Bed,
And stain'd the Beauty of a fair Queen's Cheeks
With Tears drawn from her Eyes, with your soul Wrongs.
My self a Prince, by Fortune of my Birth,
Near to the King in Blood, and near in Love,
'Till you did make him mis-interpret me,
Have stoop'd my Neck under your Injuries,
And sigh'd my English Breath in foreign Clouds,
Eating the bitter Bread of Banishment;
While you have fed upon my Seigniories,
Dis-park'd my Parks, and fell'd my Forest Woods;
From mine own Windows torn my Household Coat,
Raz'd out my Impress, leaving me no Sign,
Save Mens Opinions, and my living Blood,
To shew the World I am a Gentleman,
This, and much more, much more than twice all this,
Condemns you to the Death: See them deliver'd over
To Execution, and the Hand of Death.

Bushy. More welcome is the Stroak of Death to me,
Than Bullingbroke to England.

Green. My Comfort is, that Heav'n will take our Souls,
And plague Injustice with the Pains of Hell.

**Bulling.** My Lord Northumberland, see them dispatch'd.
Uncle, you say the Queen is at your House;
For Heav'n's sake, fairly let her be intreated;
Tell her I send to her my kind Commends;
Take special care my Greetings be deliver'd.

**York.** A Gentleman of mine I have dispatch'd
With Letters of your Love to her at large.

**Bulling.** Thanks, gentle Uncle: Come Lords away,
To fight with Glenelg, and his Complices;
A while to work, and after Holiday.  

[Exeunt.

**SCENE II.**

*Flourish: Drums, and Trumpets.*

**Enter King Richard, Aumerle, Bishop of Carlisle, and Soldiers:**

**K. Rich.** Barkleloughly-Castle call you this at hand?

**Aum.** Yea, my Lord; how brooks your Grace the Air,
After your late tossing on the breaking Seas?

**K. Rich.** Needs must I like it well; I weep for Joy
To stand upon my Kingdom once again.
Dear Earth, I do salute thee with my Hand,
Though Rebels wound thee with their Horse's Hoofs:
As a long parted Mother with her Child,
Plays fondly with her Tears, and smiles in meeting;
So weeping, smiling, greet I thee, my Earth,
And do thee Favour with my Royal Hands.
Feed not thy Sovereign's Foe, my gentle Earth,
Nor with thy Sweets comfort his ravenous Sense;
But let thy Spiders that suck up thy Venom,
And heavy-gaited Toads lie in their way,
Doing Annoyance do the treacherous Feet,
Which with usurping Steps do trample thee.
Yield stinging Nettles to mine Enemies;
And when they from thy Bosom pluck a Flower,
Guard it: I prithee with a lurking Adder,
Whose double Tongue may with a mortal touch
Throw Death upon thy Sovereign's Enemies.
Mock not my senseless Conjuration, Lords;

This
of King Richard II. 275

This Earth shall have a feeling, and these Stones
Prove armed Soldiers, ere her native King
Shall falter under foul rebellious Arms.

Bishop. Fear not, my Lord, that Power that made you King
Hath Power to keep you King, in spite of all.

Aum. He means, my Lord, that we are too remiss,
Whilst Bullingbroke through their Security,
Grows strong and great, in Substance and in Friends.

K. Rich. Discomfortable Cousin, know'st thou not,
That when the searching Eye of Heav'n is hid,
Behind the Globe, that lights the lower World,
Then Thieves and Robbers range abroad unseen,
In Murders, and in Outrage bloody here.
But when from under this terrestrial Ball
He fires the proud Tops of the Eafhern Pines,
And darts his Lightning through ev'ry guilty Hole;
Then Murders. Treasons, and detested Sins,
The Cloak of Night being pluck'd from off their Backs;
Stand bare and naked, trembling at themselves.
So when this Thief, this Traitor Bullingbroke,
Who all this while hath revell'd in the Night,
Shall see us rising in our Throne, the East,
His Treasons will set blushing in his Face,
Not able to endure the Sight of Day;
But self-affrighted, tremble at his Sin.
Not all the Water in the rough rude Sea
Can wash the Balm from an anointed King;
The Breath of worldly Men cannot depose
The Deputy elected by the Lord:
For every Man that Bullingbroke hath preft,
To lift shrewd Steel against our Golden Crown,
Heav'n for his Richard hath in heav'nly Pay
A glorious Angel; then if Angels fight,
Weak Men must fall, for Heav'n still guards the Right.

Enter Salisbury.

Welcome, my Lord, how far off lies your Power?

Salis. Nor near, nor farther off, my gracious Lord,
Than this weak Arm; Discomfort guides my Tongue;
And bids me speak of nothing but Despair:
One Day too late, I fear, my noble Lord,

Hath
Hath clouded all my happy Days on Earth.
Oh call back Yesterday, bid Time return,
And thou shalt have twelve thousand fighting Men:
To Day, to Day, unhappy Day too late
O'erthrows thy Joys, Friends, Fortune, and thy State.
For all the Welshmen hearing thou wert dead,
Are gone to Bulingbroke, dispers'd and fled.

Aud. Comfort, my Liege; why looks your Grace so pale?
K. Rich. But now the Blood of twenty thousand Men
Did triumph in my Face, and they are fled,
And 'till so much Blood thither come again,
Have I not reason to look pale, and dead?
All Souls that will be safe, fly from my Side,
For Time hath set a Blot upon my Pride.

Aud. Comfort, my Liege, remember who you are.
K. Rich. I had forgot my self: Am I not King?
Awake thou sluggard Majesty, thou sleepest:
Is not the King's Name, forty thousand Names?
Arm, arm my Name; a puny Subject strikes
At thy great Glory. Look not to the Ground,
Ye Favourites of a King; are we not high?
High be our Thoughts: I know my Uncle York
Hath Power enough to serve our Turn.
But who comes here?

Enter Scroop.

Scroop. More Health and Happiness betide my Liege,
Thin can my care-tun'd Tongue deliver him.

K. Rich. Mine Ear is open, and my Heart prepar'd:
The worst is worldly Loss, thou canst unfold:
Say, is my Kingdom lost? Why 'twas my Care:
And what Loss is it to be rid of Care?
Strives Bulingbroke to be as great as we?
Greater he shall not be; if he serve God,
We'll serve him too, and be his Fellow so.
Revolt our Subjects? That we cannot mend;
They break their Faith to God as well us:
Cry Woe, Destruction, Ruin, Loss, Decay;
The worst is Death, and Death will have his Day.

Scroop. Glad am I, that your Highness is so arm'd
To bear the Tidings of Calamity.
Like an unseasonable stormy Day,
Which makes the silver Rivers drown their Shores,
As if the World were all dissolv'd to Tears:
So high above his Limits, swells the Rage
Of Bullingbroke, covering your fearful Land
With hard bright Steel, and Hearts harder than Steel.
White Bears have arm'd their thin and hairless Scalps
Against thy Majestie, and Boys with Womens Voices
Strive to speak big, and clap their female Joints
In stiff unwieldy Arms, against thy Crown;
The very Beadsmen learn to bend their Bows
Of double fatal Ewe, against thy State;
Yea distaff Women manage ruffly Bills;
Against thy Seat both young and old rebel,
And all goes worse than I have Power to tell.

K Rich. Too well, too well thou tell'st a Tale so ill.
Where is the Earl of Wiltshire? Where is Bagot?
What is become of Bushy? Where is Green?
That they have let the dangerous Enemy
Measure our Confines with such peaceful Steps?
If we prevail, their Heads shall pay for it.
I warrant they have made Peace with Bullingbroke.

Scroop. Peace they have made with him, indeed, my Lord.
K. Rich. O Villains, Vipers, damn'd without Redemption,
Dogs, eaily won to fawn on any Man,
Snakes in my Heart-blood warm'd, that sting my Heart,
Three Judases, each one thrice worfe than Judas!
Would they make Peace? Terrible Hell make War
Upon their spott'd Souls for this Offence.

Scroop. Sweet Love, I see, changing his Property,
Turns to the lowrest and most deadly Hate:
Again uncurse their Souls; their Peace is made
With Heads, and not with Hands: Those whom you curse
Have felt the wofl of Death's destroying Hand,
And yce full low, grav'd in the hollow Ground.

Assm. Is Bushy, Green and the Earl of Wiltshire dead?
Scroop. Yea, all ot them at Biflow lost their Heads.
Assm. Where is the Duke my Father, with his Power?
K. Rich. No matter where; of Comfort no Man speaks:
Let's talk of Graves, of Worms, and Epitaphs,
Make Dust our Paper, and with rainy Eyes
Write Sorrow in the Bofof of the Earth.
Let's chuse Executors, and talk of Wills;
And yet not so—for what can we bequeath;
Save our deposed Bodies to the Ground?
Our Lands, our Lives, and all are Bullingroke's,
And nothing can we call our own, but Death,
And that small Model of the barren Earth,
Which serves as Paste, and cover to our Bones.
For Heav'n's sake let us sit upon the Ground,
And tell sad Stories of the Death of Kings:
How some have been depos'd, some slain in War:
Some haunted by the Ghoffs they have depos'd,
Some poison'd by their Wives, some sleeping kill'd,
All murther'd.—For within the hollow Crown,
That rounds the mortal Temples of a King.
Keeps Death his Court, and there the Antique sits
Scoffing his State, and grinning at his Pomp,
Allowing him a Breath, a little Scene
To Monarchize, be fear'd, and kill with Looks,
Infusing him with self and vain Conceit,
As if this Flesh, which walls about our Life,
Were Bras's impregnable: And humour'd thus,
Comes at the last, and with a little Pin
Boars through his Castle Walls, and farewell King.
Cover your Heads, and mock not Flesh and Blood
With Solemn Reverence: Throw away Respect,
Tradition, Form, and ceremonious Duty,
For you have but mistook me all this while:
I live with Bread like you, feel Want,
Taste Grief, need Friends; subjected thus,
How can you say to me, I am a King?

Carl. My Lord, wise Men ne'er wait their present Woes;
But presently prevent the Ways to wail:
To fear the Foe, since Fear oppresseth Strength,
Gives, in your Weakness, Strength unto your Foe;
Fear, and be slain, no worse can come to fight,
And fight and die, is Death destroying Death.
Where Fearing, dying, pays Death servile Breath.
of King Richard II.

Aum. My Father hath a Power, enquire of him,
And learn to make a Body of a Limb.

K. Rich. Thou didst me well: Proud Bullingbrooke, I come
To change Blows with thee, for our Day of Doom;
This Ague-fit of Fear is over-blown,
An easy Task it is to win our own.
Say, Scoop, where liest our Uncle with his Power?
Speak sweetly Man, although thy Looks be sower.

Scoop. Men judge by the Complexion of the Sky
The State and Inclination of the Day;
So may you by my dull and heavy Eye:
My Tongue hath but a heavier Tale to say:
I play the Torturer, by small and small
To lengthen out the worst, that must be spoken;
Your Uncle York is join'd with Bullingbrooke,
And all your northern Castles yielded up,
And all your southern Gentlemen in Arms
Upon his Faction.

K. Rich. Thou hast said enough.
Beshrew thee, Cousin, which didst lead me forth
Of that sweet way I was in to Despair.
What say you now? what Comfort have we now?
By Heaven I'll hate him everlastingly
That bids me be of comfort any more.
Go to Flint-Castle, there I'll pine away,
A King, Wo's Slave, shall kingly Wo obey:
That Power I have, discharge, and let 'em go
To eat the Land, that hath some Hope to grow;
For I have none. Let no Man speak again
To alter this, for Counsel is but in vain.

Aum. My Liege, one Word.

K. Rich. He does me double Wrong,
That wounds me with the Flatteries of his Tongue
Discharge my Followers: let them hence away,
From Richard's Night, to Bullingbrooke's fair Day.

[Exit.]

Scene
Enter with Drum and Colours, Bullingbroke, York, Northumberland, and Attendants.

Bulling. So that by this Intelligence we learn
The Welshmen are dispers'd; and Salisbury
Is gone to meet the King, who lately landed
With some few private Friends upon this Coast.

North. The News is very fair and good, my Lord,
Richard not far from hence, hath hid his Head.
York. It would be seem the Lord Northumberland,
To say King Richard. Alack the heavy Day,
When such a sacred King should hide his Head.

North. Your Grace mistakes me; only to be brief,
Left I his Title out.

York. The time hath been,
Would you have been so brief with him, he would
Have been so brief with you, to shorten you,
For taking so the Head, your whole Head's length.

Bulling. Mistake not, Uncle, farther than you should.
York. Take not, good Cousin, farther than you should,
Left you mistake; the Heav'n's are o'er your Head.

Bulling. I know it, Uncle, and oppose not my self
Against their Will. But who comes here?

Enter Percy.

Welcome Harry; what, will not this Castle yield?
Percy. The Castle royally is mann'd, my Lord,
Against thy Entrance.

Bulling. Royally? Why, it contains no King?
Percy. Yes, my good Lord,
It doth contain a King: King Richard lies
Within the Limits of yond Lime and Stone,
And with him the Lord Aumerle, Lord Salisbury,
Sir Stephen Scroop, besides a Clergyman
Of holy Reverence: who, I cannot learn.

North. Oh, belike it is the Bishop of Carlisle.

Bulling. Noble Lord, [To North,
Go to the rude Ribs of that ancient Castle,
Through brazen Trumpet send the breath of Parle

Into
Into his ruin'd Ears, and thus deliver:

Henry Bullingbrooke upon his Knees doth kiss
King Richard's Hand, and sends Allegiance
And true Faith of Heart to his Royal Person; hither come
Even at his Feet, to lay my Arms and Power,
Provided, that my Banishment repeal'd,
And Lands restor'd again, be freely granted;
If not, I'll use the Advantage of my Power,
And lay the Summer's Dust with Showers of Blood,
Rain'd from the Wounds of slaughter'd Englishmen;
The which, how far off from the Mind of Bullingbrooke
It is, such Crimson Tempest should bedrench
The fresh green Lap of fair King Richard's Land,
My stooping Duty tenderly shall shew.
Go signifie as much, while here we march
Upon the grasse Carpet of this Plain;
Let's march without the Noise of threatening Drum,
That from this Castle's tatter'd Battlements
Our fair Appointments may be well perus'd.
Methinks King Richard and my self should meet
With no less Terror than the Elements
Of Fire and Water, when their thundring Smoak
At meeting tears the cloudy Cheeks of Heav'n:
Be he the Fire, I'll be the yielding Water:
The Rage be his, while on the Earth I rain
My Waters; on the Earth, and not on him,
March on and mark King Richard how he looks.
Parle without, and Answer within; then a Flourish. Enter on
the Walls, King Richard, the Bishop of Carlisle, Aumerle,
Scroop and Salisbury.
See, see, King Richard doth himself appear
As doth the blushing discontented Sun,
From out the fiery Portal of the East,
When he perceives the envious Clouds are bent
To dim his Glory, and to stain the Tract
Of his bright Passage to the Occident.

York. Yet looks he like a King; behold his Eye
As bright as is the Eagle's, lightens forth
Controlling Majesty; alack, alack, for Wo,
That any Harm should stain so fair a Show.

K. Rich.
K. Rich. We are amaz’d, and thus long have we stood
To watch the fearful bending of thy Knee, [To North;
Because we thought our self thy lawful King;
And if we be, how dare thy Joints forget
To pay the awful Duty to our Presence?
If we be not; shew us the Hand of God,
That hath dismiss’d us from our Stewardship;
For well we know, no Hand of Blood and Bone
Can gripe the sacred Handle of our Scepter,
Unles he do profane, steal or usurp.
And though you think, that all, as you have done,
Have torn their Souls, by turning them from us,
And we are barren, and bereft of Friends;
Yet know, my Master, God Omnipotent,
Is mustering in his Clouds on our behalf,
Armies of Pestilence, and they shall strike
Your Children yet unborn, and unbegot,
That lift your Vassal Hands against my Head,
And threat the Glory of my precious Crown.
Tell Bullingbroke, for yond methinks he is,
That every Stride he makes upon the Land
Is dangerous Treason, he is come to ope
The purple Testament of bleeding War;
But ere the Crown he looks for, live in Peace,
Ten thouand bloody Crowns of Mothens Sons
Shall ill become the Flower of England’s Face,
Change the Complexion of her Maid-pale Peace
To Scarlet Indignation, and bedew
Her Pastors’ Grains with faithful English Blood.

North. The King of Heav’n forbid, our Lord the King
Should so with civil and uncivil Arms
Be rush’d upon: Thy thrice-noble Cousin,
Harry Bullingbroke, doth humbly kiss thy Hand,
And by the honourable Tomb he sweares
That stands upon your Royal Grandfie’s Bones;
And by the Royalties of both your Bloods,
Currents that spring from one most gracious Head;
And by the bury’d Hand of warlike Gaunt,
And by the Worth and Honour of himself,
Compriﬁng all that may be sworn, or said,

His
of King Richard II. 283

His coming hither hath no farther Scope,
Than for his lineal Royalties, and to beg
Infranchisement immediate on his Knees:
Which on thy Royal Party granted once,
His glittering Arms he will commend to Ruft;
His barbed Steeds to Stables, and his Heart
To faithful Service of your Majesty:
This swears he, as he is a Prince, is just,
And as I am a Gentleman, I credit him.

K. Rich. Northumberland, say thus the King returns:
His noble Cousin is right welcome hither,
And all the Number of his fair Demands
Shall be accomplish'd without Contradiction;
With all the gracious Utterance thou haft,
Speak to his gentle Hearing kind commends.
We do debate our self, Cousin, do we not, [To Aum;
To look so poorly, and to speak so fair?
Shall we call back Northumberland, and send
Defiance to the Traitor, and so die?

Aum. No, good my Lord, let's faint with gentle Words;
Till time lend Friends, and Friends their hopeful Swords.

K. Rich. Oh God, oh God that e'er this Tongue of mine,
That laid the Sentence of dread Banishment
On yond proud Man, should take it off again
With Words of sooth; oh that I were as great
As is my Grief, or lesser than my Name;
Or that I could forget what I have been,
Or not remember what I must be now.
Swell'st thou, proud Heart? I'll give thee Scope to beat;
Since Foes have Scope to beat both thee and me.

Aum. Northumberland comes back from Bullingbroke.

K. Rich. What must the King do now? Must he submit?
The King shall do it: Must he be deposed?
The King shall be contented: Must he lose
The Name of King? o'God's Name let it go.
I'll give my Jewels for a Set of Beads;
My gorgeous Palace, for a Hermitage;
My gay Apparel, for an Alms-man's Gown;
My figur'd Goblets, for a Dish of Wood;
My Scepter, for a Palmer's walking Staff;

My,
The Life and Death

My Subjects, for a Pair of carved Saints,
And my large Kingdom, for a little Grave,
A little little Grave, an obscure Grave.
Or I'll be bury'd in the King's Highway;
Some way of common Trade, where Subjects Feet
May hourly trample on their Soveraign's Head;
For on my Heart they tread now, whilst I live;
And bury'd once, why not upon my Head?

Asmerle, now weep't, my tender hearted Cousin,
We'll make souf Weather with despisfed Tears.
Our Sighs, and they, shall lodge the Summer Corn,
And make a Death in this revolting Land.
Or shall we play the Wantons with our Woes,
And make some pretty Match with shedding Tears?
As thus, to drop them still upon one Place,
'Till they have fretted us a Pair of Graves,
Within the Earth; and therein laid, there lies
Two Kimmen digg'd their Graves with weeping Eyes?
Would not this ill do well? Well, well, I see
I talk but idely, and you mock at me.

Most mighty Prince, my Lord Northumberland,
What says King Bullingbrooke? Will his Majesty
Give Richard leave to live. 'till Richard die?
You make a Leg, and Bullingbrooke says I.

North. My Lord, in the base Court he doth attend:
To speak with you, may it please you to come down.

K. Rich. Down, down I come, like glitt'ring Phæton,
Wanting the Manage of unruly Jades.
In the base Court? base Court where Kings grow base,
To come at Traitors Calls, and do them Grace.
In the base Court come down; down Court, down King,
For Night Owls shriek, where mounting Larks should sing.

Bulling. What says his Majesty?
North. Sorrow, and Grief of Heart
Makes him speak fondly like a frantick Man;
et he is come.

Bulling. Stand all apart,
And shew fair Duty to his Majesty.

My gracious Lord.

[Kneels.]
K. Rich.
of King Richard II. 285

K. Rich. Fair Cousin, you debase your Princely Knee,
To make the base Earth proud with kissing it.
Me rather had my Heart might feel your Love,
Than my un-pleas’d Eye see your Courtesie.
Up Cousin, up, your Heart is up, I know,
Thus high at least, although your Knee be low.

Bulling. My gracious Lord, I come but for mine own.
K. Rich. Your own is yours, and I am yours, and all,
Bulling. So far be mine, my most redoubted Lord,
As my true Service shall deserve your Love.

K. Rich. Well you deserved: They well deserve to have,
That know the strong’st and surest way to get.
Uncle, give me your Hand; nay, dry your Eyes,
Tears shew their Love, but want their Remedies.
Cousin, I am too young to be your Father,
Though you are old enough to be my Heir.
What you will have, I’ll give, and willing too,
For do we must, what Force will have us do.
Set on towards London? Cousin, is it so?

Bulling. Yea, my good Lord.

SCENE V.

Enter Queen, and two Ladies.

Queen. What Sport shall we devise here in this Garden,
To drive away the heavy thought of Care?
Lady. Madam, we’ll play at Bowls.
Queen. ’Twill make me think the World is full of Rubs,
And that my Fortune runs against the Bias.
Lady. Madam, we’ll dance.
Queen. My Legs can keep no Measure in Delight,
When my poor Heart no Measure keeps in Grief.
Therefore no dancing, Girl; some other Sport.

Lady. Madam, we’ll tell Tales.
Queen. Of Sorrow, or of Joy?
Lady. Of either, Madam.
Queen. Of neither, Girl.
For if of Joy, being altogether wanting,
It doth remember me the more of Sorrow:

Or
Or if of Grief, being altogether bad,
It adds more Sorrow to my want of Joy:
For what I have, I need not to repeat:
And what I want, it boots not to complain.

Lady. Madam, I'll sing.

Queen. 'Tis well that thou hast Cause:
But thou should'st please me better, would'st thou weep.

Lady. I could weep, Madam, would it do you good.

Queen. And I could sing, would weeping do me good,
And never borrow any Tear of thee.

Enter a Gardiner, and two Servants.

But stay, here come the Gardiners;
Let's step into the Shadow of these Trees.
My Wretchedness, unto a row of Pines,
They'll talk of State; for every one doth so,
Against a Change; Wo is fore-run with Wo.

Gard. Go bind thou up yond dangling Apricocks,
Which like unruly Children, make their Sire
Stoop with Oppression of their prodigal Weight:
Give some suppittance to the bending Twigs.
Go thou, and like an Executioner
Cut off the Heads of too fast growing Sprays,
That look too lofty in our Commonwealth:
All must be even in our Government.
You thus imploy'd, I will go root away
The noisome Weeds that without profit suck
The Soil's fertility from wholesome Flowers.

Serv. Why should we in the compass of a Pale,
Keep Law and Form, and due Proportion,
Shewing, as in a Model, our firm State?
When our Sea-walled Garden, the whole Land,
Is full of Weeds, her fairest Flowers choak't up,
Her Fruit-trees all upran'd, her Hedges ruin'd,
Her Knot disorder'd, and her wholsom Herbs
Swarming with Caterpillers?

Gard. Hold thy Peace.
He that hath suffer'd this disorder'd Spring,
Hath now himself met with the fall of Leaf;
The Weeds that his broad-spreading Leaves did shelter,
That seem'd in eating him, to hold him up,
of King Richard II. 287

Are pull'd up, Root and all, by Bullingbrooke;
I mean the Earl of Wiltshire, Busby, Green.

Serv. What, are they dead?

Gard. They are,
And Bullingbrooke hath seiz'd the wasteful King.
What pity is it, that he had not trimm'd
And dreft his Land, as we this Garden at time of Year;
And wound the Bark, the Skin of our Fruit-trees,
Left being over proud with Sap and Blood,
With too much Riches it confound it self?
Had he done so, to great and growing Men,
They might have liv'd to bear, and he to taste
Their Fruits of Duty. All superfluous Branches
We lop away, that bearing Boughs may live:
Had he done so, himself had born the Crown,
Which waste and idle Hours hath quite thrown down.

Serv. What, think you the King shall be depos'd?

Gard. Deprest he is already, and depos'd
'Tis doubted he will be. Letters came last Night
To a dear Friend of the Duke of York,
That tell black Tidings.

Queen. Oh I am prent to Death through want of speaking;
Thou old Adam's likeness, set to dress this Garden,
How dares thy harth Tongue found this unpleasing News?
What Eve? What Serpent hath suggested thee,
To make a second Fall of curfed Man?
Why dost thou say, King Richard is depos'd?
Dar'ft thou, thou little better thing than Earth,
Divine his downfal? Say, where, when, and how
Cam'ft thou by this ill Tidings? Speak, thou Wretch.

Gard. Pardon me, Madam. Little Joy have I
To breath these News; yet what I say is true;
King Richard, he is in the mighty hold
Of Bullingbrooke, their Fortunes both are weigh'd:
In your Lord's Scale is nothing but himself,
And some few Vanities that make him light:
But in the Ballance of great Bullingbrooke,
Besides himself, are all the English Peers,
And with that odds he weighs King Richard down.
Post you to London, and you'll find it so;
I speak no more than every one doth know.

Queen. Nimble Mischance, that art so light of Foot,
Doth not thy Embassage belong to me?
And am I last that knows it? Oh thou think'st
To serve me last, that I may longest keep
Thy Sorrow in my Breast. Come Ladies, go,
To meet at London, London's King in wo.
What, was I born to this! That my sad Look,
Should grace the Triumph of great Bullingbroke!
Gard'ner, for telling me the News of wo,
I would the Plants thou'gras't it may never grow. [Exit.

Gard. Poor Queen, so that: thy State might be noworse,
I would my Skill were subject to thy Curse.
Here did I drop a Tear, here in this place
I'll set a Bank of Rew, lowr Herb of Grace:
Rew, ev'n for Ruth, here shortly shall be seen,
In the remembrance of a weeping Queen. [Exit.

---

**ACT IV. SCENE I.**

*Enter as to the Parliament, Bullingbroke, Aumerle, Northumberland, Percy, Fitzwater, Sarry, Bishop of Carlisle, Abbot of Westminster, Herald, Officers, and Bagot.*

**Bulling.**

ALL forth Bagot.

Now Bagot, freely speak thy Mind,
What thou dost know of noble Glo'sfer's Death;
Who wrought it with the King, and who perform'd
The bloody Office of his timelefs End.

Bagot. Then set before my Face the Lord Aumerle.

**Bulling.** Cousin, stand forth, and look upon that Man.

**Bagot.** My Lord Aumerle, I know your daring Tongue
Scorns to unlay, what it hath once deliver'd.
In that dead time when Glo'sfer's Death was plotted,
I heard you say, Is not my Arm of length,
That reacheth from the restful English Court
As far as Calais to my Uncle's Head?
Amongst much other talk, that very time,
I heard you say that you had rather refuse

---
of King Richard II. 289

The offer of an hundred thousand Crowns,
Than Bulging broke return to England; adding withal,
How blest this Land would be in this your Cousin's Death:

Aum. Princes, and noble Lords,
What Answer shall I make to this base Man?
Shall I so much dishonour my fair Stars,
On equal terms to give him chastisement?
Either I must, or have mine Honour spoil'd
With the Attainder of his fland'rous Lips.
There is my Gage, the manual Seal of Death;
That marks thee out for Hell. Thou liest,
And I'll maintain what thou hast said, is false,
In thy Heart Blood, though being all too base;
To stain the temper of my Knightly Sword.

Bulling, Bagot, forbear, thou shalt not take it up:
Aum. Excepting one, I would he were the best.
In all this Presence that hath moved me so.

Fitzw. If that thy Valour stand on Sympathies:
There is my Gage, Aumerle, in Gage to thine:
By that fair Sun, that shews me where thou stand'st;
I heard thee say, and vauntingly thou spak'st it;
That thou wast cause of noble Glo'sfer's Death.
If thou deny't it, twenty times thou liest,
And I will turn thy falshood to thy Heart,
Where it was forged, with my Rapier's point:

Aum. Thou dar'st not, Coward, live to see the Day.
Fitzw. Now, by my Soul, I would it were this Hour.
Aum. Fitzwater, thou art damn'd to Hell for this.

Percy. Aumerle, thou liest; his Honour is as true,
In this Appeal, as thou art all unjust:
And that thou art so, there I throw my Gage
To prove it on thee, to th'extremest point
Of mortal Breathing. Seize it, if thou dar'st.

Aum. And if I do not may my Hands rot off,
And never brandish more revengeful Steel,
Over the glittering Helmet of my Foe.

Surrey. My Lord Fitzwater,
I do remember well the very time
Aumerle and you did talk.
Fitzw. My Lord,
Vol. III. N
'Tis very true: You were in Presence then; 
And you can witness with me, this is true. 

_Surrey._ As false, by Heav'n, as Heav'n it self is true. 

_Fitzw._ Surrey, thou liest. 

_Surrey._ Dishonourable Boy, 
That Lie shall lye so heavy on my Sword, 
That it shall render Vengeance and Revenge; 
'Till thou the Lie-giver, and that Lie, do lye, 
In Earth as quiet, as thy Father's Sould. 
In proof whereof, there is mine Honour's Pawn, 
Engage it to the Trial, if thou dar'ft. 

_Fitzw._ How fondly do'ft thou spur a forward Horse? 
If I dare eat, or drink, or breath, or live, 
I dare meet _Surrey_ in a Wildernes, 
And spit upon him, whilst I say he lies, 
And lies, and lies; there is my Bond of Faith, 
To tie thee to my Strong Correction. 
As I intend to thrive in this new World, 
_Aumerle_ is guilty of my true Appeal. 
Besides, I heard the banish'd _Norfolk_ say, 
That thou _Aumerle_ didst send two of thy Men, 
To execute the noble Duke at _Calais_. 

_Aun._ Some honest Christian trust me with a Gage, 
That _Norfolk_ lies; here do I throw down this, 
If he may be repeal'd, to try his Honour. 

_Bulming._ Thee Differences still all rest under Gage, 
'Till _Norfolk_ be repeal'd: Repeal'd he shall be; 
And though mine Enemy, restor'd again 
To all his Lands and Seigniories; when he's return'd, 
Against _Aumerle_ we will enforce his Trial. 

_Carl._ That honourable Day shall ne'er be seen, 
Many a time hath banish't _Norfolk_ fought 
For Jeu Christ, in glorious Christian Field 
Screaming the Ensign of the Christian Cross 
Against black Pagans, Turks, and Saracens: 
And toil'd with works of War, retir'd himself 
To _Italy_, and there at _Venice_ gave 
His Body to that pleasant Country's Earth, 
And his pure Soul unto his Captain Christ,
Of King Richard II.

Under whose Colours he had fought so long,

Bulling. Why, Bishop, is Norfolk dead?

Carl. As sure as I live, my Lord.

Bulling. Sweet Peace conduct his sweet Soul
To the Bosom of good old Abraham.

Lords Appealants, your Differences shall all rest under gage
'Till we align you to your Days of Trial.

Enter York.

Took. Great Duke of Lancaster, I come to thee
From plume-plucked Richard, who with willing Soul
Adopts thee Heir, and his high Sceptre yields
To the Possession of thy Royal Hand.
Ascend his Throne, descending now from him,
And long live Henry, of that Name the Fourth.

Bulling. In God's Name, I'll ascend the Regal Throne

Carl. Marry, Heav'n forbid.

Worsh in this Royal Presence may I speak,
Yet best beseeching me to speak the truth.
Would God, that any in this noble Presence
Were enough noble to be upright Judge
Of noble Richard, then true Noblenes would
Learn him forbearance from so foul a Wrong.
What Subject can give Sentence on his King?
And who sits here that is not Richard's Subject?
Thieves are not judg'd, but they are by to hear,
Although apparent Guilt be seen in them:
And shall the Figure of God's Majesty,
His Captain, Steward, Deputy elect,
Anointed, crown'd, and planted many Years,
Be judg'd by Subject and inferior Breath,
And he himself not present? Oh, forbid it, God,
That in a Christian Climate, Souls refin'd
Should shew so heinous, black, obscene a Deed.
I speak to Subjects, and a Subject speaks,
Stir'd up by Heav'n, thus boldly for his King.
My Lord of Hereford here, whom you call : King,
Is a foul Traitor to proud Hereford's King.
And if you crown him, let me prophesie,
The Blood of English shall manure the Ground,
And future Ages groan for his foul Act.
Peace shall go sleep with Turks and Infidels,
And in this Seat of Peace, tumultuous Wars
Shall Kin with Kin, and kind with kind confound.
Disorder, Horror, Fear and Mutiny
Shall here inhabit, and this Land be call'd
The Field of Golgotha, and dead Men's Sculls.
Oh, if you rear this House, against this House,
It will the wofullest Division prove,
That ever fell upon this cursed Earth.
Prevent it, reft it, let it not be fo,
Left Child, Childs Children cry against you, wo.

North. Well have you argu'd, Sir; and for your Pains,
Of Capital Treason we arrest you here.
My Lord of Winminster, be it your Charge,
To keep him safely, 'till his Day of Trial.
May it please you, Lords, to grant the Commons Suit?

Bulling. Fetch hither Richard, that in common View
He may surrender: so we shall proceed
Without Suspicion.

York. I will be his Conduct.

Bulling. Lords, you that are here under our Arrest,
Procure your Sureties for your Days of Answer:
Little are we beholding to your Love,
And little look'd for at your helping Hands.

Enter King Richard and York.

K. Rich. Alack, why am I sent for to a King,
Before I have stroke off the regal Thoughts
Wherewith I reign'd? I hardly yet have learn'd
To intinuate, flatter, bow, and bend my Knee,
Give Sorrow leave a while, to return me
To this Submision. Yet I well remember
The favours of these Men: Were they not mine?
Did they not sometime cry, All hail to me?
So Judas did to Christ: But he in twelve,
Found truth in all, but one; I in twelve thousand, none.
God save the King: Will no Man say, Amen.
Am I both Priest and Clark? Well then, Amen.
God save the King, although I be not he:
And yet Amen, if Heav'n do think him me,
To do what Service, am I sent for hither?
York. To do that Office of thine own good Will,
Which tired Majestie did make thee offer:
The Resignation of thy State and Crown
To Henry Bullingbroke.

K. Rich. Give me the Crown; Here Cousin, seize the Crown:
Here Cousin, on this side my Hand, on that side thine.
Now is this Golden Crown like a deep Well,
That owes two Buckets, filling one another,
The emptier ever dancing in the Air,
The other down, unseen, and full of Water:
That Bucket down, and full of Tears am I,
Drinking my Griefs, whilst you mount up on high.

Bulling. I thought you had been willing to resign.

K. Rich. My Crown I am, but still my Griefs are mine:
You may my Glories, and my State depose,
But not my Griefs; still am I King of those.

Bulling. Part of your Cares you give me with your Crown.

K. Rich. Your Cares set up, do not pluck my Cares down,
My Care, is loss of Care, by old Care done,
Your Care, is gain of Care, by new Care won.
The Cares I give, I have, though given away,
They tend the Crown, yet still with me they stay.

Bulling. Are you contented to resign the Crown?

K. Rich. I no; no I, for I must nothing be:
Therefore no no, for I resign to thee.
Now, mark me how I will undo myself;
I give this heavy Weight from off my Head,
And this unwieldy Scepter from my Hand,
The pride of Kingly Sway out from my Heart,
With mine own Tears I wash away my Blame,
With mine own Hands I give away my Crown,
With mine own Tongue deny my sacred State,
With mine own Breath release all dutious Oaths:
All Pomp and Majestie I do forswear:
My Manors, Rents, Revenues, I forgo;
My Acts, Decrees, and Statutes I deny:
God pardon all Oaths that are broke to me,
God keep all Vows unbroke are made to thee;
Make me, that nothing have, with nothing griev'd,
And thou with all pleas'd, that haft all achiev'd;

N 3

Long
Long may'lt thou live in Richard's Seat to sit,
And soon lyt Richard in an Earthly Pit.
God save King Henry, un-king'd Richard say
And send him many Years of Sun-shine Das.
What more remains? y

North. No more; but that you read
These Accusations, and these grievous Crimes
Committed by your Person, and your Followers,
Against the State and Profit of this Land:
That by confessing them, the Souls of Men
May deem that you are worthy depos'd.

K. Rich. Must I do so? And must I ravel out
My weav'd-up Follies? Gentle Northumberland,
K's thy Offences were upon Record,
Would it not shame thee, in so fair a Troop,
'To read a Lecture of them? If thou would'st,
There shouldn't thou find one heinous Article,
Containing the depoising of a King,
And cracking the strong Warrant of an Oath,
Mark'd with a blot, damn'd in the Book of Heav'n:
Nay, all of you, that stand and look upon me,
Whilst that my wretchedness doth bait my self,
Though some of you, with Pilate wash your Hands,
Shewing an outward Pity: Yet you Pilates
Have here delivered me to my lower Cross,
And Water cannot wash away your Sin.

North. My Lord, dispatch, read o'er these Articles.

K. Rich. Mine Eyes are full of Tears, I cannot see:
And yet Salt-water blinds them not so much,
But they can see a sort of Traitors here.
Nay, if I turn mine Eyes upon my self,
I find my self a Traitor with the rest:
For I have given here my Soul's confent,
'Tundeck the pompous Body of a King;
Made Glory base; a Sovereign, a Slave;
Proud Majesty, a Subject; State, a Peasant.

North. My Lord.

K. Rich. No Lord of thine, thou haught-insulting Man;
No, nor no Man's Lord: I have no Name, no Title;
No, not that Name was given me at the Font,
But 'tis usurp. Alack the heavy Day,  
That I have worn so many Winters out,  
And know not now, what Name to call my self:  
Oh, that I were a Mockery, King of Snow,  
Standing before the Sun of Bullingbroke,  
To melt my self away in Water-drops.  
Good King, great King, and yet not greatly good,  

[To Bulling.]

And if my Word be Sterling yet in England,  
Let it command a Mirror hither freight,  
That it may shew me what a Face I have,  
Since it is Bankrupt of his Majesty.  

Bulling. Go some of you and fetch a Looking-Glass!  
North. Read o'er this Paper, while the Glass doth come.  
K. Rich. Fiend, thou torment'st me, ere I come to Hell,  
Bulling. Urge it no more, my Lord Northumberland.  
North. The Commons will not then be satisfy'd.  
K. Rich. They shall be satisfy'd: I'll read enough,  
When I do see the very Book indeed,  
Where all my Sins are writ, and that's my self.  

Enter one with a Glass.  

Give me that Glass, and therein will I read.  
No deeper Wrinkles yet? Hath Sorrow struck  
So many Blows upon this Face of mine,  
And made no deeper Wounds? Oh flattering Glass,  
Like to my Followers in Prosperity,  
Thou dost beguile me. Was this Face, the Face  
That every Day under his Houshold-roof  
Did keep ten thousand Men? Was this the Face;  
That like the Sun did make Beholders wink?  
Is this the Face, which fac'd so many Follies,  
That was at last out-face'd by Bullingbroke?  
A brittle Glory shineth in this Face,  
As brittle as the Glory, is the Face,  
For there it is, crackt in an hundred Shivers.  
Mark, silent King, the Moral of this sport,  
How soon my Sorrow hath destroy'd my Face.  

Bulling. The Shadow of your Sorrow hath destroy'd  
The Shadow of your Face.  
K. Rich. Say that again.  
The Shadow of my Sorrow! ha, let's see,
The Life and Death

'Tis very true, my Grief lies all within,
And these external Manners of Laments
Are merely Shadows to the unseen Grief,
That swells with silence in the tortur'd Soul.
There lies the Substance: And I thank thee, King,
For thy great Bounty, that not only giv'it
Me Caufe to wail, but teachest me the way
How to lament the Caufe. I'll beg one boon,
And then be gone, and trouble you no more.
Shall I obtain it?

Bulling. Name it, fair Cousin.

K. Rich. Fair Cousin! I am greater than a King:
For when I was a King, my Flatterers
Were then but Subjects; being now a Subject,
I have a King here to my Flatterer:
Being so great, I have no need to beg.

Bulling. Yet ask.

K. Rich. And shall I have?

Bulling. You shall.

K. Rich. Then give me leave to go.

Bulling. Whither?

K. Rich. Whither you will, so I were from your sights.

Bulling. Go some of you, convey him to the Tower.

K. Rich. Oh good; convey: Conveyers are you all,
That rise thus nimbly by a true King's fall.

Bulling. On Wednesday next we solemnly set down
Our Coronation: Lords, prepare your selves.

[Exeunt but Abbot, Bishop of Carlisle and Aumerle.

Abbot. A woful Pageant have we here beheld.

Bishop. The wo's to come, the Children yet unborn,
Shall feel this Day as sharp to them as Thorn.

Aum. You holy Clergy-men, is there no Plot
To rid the Realm of this pernicious Blot?

Abbot. Before I freely speak my Mind herein,
You shall not only take the Sacrement,
To bury mine Intents, but also to effect
Whatever I shall happen to devise.
I see your Brows are full of Discontent,
Your Hearts of Sorrow, and your Eyes of Tears.
Come home with me to Supper, I'll lay a Plot
Shall shew us all a merry Day.

[Exeunt.

ACT
of King Richard II. 297.

ACT V. SCENE I.

Enter Queen and Ladies.

Queen. This way the King will come: This is the way To Julius Caesar's ill-crested Tower,
To whose flint Bosom, my condemned Lord Is doom'd a Prisoner, by proud Bullingbrooke.
Here let us rest, if this Rebellious Earth Have any resting for her true King's Queen.

Enter King Richard and Guards.

But soft, but see, or rather do not see,
My fair Rose wither; yet look up; behold,
That you in pity may dissolve to Dew,
And wash him fresh again with true-love Tears.
Thou the Model, where old Troy did stand, [To K. Rich.
Thou Map of Honour, thou King Richard's Tomb,
And not King Richard; thou most beauteous Inn,
Why should hard-favour'd Grief be lodg'd in thee,
When Triumph is become an Ale-house Guest?

K. Rich. Join not with Grief, fair Woman, do not so,
To make my End too sudden: Learn, good Soul,
To think our former State a happy Dream,
From which awak'd, the truth of what we are
Shews us but this. I am sworn Brother, Sweet,
To grim Necessity; and he and I
Will keep a League 'till Death. High thee to France,
And Cloister thee in some Religious House;
Our holy Lives must win a new World's Crown,
Which our prophane Hours here have stricken down.

Queen. What, is my Richard both in Shape and Mind
Transform'd and weakened? Hath Bullingbrooke
Depos'd thine Intellect? Hath he been in thy Heart?
The Lion dying thrusteth forth his Paw,
And wounds the Earth, if nothing else, with rage
To be o'er-power'd. And wilt thou, Pupil-like,
Take thy Correction mildly, kisst the Rod,
And fawn on Rage with base Humility,
Which art a Lion and a King of Beastis?

K. Rich. A King of Beasts indeed; if ought but Beasts,
I had been still a happy King of Men.
Good, sometime, Queen prepare thee hence for France;
N 5 Think
Think I am dead, and that even here thou tak'st,
As from my Death-bed, my last-living leave.
In Winter's tedious Nights sit by the Fire
With good old Folks, and let them tell thee Tales
Of woful Ages, long ago betide:
And ere thou bid good-night, to quit their Grief,
Tell them the lamentable Fall of me,
And send the Hearers weeping to their Beds:
For why? the senseless Brands will sympathize
The heavy accent of thy moving Tongue,
And in Compassion weep the Fire out:
And some will mourn in Ashes, some coal-black,
For the deposit of a rightful King.

Enter Northumberland.

North. My Lord, the Mind of Bullingbrooke is chang'd
You must to Pomfret, not unto the Tower,
And, Madam, there is order ta'en for you:
With all swift speed, you must away to France.

K. Rich. Northumberland, thou Ladder wherewithal
The mounting Bullingbrooke ascends my Throne,
The time shall not be many Hours of Age,
More than it is, ere foul Sin, gathering head,
Shall break into Corruption; thou shalt think,
Though he divide the Realm, and give thee half,
It is too little, helping him to all:
And he shall think, that thou which know'st the way
To plant unrightful Kings, wilt know again,
Being ne'er so little urg'd, another way,
To pluck him headlong from th' usurped Throne.
The love of wicked Friends converts to Fear;
That Fear to Hate; and Hate turns one, or both,
To worthy Danger, and deserved Death.

North. My Guilt be on my Head, and there's an end
Take leave, and part, for you must part forthwith.

A two-fold Marriage; 'twixt my Crown and me:
And then betwixt me and my married Wife.
Let me unkiss the Oath, 'twixt thee and me: [To the Queen.
And yet not so, for with a Kiss 'twas made.
Part us, Northumberland: I, towards the North,
Where shivering Cold and Sickness pines the Clime:

My
of King Richard II. 299

My Queen to France; from whence, set forth in Pomp,
She came adorned hither like sweet May,
Sent back like Hollowmas, or shortest Day.

Queen. And must we be divided? Must we part?
K. Rich. Ay, Hand from Hand, my Love, and Heart
from Heart.

Queen. Banish us both, and send the King with me.

North. That were some Love, but little Policy.

Queen. Then whither he goes, thither let me go.

K. Rich. So two together weeping, make one wo.

Weep thou for me in France; I for thee there:
Better far off than near, be ne'er the near.

Go, count thy way with Sighs, I mine with Groans:

Queen. So longest way, shall have the longest Moans.

K. Rich. Twice for one step I'll groan, the way being short,
And piece the way out with a heavy Heart.

Come, come, in wooing Sorrow let's be brief,
Since wedding it there is such length in Grief:

One Kiss shall stop our Mouths, and dumbly part;
Thus give I mine, and thus take I thy Heart. [They Kiss.

Queen. Give me mine own again; 'twere no good Part,
To take on me to keep, and kill thy Heart.

So, now I have mine own again, be gone, [Kiss again.
That I may strive to kill it with a Groan.

K. Rich. We make Woe wanton with this fond delay;
Once more adieu; the rest let Sorrow say. [Exeunt.

Scene II.

Enter York and his Dukes.

Dutch. My Lord, you told me you would tell the rest,
When weeping made you break the Story off,
Of our two Cousins coming into London.

York. Where did I leave?

Dutch. At that sad stop, my Lord,
Where rude milites govern'd Hands, from Windows tops,
Threw Dust and Rubbish on King Richard's Head.

York. Then, as I said, the Duke, great Bullingbroke,
Mounted upon a hot and fiery Steed,
Which his aspiring Rider seem'd to know,
With show, but stately Pace, kept on his Course:

While
While all Tongues cry'd, God save thee, Bullingbroke.
You would have thought the very Windows spake,
So many greedy Looks of young and old,
Through Cæfements darted their desiring Eyes
Upon his Visage; and that all the Walls
With painted Imagery had said at once.
Jesu preserve thee, welcome Bullingbroke.
Whilfe he, from one side to the other turning,
Bare-headed lower than his proud Steed’s Neck,
Bespoke them thus; I thank you, Country-men;
And thus still doing, thus he past along.

Dutch. Alas! poor Richard, where rides he the whilst?

York. As in a Theatre, the Eyes of Men,
After a well-grac’d Actor leaves the Stage,
Are idly bent on him that enters next,
Thinking his Prattle to be tedious:
Even so, or with much more contempt, Mens Eyes,
Did scowlc on Richard; no Man cry’d, God save him:
No joyful Tongue gave him his welcome home,
But Dust was thrown upon his Sacred Head,
Which with such gentle Sorrow he shook off,
His Face still combating with Tears and Smiles,
The Badges of his Grief and Patience,
That had not God, for some strong Purpose, steal’d
The Hearts of Men, they must perforce have melted,
And Barbarism it self have pitted him.
But Heav’n hath a Hand in these Events,
To whose high Will we bound our calm Contents;
To Bullingbroke are we sworn Subjects now,
Whose State, and Honour, I for aye allow.

Enter Aumerle.

Dutch. Here comes my Son Aumerle.
York. Aumerle that was,
But that is lost, for being Richard’s Friend,
And, Madam, you must call him Ruiland now:
I am in Parliament pledge for his Truth,
And lasting Fealty in the new-made King.

Dutch. Welcome my Son; who are the Violets now,
That strew the green Lap of the new-come Spring?

Lum. Madam, I know not, nor I greatly care.
God knows I had as lief be none, as one.

York. Well, bear you well in this new-spring of time,
Left you be cropt before you come to prime.

What News from Oxford? Hold those Jufts and Triumphs?

Aum. For ought I know, my Lord, they do.

York. You will be there I know.

Aum. If God prevent me not, I purpose so.

York. What Seal is that that hangs without thy Bosom?

Yea, look'ft thou pale? Let me see the Writing.

Aum. My Lord, 'tis nothing.

York. No matter then who sees it.

I will be satisfied, let me see the Writing.

Aum. I do beseech your Grace to pardon me,
It is a matter of small Consequence,
Which for some Reasons I would not have seen.

York. Which for some Reasons, Sir, I mean to see; I fear, I fear.

Dutch. What should you fear?
'Tis nothing but some Bond, that he is enter'd into
For gay Apparel, againt the Triumph.

York. Bound to himself? What doth he with a Bond
That he is bound to? Wife, thou art a Fool.

Boy, let me see the Writing.

Aum. I do beseech you pardon me, I may not shew it.
York. I will be satisfied, let me see it, I say.

[Snares it, and reads.]

Treason! soul Treason! Villain, Traitor, Slave.

Dutch. What's the matter, my Lord?

York. Hoa, who's within there? Saddle my Horse.

Heav'n for his Mercy; what Treachery is here?

Dutch. Why, what is't, my Lord?

York. Give me my Boots I say; saddle my Horse

Now by my Honour, my Life, my Troth,
I will approach the Villain.

Dutch. What is the matter?

York. Peace, foolish Woman.

Dutch. I will not peace: What is the matter, Son?

Aum. Good Mother be content, it is no more

Than my poor Life must answer.

Dutch. Thy Life answer!
Enter Servant with Boots.

York. Bring my Boots, I will unto the King.

Dutch. Strike him, Aumerle. Poor Boy, thou art amaz'd?

Hence Villain, never more come in my Sight.

York. Give me my Boots, I say.

Dutch. Why, York, what wilt thou do?

Wilt thou not hide the Trespass of thine own?

Have we more Sons? Or are we like to have?

Is not my teeming date drunk up with Time?

And wilt thou pluck my fair Son from mine Age,

And rob me of a happy Mother's Name?

Is he not like thee? Is he not thine own?

York. Thou fond mad Woman,

Wilt thou conceal this dark Conspiracy?

A dozen of them here have ta'en the Sacrament,

And interchangeably have set their Hands

To kill the King at Oxford.

Dutch. He shall be none:

We'll keep him here; then what is that to him?

York. Away fond Woman, were he twenty times

My Son, I would appeach him.

Dutch. Hadst thou groan'd for him

As I have done, thou'dst be more pitiful:

But now I know thy Mind; thou dost suspect

That I have been disloyal to thy Bed,

And that he is a Bastard, not thy Son:

Sweet York, sweet Husband, be not of that mind:

He is as like thee, as a Man may be,

Nor like to me, nor any of my Kin,

And yet I love him.

York. Make way, unruly Woman.

[Exit.]

Dutch. After, Aumerle. Mount thee upon his Horse,

Spur Poff, and get before him to the King,

And beg thy Pardon, ere he do accuse thee.

I'll not be long behind; though I be old,

I doubt not but to ride as fast as York:

And never will I rise up from the Ground.

'Till Bullyingbrooke have pardon'd thee. Away, be gone.

[Exeunt.]

SCENE
SCENE III.

Enter Bullingbroke, Percy, and other Lords.

Bulling. Can no Man tell of my unthrifty Son?
'Tis full three Months since I did see him last.
If any Plague hang over us, 'tis he:
I would to Heav'n, my Lords, he might be found,
Enquire at London, 'mongst the Taverns there:
For there, they say, he daily doth frequent,
With unrestrained loose Companions
Even such, they say, as stand in narrow Lanes,
And rob our Watch, and beat our Passengers,
Which he, young, wanton, and effeminate Boy,
Takes on the point of Honour, to support
So dissolute a Crew.

Percy. My Lord, some two Days since I saw the Prince;
And told him of these Triumphs held at Oxford.
Bulling. And what said the Gallant?

Percy. His Answer was; he would unto the Stews,
And from the common'ft Creature pluck a Glove
And wear it as a Favour, and with that
He would unhorfe the lustieft Challenger.

Bulling. As dissolute as desp'rate, yet through both
I see some Sparks of better hope; which elder Days
May happily bring forth. But who comes here?

Enter Aumerle.

Aum. Where is the King?

Bulling. What means our Cousin, that he stares
And looks so wildly?

Aum. God save your Grace. I do beseech your Majesty
To have some conference with your Grace alone.
Bulling. Withdraw your selves, and leave us here alone:
What is the matter with our Cousin now?

Aum. For ever may my Knees grow to the Earth, [Kneels,
My Tongue cleave to my Roof within my Mouth,
Unless a Pardon, ere I rise or speak.

Bulling. Intended or committed was this Fault?
If on the first, how heinous ere it be,
To win thy After-love I pardon thee.

Aum.
The Life and Death

Act III. Then give me leave that I may turn the Key,
That no Man enter till the Tale be done.

Bulling. Have thy desire. [York within.
York. My Liege beware, look to thy self,
Thou hast a Traitor in thy Presence there.

Bulling. Villain, I'll make thee safe.

Act IV. Stay thy revengeful Hand, thou hast no cause to fear!
York. Open the Door, secure fool-hardy King:
Shall I for love speak Treson to thy Face?
Open the Door, or I will break it open.

Enter York.

Bulling. What is the matter, Uncle, speak, recover breath,
Tell us how near is danger,
That we may arm us to encounter it.

York. Peruse this Writing here, and thou shalt know
The reason that my haste forbids me show.

Act III. Remember as thou read'st, thy Promise past:
I do repent me, read not my Name there,
My Heart is not confederate with my Hand.

York. It was, Villain, ere thy Hand did set it down,
I tore it from the Traitor's Bosom, King.
Fear, and not Love, begets his Penitence;
Forget to pity him, left thy Pity prove
A Serpent, that will sting thee to the Heart.

Bulling. O heinous, strong, and bold Conspiracy!
O loyal Father of a treacherous Son:
Thou sheer, immaculate, and Silver Fountain,
From whence this Stream, through muddy Passages
Had his Current, and defil'd himself.
Thy overflow of good, converts to bad,
And thine abundant Goodness shall excuse
This deadly Blot, in thy digressing Son.

York. So shall my Virtue be his Vice's Bawd,
And he shall spend mine Honour with his Shame;
As thriftless Sons their scrapings Father's Gold.
Mine Honour lives when his Dishonour dies:
Or my sham'd Life in his Dishonour lies;
Thou kill'st me in his Life, giving him breath,
The Traitor lives, the true Man's put to Death.

[Duchess within.

Dutch. What ho, my Liege! for Heav'n's sake let me in,

Bulling
Bulling. What shrill-voic’d Suppliant makes this eager cry?

Dutch. A Woman, and thine Aunt, great King, ’tis I, Speak with me, pity me, open the Door, A Beggar begs, that never begg’d before.

Bulling. Our Scene is alter’d from a serious thing; And now chang’d to the Beggar, and the King: My dangerous Cousin, let your Mother in, I know she’s come to pray for your foul Sin: York. If thou do pardon, whosoever pray, More Sins for this forgivenes prosper may; This fester’d Joint cut off, the rest rests found, This let alone, will all the rest confound.

Enter Dutchefs.


Bulling. Rise up, good Aunt. Dutch. Not yet, I thee beseech; For ever will I kneel upon my Knees, And never see Day that the happy sees, ’Til thou give Joy, until thou bid me Joy, By pardoning Rutland, my transgressing Boy. Aunt. Unto my Mother’s Prayers, I bend my Knee: [Kneels.

York. Against them both, my true Jointi bended be. [Kneels. Dutch. Pleads he in earnest? Look upon his Face; His Eyes do drop no Tears, his Prayers are in Jeff; His Words come from his Mouth, ours from our Breast; He prays but faintly, and would be deny’d; We pray with Heart and Soul, and all beside. His weary Joints would gladly rise, I know; Our Knees shall kneel, ’till to the Ground they grow. His Prayers are full of false Hypocrifie, Ours of true Zeal, and deep Integrity: Our Prayers do out-pray his, then let them have That Mercy, which true Prayers ought to have. Bulling:
Bulling. Good Aunt stand up.

Dutch. Nay, do not say stand up,
But pardon first, and afterwards stand up.
And if I were thy Nurse, thy Tongue to teach,
Pardon should be the first Word of thy Speech.
I never long’d to hear a Word ’till now:
Say Pardon, King, let pity teach thee how.
The Word is short, but not so short as sweet,
No Word like Pardon, for Kings Mouths to meet.

York. Speak it in French, King, say Pardonnez moy.

Dutch. Doft thou teach Pardon, Pardon to destroy?
Ah my sower Husband, my hard-hearted Lord,
That set’tst the Word it self, against the Word.
Speak Pardon as ’tis currant in our Land,
The chopping French we do not understand.
Thine Eye begins to speak, let thy Tongue there:
Or in thy piteous Heart. plant thou thine Ear,
That hearing how our Plaints and Prayers do pierce,
Pity may move thee, Pardon to rehearse.

Bulling. Good Aunt stand up.

Dutch. I do not sue to stand,
Pardon is all the Suit I have in hand.

Bulling. I pardon him, as Heav’n shall pardon me.

Dutch. O happy Vantage of a kneeling Knee;
Yet am I sick for Fear; speak it again,
Twice saying Pardon, doth not pardon twain,
But makes one Pardon strong.

Bulling. I pardon him with all my Heart.

Dutch. A God on Earth thou art.

Bulling. But for our trusty Brother-in-law, the Abbot,
With all the rest of that conforted Crew,
Destruction fright shall dog them at the Heels.
Good Uncle help to order several Powers
To Oxford, or where-e’er these Traitors are:
They shall not live within this World, I swear,
But I will have them once know where.
Uncle farewell, and Cousin adieu;
Your Mother well hath pray’d, and prove you true.

Dutch. Come my old Son, I pray Heav’n make thee new.

[Exeunt.]

Enter
Enter Exton and a Servant.

Exton. Didst thou not mark the King what Words he spake? Have I no Friend will rid me of this living Fear. Was it so?

Serv. Those were his very Words.

Exton. Have I no Friend? quoth he; he spake it twice; And urg'd it twice together; did he not?

Serv. He did.

Exton. And speaking it, he wistly look'd on me, As who shall say, I would thou wert the Man That would divorce this Terror from my Heart; Meaning the King at Pomfret. Come, let's go, I am the King's Friend, and will rid his Foe. [Exeunt:  

SCENE IV. A Prison.

Enter King Richard.

K. Rich. I have been studying, how to compare This Prison where I live, unto the World; And for because the World is populous, And here is not a Creature but my self, I cannot do it; yet I'll hammer't out. My Brain, I'll prove the Female to my Soul, My Soul, the Father; and these two beget A Generation of still breeding Thoughts; And these same Thoughts people this little World In Humours, like the People of this World, For no Thought is contented. The better Sort, As Thoughts of things divine, are intermixt With Scruples, and do set the Faith it self Against the Faith; as thus; come little ones; and then again; It is as hard to come, as for a Camel To thread the Postern of a Needle's Eye.

Thoughts tending to Ambition, they do plot Unlikely Wonders; how these vain weak Nails May tear a Passage through the flinty Ribs Of this hard World, my ragged Prison Walls: And for they cannot, die in their own Pride. Thoughts tending to Content, flatter themselves,
That they are not the first of Fortune's Slaves,
Nor shall not be the last. Like silly Beggars,
Who-fitting in the Stocks, refuge their Shame
That many have, and others must sit there;
And in this Thought, they find a kind of Ease,
Bearing their own Misfortune on the Back
Of such as have before endur'd the like.
Thus play I in one Prison, many People,
And none contented. Sometimes am I King;
Then Treason makes me with my self a Beggar,
And so I am. Then crushing Penury
Persuades me. I was better when a King;
Then am I king'd again; and by and by,
Think that I am unking'd by Bullyingbroke,
And therein am nothing. But what e'er I am,
Nor I, nor any Man, that but Man is,
With nothing shall be pleas'd, 'till he be eas'd
With being nothing. Musick do I hear?
Ha, ha; keep time: How lower sweet Musick is,
When time is broke, and no Proportion kept?
So is it in the Musick of Mens Lives;
And here have I the Daintiness of Ear,
To here time broke in a disorder'd String;
But for the Concord of my State and Time,
Had not an Ear to hear my true Time broke:
I wasted Time, and now doth Time waste me.
For now hath Time made me his numbring Clock:
My Thoughts are Minutes; and with Sighs they jar,
Their Watches to mine Eyes, the outward Watch,
Where to my Finger, like a Dial's Point,
Is pointing still, in cleansing them from Tears.
Now, Sir, the Sound that tells what Hour it is,
Are clamorous Groans, that strike upon my Heart,
Which is the Bell; so Sighs, and Tears, and Groans,
Shew Minutes, Hours, and Times: O but my Time
Runs posting on, in Bullyingbroke's proud Joy,
While I stand fooling here, his Jack o' th' Clock.
This Musick mads me, let it sound no more;
For though it have holp mad Men to their Wits,
of King Richard II. 309

In me it seems, it will make wife Men mad.
Yet blessing on his Heart that gives it me,
For ’tis a Sign of Love; and Love to Richard,
Is a strange Brooch, in this all-hating World.

Enter Groom.

Groom. Hail, royal Prince.

The cheapest of us, is ten Groats too dear.
What art thou? and how com'st thou hither,
Where no Man ever comes, but that sad Dog
That brings me Food, to make Misfortune live?

Groom. I was a poor Groom of thy Stable, King,
When thou wert King, who travelling towards York,
With much ado, at length have gotten Leave,
To look upon my, sometimes Royal, Master's Face,
O how it yearn'd my Heart, when I beheld
In London Streets, that Coronation Day;
When Bullingbroke rode on roan Barbary;
That Horse, that thou so often haft bestrid;
That Horse, that I so carefully have drest'd.

K. Rich. Rode he on Barbary? Tell me, gentle Friend,
How went he under him?

Groom. So proudly, as if he had disdain'd the Ground.

K. Rich. So proud that Bullingbroke was on his Back!
That Jade hath eat Bread from my royal Hand.
This Hand hath made him proud with clapping him.
Would he not stumble? Would he not fall down,
Since Pride must have a fall, and break the Neck
Of that proud Man, that did usurp his Back?
Forgiveness, Horse; why do I rail on thee,
Since thou, created to be aw'd by Man,
Waft born to bear? I was not made a Horse,
And yet I bear a Burthen like an Afs,
Spur-gall'd, and tyr'd by jaunting Bullingbroke.

Enter Keeper with a Diff.

Keep. Fellow, give Place, here is no longer stay.

[To the Groom.

K. Rich. If thou love me, 'tis time thou wert away.

Groom.
The Life and Death

Groom. What my Tongue dares not, that my Heart shall say.

Keep. My Lord, will't please you to fall to?

K. Rich. Taste of it first, as thou wert wont to do.

Keep. My Lord, I dare not; Sir Pierce of Exton,
Who lately came from th' King, commands the contrary.

K. Rich. The Devil take Henry of Lancaster, and thee;
Patiency is faine, and I am weary of it. [Beats the Keeper.

Keep. Help, help, help.

Enter Exton and Servants.

K. Rich. How now? What means Death in this rude Assault?

Villain, thine own Hand yields thy Deaths Instrument;
Go thou and fill another Room in Hell.

[Exton strikes him down.

That Hand shall burn in never-quenching Fire,
That flaggers thus my Person. Exton, thy fierce Hand,
Hath with the King's Blood stain'd the King's own Land.
Mount, mount my Soul, thy Seat is up on high,
Whilst my grofs Fleshe sinks downward here to die.[Dies.

Exton. As full of Valour as of Royal blood,
Both have I spilt: Oh would the Deed were good;
For now the Devil that told me I did well,
Says, that this Deed is chronicled in Hell.
This dead King to the living King I'll bear,
Take hence the rest, and give them burial here. [Exeunt.

Scene V.

Flourish: Enter Bullingbroke, York, with other Lords and Attendants.

Bulling. Uncle York, the latest News we hear,
Is that the Rebels have consum'd with Fire
Our Town of Ciceser in Gloucestershire;
But whether they be ta'en or slain, we hear not.

Enter Northumberland.

Welcome my Lord: What is the News?

North. First to thy sacred State with I all Hapinnys;
The next News is, I have to London lent
The Heads of Salisbury, Spencer, Blnet and Kent,
The manner of their taking may appear
At large discoursed in this Paper here. [Presenting a Paper;
   Bulling. We thank thee, gentle Percy, for thy Pains,
And to thy Worth will add right worthy Gains.
   Enter Fitz-water.

   Fitz. My Lord, I have from Oxford sent to London
The Heads of Brocas, and Sir Bennet Seely;
Two of the dangerous comforted Traitors,
That fought at Oxford thy dire Overthrow.
   Bulling. Thy Pains, Fitz-water, shall not be forgot;
Right noble is thy Merit, well I wot;
   Enter Percy and the Bishop of Carlisle.

   Percy. The grand Conspirator Abbot of Westminster,
With clog of Conscience, and four Melancholly,
Hath yielded up his Body to the Grave;
But here is Carlisle, living to abide
Thy kingly Doom, and Sentence of his Pride.
   Bulling. Carlisle, this is your Doom:
Chuse out some secret Place, some reverend Room
More than thou haft, and with it joy thy felt:
So as thou liv’st in Peace, die free from Strife.
For though mine Enemy thou haft ever been,
High Sparks of Honour in thee I have seen.
   Enter Exton with a Coffin.

   Exton. Great King, within this Coffin I present
Thy bury’d Fear. Herein all breathless lyes
The mightiest of thy greatest Enemies,
Richard of Bourdeaux by me hither brought.
   Bulling. Exton I thank thee not, for thou haft wrought
A Deed of Slaughter with thy fatal Hand,
Upon my Head, and all this famous Land.
   Exton. From your own MOUTH, my Lord, did I this Deed.
   Bulling. They love not Poifon, that do Poifon need;
Nor do I thee, though I did with him dead;
I hate the Murtherer, love him murthered.
The Guilt of Conscience take thou for thy Labour,
But neither my good Word, nor princely Favour,
With Cain go wander through the Shade of Night,
And never shew thy Head by Day, nor Light.

Lords,
Lords, I protest my Soul is full of Wo,
That Blood should sprinkle me, and make me grow:
Come mourn with me, for that I do lament,
And put on sullen Black incontinent:
I'll make a Voyage to the Holy-Land,
'To wash this Blood off from my guilty Hand.
March sadly after, grace my Mourning here,
In weeping after this untimely Bier.    [Exeunt omnes.
The First Part of
HENRY IV.
WITH THE
LIFE and DEATH
OF
Henry Sirnam'd Hot-Spur.

Printed in the YEAR MDCCXIV.
Dramatis Personae.

King Henry the Fourth.

Henry, Prince of Wales, 3 Sons to the King.
John, Prince of Lancaster,

Worcester,
Northumberland,
Hot-Spur,
Mortimer,
Archbishop of York,

Enemies to the King.
Dowglas,
Owen Glendower,
Sir Richard Vernon,
Sir Michell,

Westmorland, 3 of the King's Party.
Sir Walter Blunt,

Lords attending the King.

Sir John Falstaff.

Poins,
Gads-hill,
Peto,
Bardolph,

Companions of Falstaff.

Lady Percy, Wife to Hot-Spur.
Lady Mortimer, Daughter to Glendower, and Wife to Mortimer.

Hoffes.

Sheriff, Vintner, Chamberlain, Drawers, two Carriers, Travellers, and Attendants.

Scene England.
The First Part of

HENRY IV.

With the Life and Death of

Henry Sirnam'd Hot-Spur.

ACT I. SCENE I.

Enter King Henry, Lord John of Lancaster, Earl of Westmorland, and others.

King HENRY.

O shaken as we are, so wan with Care,
Find we a time for frighted Peace to pant,
And breathe short-winded accents of new Broils
To be commenc'd in Stronds afar remote:

No more the thirsty Entrance of this Soil
Shall damp her Lips with her own Children Blood:
No more shall trenching War channel her Fields,
Nor bruise her Flowrets with the armed Hoofs
Of Hostile Paces. Those opposed Eyes,
Which like the Meteors of a troubled Heav'n,
All of one Nature, of one Substance bred,
Did lately meet in the intestine shock,
And furious close of civil Butchery,
Shall now in mutual well-befoeming Ranks
March all one way, and be no more oppos'd
Against Acquaintance, Kindred, and Allies;
The edge of War, like an ill-sheathed Knife,
No more shall cut his Matter. Therefore, Friends,
As far as to the Sepulchre of Christ,
Whose Soldier now, under whose blessed Cross
We are impressed, and engag'd to fight,
Forthwith a Power of English shall we levy,
Whose Arms were moulded in their Mother's Womb,
To chase these Pagans in those holy Fields,
Over whose Acres walk'd those blessed Feet
Which fourteen hundred Years ago were nail'd
For our Advantage on the bitter Cross.
But this our purpose is a Twelvemonth old,
And bootless 'tis to tell you we will go:
Therefore we meet not now. Then let me hear
Of you my gentle Cousin Westmorland,
What yeasternight our Council did decree,
In forwarding this dear Expedition.
West. My Liege, this haste was hot in question,
And many limits of the Charge set down
But yeasternight: When all athwart there came
A Post from Wales, loaden with heavy News;
Whose worst was, that the noble Mortimer,
Leading the Men of Herefordshire to fight
Against the irregular and wild Glendower,
Was by the rude Hands of that Welshman taken,
And a thousand of his People butchered;
Upon whose dead Corps there was such misufe,
Such beastly, shameles Transformation,
By those Welshmen done, as may not be,
Without much flame, be told or spoken of.
K. Henry. It seems then, that the tidings of this Broil
Brake off our Business for the Holy Land.
West. This, matcht with other like, my gracious Lord;
Far more uneven and unwelcome News
King Henry IV.

Came from the North, and thus it did report:
On Holy-rood Day, the gallant Hotspur there,
Young Harry Percy, and brave Archibald,
That ever-valiant and approved Scot,
At Holmedon met, where they did spend
A sad and bloody Hour:
As by discharge of their Artillery
And shape of likelihood the News was told:
For he that brought them, in the very Heat
And pride of their Contention, did take Horse,
Uncertain of the Issue any way.

K. Henry. Here is a dear and true industrious Friend;
Sir Walter Blunt, new lighted from his Horse,
Stain'd with the variation of each Soil,
Betwixt the Holmedon, and this Seat of ours:
And he hath brought us smooth and welcome News.
The Earl of Douglas is discomfited,
Ten thousand bold Scots, two and twenty Knights
Balk'd in their own Blood did Sir Walter see
On Holmedon's Plains. Of Prisoners, Hotspur took
Mordake Earl of Fife, and eldest Son
To beat on Douglas, and the Earl of Athol,
Of Marry, Angus, and Menteith.
And is not this an Honourable Spoil?
A gallant Prize? Ha, Cousin is it not? In faith it is.
Well. A Conquest for a Prince to boast of.

K. Henry. Yea, there thou mak'st me sad, and mak'st me sin,
In envy, than my Lord Northumberland
Should be the Father of so blest a Son;
A Son, who is the Theam of Honour's Tongue:
Amongst a Grove, the very freightest Plant,
Who is sweet Fortune's Minion, and her Pride:
Whilst I by looking on the Praise of him,
See Riot and Dishonour stain the Brow
Of my young Harry. O that it could be prov'd,
That some Night-tripping Fairy had exchang'd,
In Cradle Cloaths, our Children where they lay,
And call'd mine Percy, his Plantagenet;
Then would I have his Harry, and he mine:
But let him from my Thoughts. What think you Coz,
Of this young Percy's Pride? The Prisoners,
Which he in this Adventure hath surpriz'd,
To his own use he keeps, and sends me Word
I shall have none but Mordake Earl of Fife.

West. This is his Uncle's teaching, this is Worcester;
Malevolent to you in all Aspects;
Which makes him prune himself, and bristle up
The crest of Youth against your Dignity.

K. Henry. But I have sent for him to answer this;
And for this Cause a while we must neglect
Our holy Purpose to Jerusalem.
Confin, on Wednesday next, our Council we will hold
At Windsor, so inform the Lords,
But come your self with speed to us again;
For more is to be said, and to be done,
Than out of Anger can be uttered.

West. I will, my Liege. [Excuns.

SCENE II.

Enter Henry Prince of Wales, and Sir John Falstaff.

Fal. Now Hal, what time of Day is it, Lad?

P. Henry. Thou art so fat-witted with drinking of old
Sack and unbuttoning thee after Supper, and sleeping up-
on Benches in the Afternoon, that thou hast forgotten to
demand that truly, which thou would'st truly know. What
a Devil hast thou to do with the time of the Day? unless
Hours were Cups of Sack, and Minutes Capons, and
Clocks the Tongues of Bawds, and Dials the Signs of
Leaping-Houses, and the blessed Sun himself a fair hot
Wench in Flame-colour'd Taffata, I see no Reason why thou
should'st so superfluous, to demand the time of the Day.

Fal. Indeed you come near me now, Hal. For we that
take Purfes, go by the Moon and seven Stars, and not
by Phaebus, he, that wandring Knight so fair. And I
pray thee, sweet Wag, when thou art King—as God
live thy Grace, Majesty I should say, for Grace thou wilt
have none.—

P. Henry. What! none?

Fal.
Fal. No, not so much as will serve to be Prologue to an Egg and Butter.

P. Henry. Well, how then? Come roundly, roundly.

Fal. Marry then, sweet Wag, when thou art King, let not us that are Squires of the Night's Body, be call'd Thieves of the Day's Beauty. Let us be Diana's Foresters, Gentlemen of the Shade, Minions of the Moon; and let Men say, we be Men of good Government, being governed as the Sea is, by our noble and chaste Mistress the Moon, under whose Countenance we steal.

P. Henry. Thou say'st well, and it holds well too; for the Fortune of us that are the Moon's Men, doth ebb and flow like the Sea, being govern'd as the Sea is, by the Moon. As for Proof, now: A Purse of Gold must resolutely snatch'd on Monday Night, and most disolutely spent on Tuesday Morning; got with swearing, Laid by; and spent with crying. Bring in: Now in as low an Ebb, as the Foot of the Ladder; and by and by in as high a flow as the Tide of the Gallows.

Fal. Thou say'st true, Lad: And is not my Hostess of the Tavern a most sweet Wench?

P. Henry. As is the Honey, my old Lad of the Castle; and is not a Buff-Jerkin a most sweet Robe of durance?

Fal. How, how? How now mad Wag? What, in thy Quips and thy Quiddities? What a plague have I to do with a Buff-Jerkin?

P. Henry. Why, what a Pox have I to do with my Hostess of the Tavern?

Fal. Well, thou hast call'd her to a reckoning many a time and oft.

P. Henry. Did I ever call thee to pay thy Part?

Fal. No, I'll give thee thy due, thou hast paid all there.

P. Henry. Yea, and elsewhere, so far as my Coin would stretch, and where it would not, I have us'd my Credit.

Fal. Yea, and so us'd it, that were it here apparent, that thou art Heir apparent—But I prithee sweet Wag, shall there be Gallows standing in England when thou art King? and Resolution thus fob'd as it is, with the rusty curb of old Father Antick the Law? Do not thou when thou art a King, hang a Thief.

P. Henry. No; thou shalt.
The First Part of

FAL. Shall I? O rare! I'll be a brave Judge.

P. Henry. Thou judgest false already; I mean thou shalt have the hanging of the Thieves, and so become a rare Hangman.

FAL. Well, Hal, well; and in some sort it jumps with my Humour, as well as waiting in the Court, I can tell you.

P. Henry. For obtaining of Suits?

FAL. Yes, for obtaining of Suits, whereof the Hangman hath no lean Wardrobe. I am as melancholy as a G, b, Cat, or a lugg’d Bear.

P. Henry. Or an old Lion, or a Lover's Lute.

FAL. Yes, or the Drone of a Lincolnshire Bagpipe.

P. Henry. What say’st thou to a Hare, or the Melancholy of Moor-Ditch?

FAL. Thou hast the most unflavour Similes, and art indeed the most comparative ascalfe! sweet young Prince——But, Hal, I prithee trouble me no more with Vanity; I would thou and I knew, where a Commodity of good Names were to be bought: An old Lord of the Council rated me the other Day in the Street about you, Sir; but I mark’d him not, and yet he talk’d very wisely, and in the Street too.

P. Henry. Thou didst well; for no Man regards it.

FAL. O, thou hast damnable Iteration, and art indeed able to corrupt a Saint. Thou hast done much harm unto me, Hal, God forgive thee for it. Before I knew thee, Hal, I knew nothing; and now I am, if a Man should speak truly, little better than one of the Wicked. I must give over this Life, and I will give it over; and I do not, I am a Villain. I'll be damned for never a King's Son in Christendom.

P. Henry. Where shall we take a Purse to Morrow, Jack?

FAL. Where thou wilt, Lad, I'll make one; and I do not, call me Villain, and baffle me.

P. Henry. I see a good Amendment of Life in thee, from Praying to Purse-taking.

FAL. Why, Hal, 'tis my Vocation, Hal. 'Tis no sin for a Man to labour in his Vocation.

Enter Poinson.

Poinson. Now shall we know if Gads-hill have set a Watch. O, if Men were to be faved by Merit; what Hole in Hell were hot enough for him? This is the most omnipotent Villain, that ever cry'd, Stand, to a true Man,
P. Henry. Good morrow, Ned.

Poins. Good Morrow. Sweet Hal. What says Monsieur Remorse? What says Sir John Sack and Sugar? Jack! How agrees the Devil and thee about thy Soul, that thou soldest him on Good Friday last, for a Cup of Madera, and a cold Capon's Leg?

P. Henry. Sir John stands to his Word, the Devil shall have his Bargain, for he was never yet a breaker of Proverbs; He will give the Devil his due.

Poins. Then art thou damn'd for keeping thy Word with the Devil.

P. Henry. Else he had been damn'd for cozening the Devil.

Poins. But, my Lads, my Lads, tomorrow Morning, by four a Clock early at Gad's Hill; there are Pilgrims going to Canterbury with rich Offerings, and Traders riding to London with fat Purfles. I have Vizards for y' u all; you have Horlfs for your selvys; Gad's Hill lies to Night in Rochester. I have bespok Supper to morrow in East cheap; we may do it as secure as sleep: If you will go, I will fluff your Purfes full of Crowns; if you will not, tarry at home and be hang'd.

Fal. Hear he Tedward, if I tarry at home, and go nor, I'll hang you for going.

Poins. You will, Chops?

Fal. Hal, wilt thou make one?


Fal. There's neither Honesty, Manhood, nor good Fellowship in thee, nor thou can't not of the Blood-Royal, if thou dar'n't not stand for ten Shillings.

P. Henry. Well then, once in my Days I'll be a mad-cap.

Fal. Why, that's well said.

P. Henry. Well, come what will, I'll tarry at home.

Fal. I'll be a Traitor then, when thou art King.

P. Henry. I care not.

Poins. Sir John, I prithee leave the Prince and me alone, I will lay him down such Reasons for this Adventure, that he shall go.

Fal. Well, may't thou have the Spirit of Persuasion, and he the Ears of profiting; that what thou speakest may move, and what he hears may be believ'd; that the true
Prince may, for Recreation sake, prove a false Thief; for
the poor Abuses of the time, want Countenance. Farewel,
you shall find me in East-cheap.

P. Henry. Farewel the latter Spring. Farewel allhollow Summer.

[Exit Fal.

Poins. Now, my good sweet hony Lord, ride with us to
morrow. I have a Jef to execute, that I cannot manage a-
one. Falstaff, Harvey, Рoffil, and Gads-Hill, shall rob
those Men that we have already way-laid; your self and I
will not be there; and when they have the Booty, if you
and I do not rob them, cut this Head from my Shoulders.

P. Henry. But how shall we part with them in setting forth?

Poins. Why, we will set forth before or after them, and
appoint them a Place of meeting, wherein it is at our plea-
sure to fail; and then will they adventure upon the Exploit
themselves, which they have no sooner atchiev'd, but we'll
set upon them.

P. Henry. Ay but 'tis like that they will know us by
our Horfes, by our Habits, and by every other Appoint-
ment to be our selves.

Poins. Tut, our Horfes they shall not see, I'll tye them
in the Wood; our Wizards we will change after we leave
them; and Sirrah, I have Cases of Buckram for the nonce
to immask our noted outward Garments.

P. Henry. But I doubt they will be too hard for us.

Poins. Well, for two of them, I know them to be a true
bred Cowards as ever turn'd back; and for the third, if
he fight longer than he sees Reason, I'll forswear Arms.
The virtue of this Jef will be, the incomprehensible Lies
that this fat Rogue will tell us, when we meet at Supper;
how thirty at least he fought with, what Words, what
Blows, what Extremities he endured; and in the Reproof
of this, lies the Jef.

П. Henry. Well, I'll go with thee, provide us all things
necessary, and meet me to morrow Night in East-cheap,
there I'll sup. Farewel.

Poins. Farewel, my Lord. [Exit Poins.

P. Henry. I know you all, and will a while uphold
The unyok'd Humour of your Idleness;
Yet herein will I imitate the Sun,
Who doth permit the base contagious Clouds
To smother up his Beauty from the World;
That when he please again to be himself,
Being wanted, he may be more wondered at,
By breaking through the foul and ugly Mists
Of Vapours, that did seem to strangle him.
If all the Year were playing Holidays,
To sport would be as tedious as to work;
But when they seldom come, they withit-for come;
And nothing pleaseth but rare Accidents.
So when this loose Behaviour I throw off,
And pay the Debt I never promised;
By how much better than my Word I am;
By so much shall I falsifie Mens Hopes;
And like bright Mettal on a sullen Ground
My Reformation glittering o'er my Fault
Shall shew more goodly, and attract more Eyes,
Than that which hath no Soil to set it off.
I'll so offend, to make Offence a Skill,
Redeeming time, when Men think least I will.  [Exit.

SCENE III.

Enter King Henry, Northumberland, Worcester, Hot-Spur,
Sir Walter Blunt, and others.

K. Henry. My Blood hath been too cold and temperate,
Unapt to stir at these Indigities,
And you have found me; for accordingly,
You tread upon my Patience: But be sure,
I will from henceforth rather be my self,
Mighty, and to be fear'd, then my Condition,
Which hath been smooth as Oyl, soft as young Down,
And therefore lost the Title of Respect,
Which the proud never pays, but to the proud.

Wor. Our House, my Soveraign Liege, little deserves
The Scourge of Greatness to be used on it,
And that fame Greatness too, which our own Hands,
Have help to make so portly.

North. My Lord ——

K. Henry. Worcester get thee gone; for I do see

Danger
The First Part of

Danger and Disobedience in thine Eye.
O Sir, your Presence is too bold and peremptory,
And Majesty might never yet endure
The moody Frontier of a Servant Brow,
You have good Leave to leave us. When we need
Your Ufe and Counsel, we shall send for you.

[Exit Worcester.

You were about to speak.]

[To Northumberland,

North. Yes, my good Lord.
Those Prisoners in your Highness Name demanded,
Which Harry Percy here at Holmedon took,
Were, as he says, not with such Strength deny’d
As was deliver’d to your Majesty.
Who ever through Envy, or Misprision,
Was guilty of this Fault, ’twas not my Son.

Het. My Liege, I did deny no Prisoners.
But, I remember when the Fight was done,
When I was dry with Rage, and extream Toil,
Breathless, and faint, leaning upon my Sword,
Came there a certain Lord, neat and trimly dress’d:
First as a Bridegroom, and his Chin new reap’d,
Shew’d like a Stubble Land at Harvest home.
He was perfumed like a Milliner,
And ’twixt his Finger and his Thumb, he held
A Pouncet Box, which ever and anon
He gave his Nose, and took’t away again;
Who therewith angry, when it next came there,
Took it in Snuff. And still he smil’d and talk’d;
And as the Soldiers bare dead Bodies by,
He call’d them untaught Knaves, unmannerly,
To bring a slovenly, unhandsome Coarse
Betwixt the Wind, and his Nobility.
With many Holiday and Lady Terms
He question’d me: Among the rest, demanded
My Prisoners, in your Majesty’s behalf.
I then all-smarting with my Wounds, being cold,
To be so pester’d with a Popingay,
Out of my Grief, and my impatience,
Answer’d, neglectingly, I know not what,
He should or should not; for he made me mad,
To see him shine so brisk, and smell so sweet,
And talk so like a waiting-Gentlewoman,
Of Guns, and Drums, and Wounds; God save the Mark;
And telling me, the Sovereign'th thing on Earth
Was Farmacity, for an inward Bruise;
And that it was great Pity, so it was.
The villainous Salt-peter should be digg'd
Out of the Bowels of the harmless Earth,
Which many a good tall Fellow had destroy'd
So cowardly. And but for these vile Guns,
He would himself have been a Soldier.
This bald, unjointed Chat of his, my Lord,
Made me to answer indirectly, as I said,
And I beseech you, let not this Report
Come currant for an Accusation,
Betwixt my Love and your high Majesty.

Blunt. The Circumstance consider'd, good my Lord,
What ever Harry Percy then had said,
To such a Person, and in such a Place,
At such a Time, with all the rest retold,
May reasonably die, and never rise
To do him wrong, or any way impeach
What then he said, so he unsay it now.

K. Henry. Why yet doth he deny his Prisoners,
But with Provise and Exception,
That we at our own Charge, shall ransom straight
His Brother-in-Law, the foolish Mortimer,
Who, in my Soul, hath wilfully betray'd
The Lives of those, that he did lead to fight,
Against the great Magician, damn'd Glendower,
Whose Daughter, as we hear, the Earl of March
Hath lately marry'd. Shall our Coffers then
Be empty'd, to redeem a Traitor home?
Shall we buy Treason? and indent with Fears,
When they have loft and forfeited themselves?
No; on the barren Mountains, let him starve;
For I shall never hold that Man my Friend,
Whose Tongue shall ask me for one Penny Coin
To ransom home revolted Mortimer.

Hot. Revolted Mortimer?
He never did fall off, my Soveraign Liege,
But by the Chance of War; to prove that true;
Needs no more but one Tongue, for all those Wounds;
Those mouthed Wounds, which valiantly he took,
When on the gentle Severns Sedgie Bank,
In single Opposition Hand to Hand
He did confound the best part of an Hour
In changing Hardiment with great Glendower:
Three times they breath'd, and three times did they drink
Upon Agreement of swift Severn's Flood;
Who then affrighted with their bloody Looks,
Ran fearfully among the trembling Reeds,
And hid his crisped Head in a hollow Bank,
Blood-stained with these valiant Combatants.
Never did base, and rotten Policy
Colour her working with such deadly Wounds;
Nor ever could the noble Mortimer
Receive so many, and all willingly;
Then let him not be slander'd with Revolt. [him;
K. Henry. Thou dost belie him, Percy, thou dost belie
He never did encounter with Glendower;
I tell thee, he durst as well have met the Devil alone,
As Owen Glendower for an Enemy.
Art thou not ashamed? But, Sirrah, henceforth
Let me not hear you speak of Mortimer.
Send me your Prisoners with the speediest Means;
Or you shall hear in such a kind from me
As will displease ye. My Lord Northumberland.
We license your Departure with your Son.
Send us your Prisoners, or you'll hear of it.

[Exit K. Henry.

Hot. And if the Devil come and roar for them,
I will not send them. I will after fright
And tell him so; for I will ease my Heart,
Although it be with hazard of my Head.

North. What, drunk with Choler? Stay and pause a while,
Here comes your Uncle.

Enter Worcester.

Hot. Speak of Mortimer?
Yes, I will speak of him, and let my Soul

Want
Want Mercy, if I do not join with him.
In his behalf, I'll empty all those Veins,
And shed my dear Blood Drop by Drop i' th' Dust,
But I will lift the downfall'n Mortimer
As high i' th' Air as this unthankful King,
As this ingrate and cankred Bullingbroke.

North. Brother, the King hath made your Nephew mad?

[To Worcester.

Wor. Who strook this Heat up after I was gone?
Hot. He will, forsooth, have all my Prisoners:
And when I urg'd the Ransom once again
Of my Wife's Brother, then his Cheek look'd pale,
And on my Face he turn'd an Eye of Death,
Trembling even at the Name of Mortimer.

Wor. I cannot blame him; was he not proclaim'd
By Richard that dead is, the next of Blood?

North. He was: I heard the Proclamation;
And then it was, when the unhappy King
(Whose Wrongs in us, God pardon) did set forth
Upon his Irish Expedition;
From whence, he intercepted, did return
To be depos'd, and shortly murthered.

Wor. And for whose Death, we in the World's wide Mouth
Live so scandaliz'd, and fouly spoken of.
Hot. But soft, I pray you; did King Richard then
Proclaim my Brother Mortimer
Heir to the Crown?

North. He did; my self did hear it.

Hot. Nay, then I cannot blame his Cousin King,
That wish'd him on the barren Mountains starv'd,
But shall it be, that you that set the Crown
Upon the Head of this forgetful Man,
And for his sake wore the detested Blot
Of murderous Subordinations? Shall it be,
That you a World of Curses undergo,
Being the Agents, or base second Means,
The Cords, the Ladder, or the Hangman rather?
O pardon, if that I descend so low,
To shew the Line, and the Predicament
Wherein you range under this subtle King.

Shall
Shall it for Shame, be spoken in these Days,
Or fill up Chronicles in time to come,
That Men of your Nobility and Power,
Did gage them both in an unjust behalf,
As both of you, God pardon it, have done,
To put down Richard, that sweet lovely Rose,
And plant this Thorn, this Casker Bullying broke?
And shall it in more Shame be further spoken,
That you are fool'd, discarded and shook off
By him, for whom these Shames ye underwent?
No; yet Time serves, wherein you may redeem
Your banish'd Honours, and restore your selves
Into the good Thoughts of the World again.
Revenge the jeering and disdain'd Contempt
Of this proud King, who studies Day and Night
To answer all the Debt he owes unto you,
Even with the bloody Payments of your Deaths;
Therefore I say——

Wor. Peace, Cousin, say no more.
And now I will unclasp a secret Book,
And to your quick conveying Discontents,
I'll read you Matter, deep and dangerous,
As full of Peril and adventurous Spirit,
As to o'er-walk a Current, roaring loud,
On the unsteadfast footing of a Spear.

Hst. If he fall in, good Night, or sink or swim;
Send danger from the East unto the West,
So Honour cross it from the North to South.
And let them grapple: The Blood more stirs
To roze a Lion, than to start a Hare.

North, Imagination of some great Exploit,
Drives him beyond the Bounds of Patience.

Hst. By Heav'n, methinks it were an easie Leap,
To pluck bright Honour from the pale-fac'd Moon,
Or drive into the Bottom of the Deep,
Where Fadom-line could never touch the Ground,
And pluck up drowned Honour by the Locks:
So he that doth redeem her thence, might wear
Without Co-rival, all her Dignities;
But out upon this half-fac'd Fellowship.
Wor. He apprehends a world of Figures here,
But not the Form of what he should attend.
Good Cousin give me Audience for a while,
And lift to me.

Hot. I cry you Mercy.

Wor. Tho' those fame noble Scots
That are your Prisoners—

Hot. I'll keep them all.

By Heav'n, he shall not a Scot of them:
No, if a Scot would save his Soul, he shall not;
I'll keep them, by this Hand.

Wor. You start away,
And lend no Ear unto my Purposes.
Those Prisoners you shall keep.

Hot. Nay, I will; that's flat:
He said he would not ransom Mortimer:
Forbad my Tongue to speak of Mortimer:
But I will find him when he lyes asleep,
And in his Ear I'll holla, Mortimer.
Nay, I'll have a Starling shall be taught to speak
Nothing but Mortimer, and give it him,
To keep his Anger still in Motion.

Wor. Hear you, Cousin: A Word.

Hot. All Studies here I solemnly desir,
Save how to gall and pinch this Bullingbrooke:
And that fame Sword and Buckler, Prince of Wales,
But that I think his Father loves him nor,
And would be glad he met with some Mischance,
I would have poison'd him with a Pot of Ale.

Wor. Farewel, Kinsman; I'll talk to you
When you are better temper'd to attend.

North. Why what a wasp-tongu'd and impatient Fool
Art thou, to break into this Woman's Mood,
Tying thine Ear to no Tongue but thine own?

Hot. Why look you, I am whipt and scourg'd with Rods,
Nettled, and flung with Pismires, when I hear
Of this vile Politician Bullingbrooke:
In Richard's time—what d'ye call the Place?—
A Plague upon't—it is in Glo'sfershire—
'Twas where the Madcap Duke his Uncle kept—
The First Part of

His Uncle York—where I first bow’d my knee
Unto this King of Smiles, this Bullingbroke:
When you and he came back from Ravensburg,
North. At Barkley Castle.

Hot. You say true:
Why what a gaudy deal of Courtesie
This fawning Greyhound then did proffer me!
Look when his Infant Fortune came to Age,—
And gentle Harry Percy—and kind Cousin—
O, the Devil take such Cozeners—God forgive me——
Good Uncle tell your Tale, for I have done.

Wor. Nay, if you have not, to’t again,
We’ll stay your Leisure.

Hot. I have done, insooth.

Wor. Then once more to your Scottish Prisoners,
Deliver them up without their Ransom stoight,
And make the Dowglas’s Son your only Mean
For Powers in Scotland; which for divers Reasons
Which I shall send you written, be assur’d
Will easily be granted you, my Lord.
Your Son in Scotland being thus employ’d,
Shall secretly into the Bohem creep.
Of that same noble Prelate, well belov’d,
The Arch-Bishop.

Hot. Of York, is’t not?

Wor. True, who bears hard
His Brother’s Death at Bristol, the Lord Scroop.
I speak not this in Estimation,
As what I think might be, but what I know
Is ruminated, plotted and set down,
And only stays but to behold the Face
Of that occasion that shall bring it on.

Hot. I smell it.
Up to my Life, it will do wondrous well.

North. Before the Game’s a-foot, thou still let’t’t slip.

Hot. Why, it cannot chuse but be a noble Plot,
And then the Power of Scotland, and of York
To join with Mortimer; ha!

Wor. And so they shall.

Hot. In faith it is exceedingly well aim’d.
King Henry IV.

Wor. And 'tis no little Reason bids us speed,
To save our Heads, by raising of a Head:
For, bear our selves as even as we can,
The King will always think him in our Debt;
And think we think our selves unsatisfy'd,
'Till he hath found a Time to pay us home:
And see already, how he doth begin
To make us Strangers to his Looks of Love.

Hot. He does, he does; we'll be reveng'd on him:

Wor. Cousin, farewell. No further go in this,
Than I by Letters shall direct your Course;
When time is ripe, which will be suddenly,
I'll steal to Glendower, and Lord Mortimer,
Where you, and Douglas, and our Powers at once,
As I will fashion it, shall happily meet,
To bear our Fortunes in our own strong Arms,
Which now hold at much uncertainty.

North. Farewell, good Brother, we shall thrive, I trust.

Hot. Uncle, adieu: O let the Hours be short,
Till Fields, and Blows, and Groans applaud our Sport.

[Exeunt.

ACT II. SCENE I.

Enter a Carrier with a Lambsorn in his Hand.

1 Car. Eight ho, an't be not four by the Day I'll be hang'd. Charles' main is over the new Chimney, and yet our Horse not packt. What, Offler?

Off. Anon, anon.

1 Car. I prithee Tom, beat Cuts Saddle, put a few Flocks in the Point: The poor Jade is wrung in the Withers, out of all cefs.

Enter another Carrier.

2 Car. Pease and Beans are as dank here as a Dog, and this is the next way to give poor Jades the Bots: This House is turn'd upside down, since Robin the Offler dy'd.

1 Car. Poor fellow never joy'd since the Price of Oats rose, it was the Death of him.

2 Car.
2 Car. I think this is the most villainous House in all London Road for Fleas: I am stung like a Tench.

1 Car. Like a Tench? There's ne'er a King in Christendom could be better bit, than I have been since the first Cock.

2 Car. Why, you will allow us ne'er a Jourden, and then we leak in your Chimney: And your Chamberlye breeds Fleas like a Loach.

1 Car. What Oftler, come away, and be hang'd, come away.

2 Car. I have a Gammon of Bacon, and two Razes of Ginger, to be deliver'd as far as Charing Cross.

1 Car. The Turkies in my Panniers are quite starv'd. What Oftler? A Plague on thee, haft thou never an Eye in thy Head? Canst not hear? And 'twere not as good a Deed as drink, to break the Pate of thee, I am a very Villain. Come and be hang'd. haft no Faith in thee?

Enter Gads-Hill.

Gads. Good Morrow, Carriers. What's a Clock?

Car. I think it be two a Clock.

Gads. I prithee lend me thy Lanthorn, to see my Gelding in the Stable.

1 Car. Nay, soft I pray ye, I know a Trick worth two of that.

Gads. I prithee lend me thine.

2 Car. Ay, when? canst tell? Lend me thy Lanthorn, quoth a! marry I'll see thee hang'd first.

Gads. Sirrah, Carrier, what time do you mean to come to London?

2 Car. Time enough to go to Bed with a Candle, I warrant thee. Come Neighbour Mugges, we'll call up the Gentlemen, they will along with Company, for they have great Charge.

[Ex. Carriers.]}

Enter Chamberlain.

Gads. What ho, Chamberlain?

Chamb. At hand, quoth Pick-Purse.

Gads. That's even as fair, as at hand, quoth the Chamberlain; for thou variest no more from picking of Purves than giving Direction doth from labouring. Thou lay'lt the Plot how.
King Henry IV. 333

Chamb. Good-morrow Master Gads-Hill, it holds current that I told you Yesternight. There's a Franklin in the wild of Kent, hath brought three hundred Marks with him in Gold; I heard him tell it to one of his Company last Night at Supper; a kind of Auditor, one that hath abundance of Charge too, God knows what; they are up already, and call for Eggs and Butter. They will away presently.

-Gads, Sirrah, if they meet not with S. Nicholas Clarks, I'll give thee this Neck.

Chamb. No, I'll none of it: I prithee keep that for the Hangman, for I know thou worshipp'st S. Nicholas as truly as a Man of Falshood may.

Gads. What talk'st thou to me of the Hangman? If I hang I'll make a fat Pair of Gallows. For if I hang, old Sir John hangs with me, and thou know'st he's no Straveling. Tut, there are other Trojans that thou dream'st not of, the which, for Sport-fake, are content to do the Profession some Grace; that would, if Matters should be look'd into, for their own Credit fake, make all whole. I am join'd with no Foot-Land-Rakers, no Long-Staff six Penny Strikers, none of those mad Mustache-purple-hud-Malt-warms, but with Nobility and Tranquility; Burgomasters, and great Oneyers, such as can hold in, such as will strike sooner than speak; and speak sooner than drink; and drink sooner than pray; and yet I lye, for they pray continually unto their Saint the Common-wealth; or rather, not pray to her, but pray on her; for they ride up and down on her, and make her their Boots.

Chamb. What, the Common-wealth their Boots? Will she hold our Water in foul Way?

Gads. She will, she will; Justice hath liquor'd her. We steal, as in a Castle, Cock-sure; we have the Receipt of Fern-feed, we walk invisible.

Chamb. Nay, I think rather, you are more beholding to the Night, than the Fern-feed, for your walking invisible.

Gads. Give me thy Hand.

Thou shalt have a Share in our Purpose,
As I am a true Man.
Cham. Nay, rather let me have it, as you are a false Thief.
Gads. Go to,  

Hol. is a common Name to all Men. Bid the Osler bring the Selding out of the Stable. Fare-

wel, ye muddy Knave.

[Exeunt.

SCENE II.

Enter Prince Henry, Poins and Peto.

Poins. Come, Shelter, Shelter, I have removed Falstaff's
Horfe, and he frets like a gumm'd Velvet.

P. Henry. Stand close.

Enter Falstaff.

Fal. Poins, Poins, and be hang'd Poins.

P. Henry. Peace ye fat-kidney'd Rasca!, what a bawling
doft thou keep?

Fal. What, Poins? Hal.

P. Henry. He is walk'd up to the Top of the Hill, I'll go
seek him.

Fal. I am accurst to rob in that Thief's Company: That
Rasca! hath remov'd my Horfe, and ty'd him I know not
where. If I travel but four Foot by the Square further
afoot, I shall break my Wind. Well, I doubt not but to
die a fair Death for all this, if I 'scape hanging for killing
that Rogue. I have forsworn his Company hourly any
time this two and twenty Year, and yet I am bewitch'd with
the Rogue's Company. If the Rasca! have not given me
Medicines to make me love him, I'll be hang'd, it could
not be else; I have drunk Medicines. Poins! Hal! a
Plague upon you both. Bardolph! Peto! I'll starve ere I
rob a Foot further. And 'twere not as good a Deed as to
drink, to turn True-man, and to leave these Rogues, I am
the veriest Varlet that ever chew'd with a Tooth. Eight
Yards of uneven Ground, is threecore and ten Miles afoot
with me; and the flony hearted Villains know it well
enough. A plague upon't, when Thieves cannot be true
to one to another.

[They whistle.

Whew, a Plague light upon you all. Give me my Horfe; 
you Rogues, give me my Horfe, and be hang'd.

P. Henry. Peace ye fat Guts, lye down, lay thine Ear
close to the Ground, and lift if you can hear the Tread
ef Travellers.

Fal.
Fal. Have you any Leavers to lift me up again being down? I'll not bear mine own Flesh so far afoot again, for all the Coin in thy Father's Exchequer. What a Plague mean ye, to colt me thus?

P. Henry. Thou liest, thou art not colted, thou art uncolted.

Fal. I prithee, good Prince Hal, help me to my Horse; good King's Son.

P. Henry. Out you Rogue, shall I be your Offer?

Fal. Go hang thy self in thy own Heir-apparent Garters; if I be ta'en, I'll peach for this; and I have not Ballads made on you all, and sung to filthy Tunes, let a Cup of Sack be my Poison; when a Jeff is so forward, and afoot too! I hate it.

Enter Gads-hill and Bardolph.

Gads. Stand.

Fal. So I do against my Will.

Points. O 'tis our Setter, I know his Voice:

Bardolph, what News?

Bard. Cafe ye, cafe ye; on with your Vizards, there's Mony of the King's coming down the Hill, 'tis going to the King's Exchequer.

Fal. You lie, you Rogue, 'tis going to the King's Tavern.

Gad. There's enough to make us all.

Fal. To be hang'd.

P. Henry. You four shall front them in the narrow Lane: Ned and I will walk lower; if they scape from your Encounter, then they light on us.

Peto. But how many be of them?

Gad. Some eight or ten.

Fal. Will they not rob us?

P. Henry. What, a Coward, Sir John Paunch?

Fal. Indeed I am not John of Gaunt, your Grandfather; but yet no Coward, Hal.

P. Henry. We'll leave that to the Proof.

Points. Sirrah, Jack, thy Horse stands behind the Hedge, when thou nee'st him, there shalt thou find him; farewell, and stand fast.

Fal. Now cannot I strike him if I should be hang'd.

P. Henry. Ned, where are our Disguises?

Points.
The First Part of

Poins. Here hard by: Stand close.

Fal. Now my Masters, happy Man be his dole say I; every Man to his Business.

Enter Travellers.

Trav. Come, Neighbour; the Boy shall lead our Horses down the Hill: We'll walk a foot a while, and ease our Legs.

Thieves. Stay.

Trav. Jeft bless us.

Fal. Strike; down with them, cut the Villains' Throats; ah! whor-fon Caterpillars; Bacon-fed Knaves, they hate us Youth; down with them, fleece them.

Trav. O, we are undone, both we and ours for ever.

Fal. Hang ye gorbellied Knaves, are you undone? No ye Fat Churis, I would your Store were here. On Bacons on! what ye Knaves? Young Men must live; you are Grand Jurors? We'll jure ye i'faith.

[Here they rob them and bind them.

Enter Prince Henry and Poins.

P. Henry. The Thieves have bound the True-men: Now could thou and I rob the Thieves and go merrily to London, it would be Argument for a Week, Laughter for a Month, and a good jest for ever.

Poins. Stand close, I hear them coming.

Enter Thieves again.

Fal. Come my Masters, let us share, and then to Horse before Day; and the Prince and Poins be not two arrant Cowards, there's no Equity flirring. There's no more Valour in that Poins, than in a wild Duck.

P. Henry. Your Mony.

Poins. Villains.

[As they are standing, the Prince and Poins set upon them.

They all run away, leaving the Booty behind them.

P. Henry. Got with much ease, Now merrily to Horse! The Thieves are scattered, and possest with fear so strongly, that they dare not meet each other; each takes his Fellow for an Officer. Away good Ned, Falstaff sweats to Death, and Lards the lean Earth as he walks along; were't not for laughing, I should pity him.

Poins. How the Rogue roard.'
Scene II.

Enter Hotspur solus, reading a Letter.

But for mine own part, my Lord, I could be well contented to be there, in respect of the love I bear your House. He could be contented: Why is he not then? In respect of the love he bears our House—He shews in this, he loves his own Barn better than he loves our House. Let me see some more. The purpose you undertake is dangerous. Why that's certain: 'Tis dangerous to take a cold, to sleep, to drink; but I tell you, my Lord Fool, out of this Nettle, Danger, we pluck this Flower, Safety. The purpose you undertake is dangerous, the Friends you have named uncertain, the Time it self unhurted, and your whole Plot too light, for the counterpoise of so great an Opposition. Say you so, say you so? I say unto you again, you are a shallow cowardly Hind, and you lie. What a lack-brain is this? I protest, our Plot is as good a Plot as ever was laid; our Friends true and constant: A good Plot, good Friends, and full of Expectation; An illent Plot, very good Friends. What a Frothy-spirited Dialogue is this? Why, my Lord of York commands the Plot, and the general Course of the Action. By this Hand, if I were now by this Rascal, I could brain him with his Lady's Fan. Is there not my Father, my Uncle, and my self, Lord Edmond Mortimer, my Lord of York, and Owen Glendower? Is there not besides, the Douglases? Have I not all their Letters, to meet me in Arms by the ninth of the next Month? And are there not some of them set forward already? What a Pagan Rascal is this? And Infidel. Ha! you shall see now in very sincerity of Fear and cold Heart, will he to the King, and lay open all our Proceedings. O, I could divide myself, and go to buffets, for moving such a Dish of Skim'd-Milk with so honourable an Action. Hang him, let him tell the King we are prepared. I will set forwards to Night.

Enter Lady Percy.

How now, Kate! I must leave you within these two Hours.
Lady. O my good Lord, why are you thus alone?
For what Offence have I this Fortnight been
A banish’d Woman from my Harry’s Bed?
Tell me, sweet Lord, what is’t that takes from thee
Thy Stomach, Pleasure, and thy golden Sleep?
Why dost thou bend thy Eyes upon the Earth?
And start so often when thou sit’st alone?
Why hast thou lost the fresh Blood in thy Cheeks?
And given my Treasures and my Rights of thee,
To thick-ey’d Musings, and curl’d Melancholly?
In thy faint Slumbers, I by thee have watch’d,
And heard thee murmur Tales of Iron Wars:
Speak terms of manage to thy bounding Steed,
Cry, Courage! to the Field! And thou hast talk’d
Of Sallies, and Retires; Trenches, Tents,
Of Palisadoes, Frontiers, Parapets;
Of Basilisks, of Cannon, Culverin,
Of Prisoners Ransom, and of Soldiers slain,
And all the current of a heady fight.
Thy Spirit within thee hath been so at War,
And thus hath so bestirr’d thee in thy Sleep.
That Beads of Sweat have flood upon thy Brow,
Like Bubbles in a late disturbed Stream:
And in thy Face strange Motions have appear’d,
Such as we see when Men restrain their Breath,
On some great sudden haste. O what Portents are these?
Some heavy Business hath my Lord in Hand,
And I must know it; else he loves me not.

Het. What ho, is Williams with the Packer gone?

Eater Servant.

Serv. He is, my Lord, an Hour agone.

Het. Hath Butler brought those Horses from the Sheriff?

Serv. One Horse, my Lord, he brought even now.

Het. What Horse? A Roan, a Crop-car, is it not?

Serv. It is, my Lord.

Het. That Roan shall be my Throne. Well, I will back him freight. Efteran, bid Butler lead him forth into the Park.

Lady. But hear you, my Lord.

Het. What say’d you, my Lady?
Lady. What is it that carries you away?

Hot. Why, my Horse, my Love, my Horse.

Lady. Out you mad-headed Ape, a Weazel hath not such a deal of Spleen, as you are tost with. In sooth I'll know your Business, Harry, that I will. I fear my Brother Mor-
timer doth stir, about his Title, and hath sent for you to line his Enterprize. But if you go—

Hot. So far afoot, I shall be weary, Love.

Lady. Come, come, you Paraquito, answer me directly unto this Question, that I shall ask. Indeed I'll break thy little Finger, Harry, if thou wilt not tell thee true.

Hot. Away, away, you Tripper: Love! I love thee not, I care not for thee, Kate; this is no World To play with Mammets, and to tilt with Lips. We must have bloody Noses, and crack'd Crowns, And pass them currant too—Gods me, my Horfe. What say'lt thou, Kate? What wouldst thou have with me?

Lady. Do ye not love me? Do you not indeed? Well, do not then. For since you love me not, I will not love my self. Do you not love me? Nay, tell me if thou speakest in Jeft or no?

Hot. Come, wilt thou see me ride? And when I am a Horse-back, I will swear I love thee infinitely. But hark you, Kate, I must not have you henceforth question me, Whither I go; nor reason where about. Whither I must, I must; and to conclude; This Evening must I leave thee, gentle Kate. I know you wise, but yet no further wise Than Harry Percy's Wife. Constant you are, But yet a Woman; and for Secresie, No Lady closer. For I will believe, Thou wilt not utter what thou dost not know, And so far will I trust thee, gentle Kate.

Lady. How so far?

Hot. Not an Inch further. But hark you Kate; Whither I go, thither shall you go too; To Day will I let forth, to Morrow you. Will this content you, Kate?

Lady. It must of force.
The First Part of

SCENE IV.

Enter Prince Henry and Pains.

P. Henry. Ned, prethee come out of that fat Room, and lend me thy Hand to laugh a little.

Pains. Where haft been, Hal.?

P. Henry. With three or four Loggerheads, amongst three or fourcore Hogheads. I have founded the very base string of Humility, Sirrah, I am sworn Brother to a Leafe of Drawers, and can call them by their Names, as Tom, Dick, and Francis. They take it already upon their Confidence, that though I be but Prince of Wales, yet I am the King of Courtesie; telling me flatly, I am not proud like Jack Falstaff, but a Corinthian, a Lad of mettle, a good Boy, and when I am King of England, I shall command all the good Lads in East-cheap. They call drinking deep, dying Scarlet; and when you break in your warthing, then they cry Pem, and bid you play it off. To conclude, I am so good a Proficient in one quarter of an Hour, that I can drink with any Tinker in his own Language during my Life. I tell thee Ned, thou hast lost much Honour, that thou wert not with me in this Action; but sweet Ned, to sweeten which Name of Ned, I give thee this Pennyworth of Sugar, clapt even now into my Hand by an under Skinner, one that never spake other English in his Life, then Eight Shillings and Six Pence, and You are welcome Sir: With this thrill Addition, Anon Sir, Anon Sir, Score a Pint of Bar- lard in the Half Moon, or so. But Ned, to drive away time 'till Falstaff come, I prithee do thou stand in some by Room, while I question my puny Drawer, to what end he gave me the Sugar, and do never leave calling Francis, that his Tale to me may be nothing but, Anon: Step a side and I'll shew thee a President.

Pains. Francis.

P. Henry. Thou art perfect.

Pains. Francis.

Enter Francis the Drawer.

Fran. Anon, anon Sir; look down into the Pomgranet.

Ralph.

P. Henry.
P. Henry. Come hither, Francis.
Fran. My Lord.

P. Henry. How long hast thou to serve, Francis?
Fran. Forsooth five Years, and as much as to—
Poins. Francis.

Fran. Anon, anon, Sir.

P. Henry. Five Years; Berlady, a long Leafe for the clink-ing of Pewter. But Francis, darest thou be so valiant, as to play the Coward with thy Indenture, and shew it a fair pair of Heels, and run from it?

Fran. O Lord, Sir, I'll be sworn upon all the Books in England, I could find in my Heart—

Poins. Francis.

Fran. Anon, anon, Sir.

P. Henry. How old art thou, Francis?
Francis. Let me see, about Michaelmas next I shall be—

Poins. Francis.

Fran. Anon Sir; pray you stay a little, my Lord.

P. Henry. Nay, but hark you Francis, for the Sugar thou gavest me; 'twas a Pennyworth, was't not?
Fran. O Lord, Sir, I would it had been two.

P. Henry. I will give thee for it a thousand Pound: ask me when thou wilt, and thou shalt have it.

Poins. Francis.

Fran. Anon, anon.

P. Henry. Anon, Francis? No, Francis, but to morrow Francis; or Francis, on Thursday; or indeed Francis, when thou wilt. But Francis.

Fran. My Lord.


Fran. O Lord, Sir, who do you mean?

P. Henry. Why then your brown Baffard is your only Drink; for look you, Francis, your white Canvas Doublet will fully. In Barbary, Sir, it cannot come to so much.

Fran. What, Sir?

Poins. Francis?

P. Henry. Away you Rogue, dost thou hear them call?

[Here they both call, the Drawer stands amazed, not knowing which way to go.]

P 3
Enter Vintner.

Vint. What stand'st thou still, and hear'st such a calling? Look to the Guests within: My Lord, old Sir John with half a Dozen more are at the Door; shall I let them in?

P. Henry. Let them alone a while, and then open the Door. Pains.

Enter Pains.

Pains. Anon, anon, Sir.

P. Henry. Sirrah, Falstaff and the rest of the Thieves are at the Door; shall we be merry?

Pains. As merry as Crickets, my Lad. But hark ye, what cunning Match have you made with this Jeff of the Drawer? Come, what's the Issue?

P. Henry. I am now of all Humours, that have shew'd themselves Humours, since the old Days of Goodman Adam, to the Pupil Age of this present twelve a Clock at Midnight. What's a Clock, Francis?

Franc. Anon, anon, Sir.

P. Henry. That ever this Fellow should have fewer Words than a Parrot, and yet the Son of a Woman. His Industry is up Stairs and down Stairs; his Eloquence the parcel of a Reckoning. I am not yet of Percy's Mind, the Hot spurs of the North; he that kills me some six or seven Dozen of Scots at a Breakfast, washes his Hands and says to his Wife, Fie upon this quiet Life, I want Work. O my sweet Harry, says she, how many hast thou kill'd to Day? Give my roan Horse a Drench, says he, and answers, some fourteen, an Hour after; a Trifle, a Trifle, I prithee call in Falstaff, I'll play Percy, and that damn'd Brawn shall play Dame Mortimer his Wife. Rivo, says the Drunkard. Call in Ribs, call in Tallow.

Enter Falstaff.

Pains. Welcome Jack, where hast thou been?

Fal. A plague of all Cowards, I say, and a Vengeance too, marry and Amen. Give me a Cup of Sack, Boy. Ere I lead this Life long, I'll saw neither Socks, and mend them too. A plague of all Cowards. Give me a Cup of Sack, Rogue. Is there no Virtue extant?

P. Henry. Didst thou never see Titan kills a Dish of Butter, pitiful
pitiful hearted Titan, that melted at the sweet Tale of the Sun? If thou didst, then behold that Compound.

Fal. You Rogue, here's Lime in this Sack too; there is nothing but Roguery to be found in villainous Man; yet a Coward is worse than a Cup of Sack with Lime. A villainous Coward—go thy ways old Jack, die when thou wilt, if Manhood, good Manhood be not forgot upon the Faces of the Earth, then am I a shotten Herring: there lives not three good Men unhang'd in England, and one of them is fat, and grows old, God help the while, a bad World I say. I would I were a Weaver, I could sing all manner of Songs. A plague of all Cowards, I say still.

P. Henry. How now Wooljack, what mutter you?

Fal. A King's Son? If I do not beat thee out of thy Kingdom with a Dagger of Lath, and drive all thy Subjects afores thee like a Flock of wild Geese, I'll never wear Hair on my Face more. You Prince of Wales?

P. Henry. Why you Whorson round Man! What's the Matter?

Fal. Are you not a Coward? Answer me to that, and Points there?

P. Henry. Ye fat Paunch, and ye call me Coward, I'll flab thee.

Fal. I call thee Coward! I'll see thee damn'd ere I call thee Coward; but I would give a thousand Pound I could run as fast as thou canst. You are straighth enough in the Shoulders, you care not who fees your Back: Call you that backing of your Friends? a plague upon such backing; give me them that will face me. Give me a Cup of Sack, I am a Rogue if I drunk to Day.

P. Henry. O Villain, thy Lips are scarce wip'd since thou drunk't last.

Fal. All's one for that. [He drinks.

A plague of all Cowards, still, say I.

P. Henry. What's the Matter?

Fal. What's the Matter! here be four of us, have ta'en a thousand Pound this Morning.

P. Henry. Where is it Jack? Where is it?

Fal. Where is it? taken from us, it is; a hundred upon poor four of us.

P. Henry. What, a hundred, Man?

Fal.
Fal. I am a Rogue. If I were not at half Sword with a Dozen of them two Hours together. I have escap'd by Miracle. I am eight times thrust through the Doublet, four through the Hose, my Buckler cut through and through, my Sword hack'd like a Hand-saw, ece signum. I never dealt better since I was a Man; all would not do. A Plague of all Cowards—let them speak; if they speak more or less than Truth, they are Villains and the Sons of Darkness.

P. Henry. Speak Sirs, how was it?
Gads. We four set upon some Dozen.
Fal. Sixteen, at least, my Lord.
Gads. And bound them.
Peto. No no, they were not bound.
Fal. You Rogue they were bound, every Man of them; or I am a few else, an Hebrew few.
Gads. As we were sharing, some six or seven fresh Men set upon us.
Fal. And unbound the rest, and then came in the other.
P. Henry. What, fought ye with them all?
Fal. All? I know not what ye call All; but if I fought so with fifty of them, I am a Bunch of Radish; if there were not two or three and fifty upon poor old Jack, then am I no two-legg'd Creature.

Poms. Pray Heav'n, you have not murdered some of them.
Fal. Nay, that's past praying for. I have pepper'd two of them; two I am sure I have pay'd, two Rogues in Buckram Suits. I tell thee what, Hal, if I tell thee a Lie, spit in my Face, call me Horse; thou know'st my old Ward; here I lay, and thus I bore my Point; four Rogues in Buckram let drive at me.

P. Henry. What, four? thou saidst but two, even now.
Fal. Four Hal, I told thee four.
Poms. Ay, ay, he said four.
Fal. These four came all a-front, and mainly thrust at me; I made no more ado, but took all their seven Points in my Target, thus.

P. Henry. Seven? why there were but four, even now.
Fal. In Buckram.
Poms. Ay, four, in Buckram Suits.
Fal. Seven, by these Hilts, or I am a Villain else.

P. Henry. Prithee let him alone, we shall have more anon.

Fal. Doft thou hear me, Hal?

P. Henry. Ay, and mark thee too, Jack.

Fal. Do so, for it is worth the lifting too: These nine in Buckram, that I told thee of—

P. Henry. So, two more already.

Fal. Their Points being broken—

Point. Down fell his Hose.

Fal. Began to give me Ground; but I follow'd me close; came in Foot and Hand; and with a Thought seven of the eleven I pay'd.

P. Henry. O monstrous! Eleven Buckram Men grown out of two!

Fal. But as the Devil would have it, three misbegotten Knaves, in Kendal Green, came at my Back, and let drive at me; for it was so dark, Hal, that thou couldst not see thy Hand.

P. Henry. These Lies are like the Father that begot them, 
grofs as a Mountain, open, palpable. Why thou Claybrain'd Guts, thou Knotty-pated Fool, thou whorson obscene greasy Tallow-Catch.

Fal. What, art thou mad? Art thou mad? Is not the Truth, the Truth?

P. Henry. Why, how could'ft thou know these Men in Kendal Green, when it was so dark, thou could'ft not see thy Hand? Come tell us your Reason: What say'ft thou to this?

Points. Come, your Reason, Jack, your Reason.

Fal. What, upon compulsion? No; were I at the Strappado, or all the Racks in the World, I would not tell you on Compulsion. Give you a Reason on compulsion! If Reasons were as plenty as Black-Berries, I would give no Man a Reason upon Compulsion, I.

P. Henry. I'll be no longer guilty of this Sin. This fanguine Coward, this Bed-preffer, this Horseback-breaker, this huge Hill of Flesh.


Fal. P f

P. Henry.
The First Part of

P. Henry. Well, breath a while, and then to't again; and when thou hast tyr'd thy self in base Comparisons, hear me, speak but thus.

Poms. Mark Jack.

P. Henry. We two saw you four set on four and bound them, and were Masters of their Wealth: Mark now, how a plain Tale shall put you down. Then did we two set on you four, and with a Word, out fac'd you from your Prize, and have it, yea, and can shew it you in the House. And Falstaff, you carry'd your Guts away as nimbly, with as quick Dexterity, and roar'd for Mercy, and still ran and roar'd, as ever I heard Bull-Calf. What a Slave art thou, to hack thy Sword as thou hast done, and then say it was in fight. What Trick? What Device? What starting Hole canst thou now find out, to hide thee from this open and apparent Shame?

Poms. Come, let's hear Jack: What Trick hast thou now?

Fal. I knew ye, as well as he that made ye. Why hear ye my Masters, was it for me to kill the Heir apparent? Should I turn upon the true Prince? Why, thou knowest I am as valiant as Hercules; but beware Infinit, the Lion will not touch the true Prince: Infinit is a great Matter. I was a Coward on Infinit: I shall think the better of my self, and thee, during my Life; I, for a valiant Lion, and thou for a true Prince. But Lads, I am glad you have the Mony. Hosts, clap to the Doors; watch to Night, pray to Morrow. Gallants, Lads, Boys, Hearts of Gold, all the good Titles of Fellowship come to you. What, shall we be merry? Shall we have a Play extempore?

P. Henry. Content, and the Argument shall be, thy running away.

Fal. Ah, no more of that, Hal, if thou loves me.

Enter Hosts.

Host. My Lord the Prince!

P. Henry. How now, my Lady the Hosts, what say'st thou to me?

Host. Marry, my Lord, there is a Nobleman of the Court at Door would speak with you; he says he comes from your Father.

P. Henry.
P. Henry. Give him as much as will make him a royal Man, and send him back again to my Mother.

Fal. What manner of Man is he?

Host. An old Man.

Fal. What doth Gravity out of his Bed at Midnight?

Shall I give him his answer?

P. Henry. Prithee do, Jack.

Fal. Faith and I'll send him packing. [Exit.

P. Henry. Now Sirs, you fought fair; so did you Peto, so did you Bardolph; you are Lions too, you ran away upon Instinct; you will not touch the true Prince, no, he.

Bard. Faith, I ran when I saw others run.

P. Henry. Tell me now in earnest; how came Falstaff's Sword so hackt?

Peto. Why, he hackt it with his Dagger, and said, he would swear Truth out of England but he would make you believe it was done in fight, and persuaded us to do the like.

Bard. Yea, and to tickle our Nooses with Spear-grass, to make them bleed, and then beslobber our Garments with it, and swear it was the Blood of true Men. I did that I did not these seven Years before, I blush'd to hear his monstrous Devices.

P. Henry. O Villain, thou stol'st a Cup of Sack eighteen Years ago, and wert taken with the Manner, and ever since thou hast blush'd extempore; thou hast Fire and Sword on thy Side, and yet thou rannest away: What Instinct hast thou for it?

Bard. My Lord, do you see these Meteors? do you behold these Exhalations?

P. Henry. I do.

Bard. What think you they portend?

P. Henry. Hot Livers, and cold Purse.

Bard. Choler, my Lord, if rightly taken.

P. Henry. No, if rightly taken, Halter.

Enter Falstaff.

Here comes lean Jack, here comes Bare-bone. How now my sweet Creature of Bombast, how long is't ago, Jack, since thou saw'st thy own Knee?

Fal. My own Knece? When I was about thy Years, Hal.
Hal. I was not an Eagle's Talon in the Wasp, I could have crept into any Alderman's Thumb-Ring: A plague of Sighing and Grief, it blows a Man up like a Bladder. There's villainous News abroad: Here was Sir John Braby from your Father; you must go to the Court in the Morning. That same mad Fellow of the North, Percy; and he of Wales, that gave Amanon the Baffinado, and made Lucifer Cuckold, and swore the Devil his true Liege-Man upon the Cross of a Welsh-book: What a Plague call you him—

Pows. O, Glendower.

Fal. Owen, Owen; the same, and his Son-in-law Mortimer, and old Northumberland, and the sprightly Scot of Scots, Douglas, that runs a Horseback up a Hill perpendiculare—

P. Henry. He that rides at high speed, and with a Pistol kills a Sparrow flying.

Fal. You have hit it.

P. Henry. So did he never the Sparrow.

Fal. Well, that Rascal hath good Metal in him, he will not run.

P. Henry. Why, what a Rascal art thou then, to praise him so for running?

Fal. A Horseback, ye Cuckow, but afoot he will not budge a foot.

P. Henry. Yes, Jack, upon Instinct.

Fal. I grant ye, upon Instinct: Well, he is there too, and one Morsake, and a thousand blow-Caps more. Worcester is stoln away by Night: Thy Father's Beard is turn'd white with the News: You may buy Land now as cheap as flinking Mackerel.

P. Henry. Then 'tis like, if there come a hot Sun, and this civil buffeting hold, we shall buy Maidenheads as they buy Hot-nails, by the Hundred.

Fal. By the Maps, Lad, thou say'st true, it is like we shall have good trading that Way. But tell me, Hal, art not thou horribly afeard? thou being Heir apparent, could the World pick thee out three such Enemies again as that head Douglas', that Spirit Percy, and that Devil Glendower? Art thou not horribly afraid? Doth not thy Blood thrilled at it?

P. Henry.
P. Henry. Not a whit: I lack some of thy Instinct.

Fal. Well, thou wilt be horribly chid to morrow, when thou com'st to thy Father: If thou do love me, practice an Answer.

P. Henry. Do thou stand for my Father, and examine me upon the Particulars of my Life.

Fal. Shall I? content: This Chair shall be my State; this Dagger my Scepter, and this Cushion my Crown.

P. Henry. Thy State is taken for a joint-Stool, thy golden Scepter for a leaden Dagger, and thy precious rich Crown for a pitiful bald Crown.

Fal. Well, and the Fire of Grace be not quite out of thee, now shalt thou be moved. Give me a Cup of Sack to make mine Eyes look red, that it may be thought I have wept for I must speak in Passion, and I will do it in King Cambyses Vein.

P. Henry. Well, here is my Leg.

Fal. And here is my Speech; stand aside Nobility.

Hos. This is excellent Sport, i'faith.

Fal. Weep not, sweet Queen; for trickling Tears are vain.

Hos. O the Father, how he holds his Countenance?

Fal. For God's sake, Lords, convey my trifling Queen; for Tears do stop the Flood-gates of her Eyes.

Hos. O rare, he doth it as like one of those harlotry, Players, as ever I see.

Fal. Peace, good Pint-pot, peace good Tickle-brain—— Harry, I do not only marvel, where thou spendest thy time; but also, how thou art accompany'd: For though the Camomil, the more it is trodden, the fatter it grows: yet Youth, the more it is wasted, the sooner it wears. Thou art my Son; I have partly thy Mother's Word, partly my Opinion; but chiefly, a villainous Trick of thine Eye, and a foolifh hanging of thy nether Lip, that doth warrant me. If then thou be Son to me, here lyeth the Point; why, being Son to me, art thou so pointed at? Shall the blessed Sun of Heav'n prove a Micher, and eat Black-berries? a Question not to be ask'd. Shall the Son of England prove a Theif, and take Purles? a Question to be ask'd. There is a thing, Harry, which thou hast often
often heard of, and it is known to many in our Land, by the Name of Pitch: This Pitch, as ancient Writers do report, doth desile; so doth the Company thou keepest; for Harry, now do I not speak to thee in Drink, but in Tears; not in Pleasure, but in Passion; not in Words only, but in Woes also; and yet there is a virtuous Man, whom I have often noted in thy Company, but I know not his Name.

P. Henry. What manner of Man, and it like your Majesty?

Fal. A goodly portly Man i'th'faith, and a corpulent; of a chearful Look, a pleasing Eye, and a most noble Carriage, and as I think, his Age some fifty, or, by'r'lad, inclining to three-score; and now I remember me, his Name is Falstaff; If that Man should be lewdly given, he deceives me; for Harry, I see Virtue in his Looks. If then the Tree may be known by the Fruit, as the Fruit by the Tree, then peremptorily I speak it, there is Virtue in that Falstaff; him keep with, the rest banish. And tell me now, thou naughty Varlet, tell me, where haft thou been this Month?

P. Henry. Doft thou speak like a King? Do thou stand for me, and I'll play my Father.

Fal. Depose me! if thou dost it half so gravely, so majestically, both in Word and Matter, hang me up by the Heels for a Rabbot-fucker, or a Poulterers Hare.

P. Henry. Well, here I am set.

Fal. And here I stand; judge, my Masters,

P. Henry. Now Harry, whence come you?

Fal. My noble Lord, from East cheap.

P. Henry. The Complaints I hear of thee are grievous.

Fal. I'faith, my Lord, they are false.—Nay, I'll tickle ye for a young Prince.

P. Henry. Swearest thou, ungracious Boy? Henceforth never look on me; thou art violently carry'd away from Grace; there's a Devil haunts thee, in the likeness of a fat old Man: a Tun of Man is thy Companion. Why dost thou converse with that Trunk of Humours, that Bolling-Hutch of Beaufiness, that swoln Parcel of Drop-fles, that huge Bombard of Sack, that stuff Cloak-bag of Guts,
Guts, that rosted Manning-Tree Ox with the Puddings in his Belly, that reverend Vice, that grey Iniquity, that Father Russian, that Vanity in Years; wherein is he good, but to taste Sack and drink it? Wherein neat and cleanly, but to carve a Capon and eat it? Wherein cunning, but in Craft? Wherein crafty but in Villany? wherein villainous, but in all things? wherein worthy, but in nothing?

Fal. I would your Grace would take me with you: Whom means your Grace?

P. Henry. That villainous abominable Misleader of Youth; Falstaff, that old white-bearded Satan.

Fal. My Lord, the Man I know.

P. Henry. I know thou dost.

Fal. But to say, I know more harm in him than in myself, were to say more than I know. That he is old the more's the pity, his white Hairs do witness it; But that he is, faying your Reverence, a Whore-matter, that I utterly deny. If Sack and Sugar be a Fault, Heav'n help the Wicked: If to be old and merry, be a Sin, then many an old Hofl that I know is damn'd: If to be fat, be to be hated, then Pharaoh's lean Kine are to be lov'd. No, my good Lord, banish Petru, banish Bardolph, banish Poins; but for sweet Jack Falstaff, kind Jack Falstaff, true Jack Falstaff, valiant Jack Falstaff, and therefore more valiant, being as he is old Jack Falstaff, banish not him thy Harry's Company, banish not him thy Harry's Company; banish plump Jack, and banish all the World.

P. Henry. I do, I will.

Enter Bardolph running.

Bard. O, my Lord, my Lord, the Sheriff with a most monstrous Watch, is at the Door.

Fal. Out you Rogue, play out the Play: I have much to say in the behalf of that Falstaff.

Enter the Hofts.

Hoft. O, my Lord, my Lord.

Fal. Heigh, heigh, the Devil rides upon a Fiddle-stick; What's the Matter?

Hoft. The Sheriff and all the Wtch are at the Door: they are come to search the House, shall I let them in?
The First Part of


P. Henry. And thou a natural Coward, without Instinct.

Fal. I deny your Major; if you will deny the Sheriff, so; if not, let him enter. If I become not a Cart as well as another Man, a plague on my bringing up; I hope I shall as soon be strangled with a Halter, as another.

P. Henry. Go hide thee behind the Arras, the rest walk above. Now my Masters, for a true Face and good Conscience.

Fal. Both which I have had; but their Date is out, and therefore I'll hide me. [Exeunt Falstaff, Bardolph, &c.

P. Henry. Call in the Sheriff,

Enter Sheriff and the Carrier.

P. Henry. Now Master Sheriff, what is your Will with me? Sher. First, pardon me, my Lord. A Hue and Cry hath follow'd certain Men unto this House.

P. Henry. What Men?

Sher. One of them is well known, my gracious Lord, a gross fat Man.

Car. As fat as Butter.

P. Henry. The Man, I do assure you is not here; For I my self at this time have imploy'd him; And, Sheriff, I will engage my Word to thee, That I will, by to Morrow Dinner time, Send him to answer thee, or any Man, For any thing he shall be charg'd withal: And so let me intreat you leave the House.

Sher. I will, my Lord; there are two Gentlemen Have in this Robbery lost three hundred Marks.

P. Henry. It may be so; if he have robb'd these Men, He shall be answerable; and so farewell.

Sher. Good Night, my noble Lord.

P. Henry. I think it is good Morrow, is it not?

Sher. Indeed, my Lord, I think it be two a Clock. [Exit.

P. Henry. This oily Raical is known as well as Pauls; go call him forth.

Peto. Falstaff? Fast asleep behind the Arras, and snorting like a Horse.

P. Henry.
King Henry IV.

P. Henry. Hark, how hard he fetches his Breath: search his Pockets.

[He searches his Pockets, and finds certain Papers.]

P. Henry. What hast thou found?

Peto. Nothing but Papers, my Lord.

P. Henry. Let's see, what be they? read them.

Peto. Item, a Capon, 2 s. 2 d.
Item, Sawce, 4 d.
Item, Sack, two Gallons, 5 s. 8 d.
Item, Anchovies and Sack after Supper, 2 s. 6 d.
Item, Bread, a Halfpenny.

P. Henry. O monstrous, but one half Penny-worth of Bread to this intolerable deal of Sack? What there is else, keep close, we'll read it at more advantage; there let him sleep till Day. I'll to the Court in the Morning: We must all to the Wars, and thy Place shall be honourable. I'll procure this fat Rogue a Charge of Foot, and I know his Death will be a March of Twelvescore. The Mony shall be paid back again with Advantage. Be with me betimes in the Morning; and so good Morrow, Peto.

Peto. Good-morrow, good my Lord.

[Exeunt.

ACT III. SCENE I.

Enter Hot-Spur, Worcester, Lord Mortimer, and Owen Glendower.

Mort. These Promises are fair, the Parties sure, And our Induction full of prosperous hope.

Hot. Lord Mortimer, and Cousin Glendower, Will you sit down?

And Uncle Worcester — A plague upon it,
I have forgot the Map.

Glend. No, here it is;
Sit Cousin Percy, sit good Cousin Hot-Spur:
For by that Name, as oft as Lancaster doth speak of you, His Cheeks look pale, and with a rising sigh, He wisheth you in Heav'n.

Hot.
The First Part of

Hot. And you in Hell, as oft as he hears Owen Glen-
dower spoke of.

Glend. I cannot blame him; at my Nativity,
The front of Heav'n was full of fiery Shapes,
Of burning Cressets; and at my Birth,
The Frame and the Foundation of the Earth
Shak'd like a Coward.

Hot. Why so it would have done at the same Season, if
your Mother's Cat had but kitten'd, though your self had
never been born.

Glend. I say the Earth did shake when I was born.

Hot. And I say the Earth was not of my Mind;

If you suppose, as fearing you, it shook.

Glend. The Heavens were all on fire, the Earth did
tremble.

Hot. Oh, then th' Earth shook to see the Heav'ns on fire,
And not in fear of your Nativity.

 Diseased Nature oftentimes breaks forth
In strange Eruptions; and the teeming Earth
Is with a kind of Cholick pinch'd and vex't,
By the imprisoning of unruly Wind
Within her Womb; which for enlargement striving;
Shakes the old Beldam Earth, and tumbles down
Steeples, and moss-grown Towers. At your Birth,
Our Grandam Earth, having this Distemperature,
In passion shook.

Glend. Cousin; of many Men

I do not bear these Crossings: Give me leave'
To tell you once again, that at my Birth
The front of Heav'n was full of fiery Shapes,
The Goats ran from the Mountains, and the Herds
Were strangely clamorous to the frightened Fields:
These Signs have mark'd me extraordinary,
And all the Courses of my Life do show,
I am not in the Roll of common Men.
Where is the Living, clipt in with the Sea
That chides the Banks of England, Scotland and Wales,
Which calls me Pupil, or hath read to me?
And bring him out, that is but Woman's Son,
Can trace me in the tedious ways of Art,

And
And hold me pace in deep Experiments.

_Hot._ I think there's no Man speaks better Welf's,
I'll to Dinner.

_Mort._ Peace, Cousin Percy, you will make him mad.

_Glend._ I can call Spirits from the vasty Deep.

_Hot._ Why, so can I, or so can any Man:
But will they come, when you do call for them?

_Glend._ Why, I can teach thee, Cousin, to command the Devil.

_Hot._ And I can teach thee, Cousin, to shame the Devil,
By telling Truth. _Tell Truth, and shame the Devil._
If thou have Power to raise him, bring him hither,
And I'll be sworn, I have Power to shame him hence.
Oh, while you live, tell Truth, and shame the Devil.

_Mort._ Come, come, no more of this unprofitable Chat.

_Glend._ Three times hath Henry Bullingbrook made head
Against my Power; thrice from the Banks of Wye,
And Sandy-bottom'd Severn, have I sent him,
Bootless home, and Weather-beaten back.

_Hot._ Home, without Boots, and in foul Weather too!
How 'capes he Agues in the Devil's Name?

_Glend._ Come, here's the Map: Shall we divide our Right,
According to our threefold Order ta'en?

_Mort._ The Arch-Deacon hath divided it
Into three Limits, very equally:
_England,_ from Trent, and Severn hitherto,
By South and East, is to my part assign'd:
All Westward, _Wales_, beyond the Severn shore,
And all the fertile Land within that bound,
To _Owen Glendower_; and dear Cousin to you
The remnant Northward, lying off from Trent.
And our Indentures Tripartite are drawn:
Which being sealed enterchangeably,
A Business that this Night may execute,
To Morrow, Cousin _Percy_; you and I,
And my good Lord of _Worcester_, will set forth;
To meet your Father, and the _Scottish_ Power,
As is appointed at _Shrewsbury._
My Father _Glendower_ is not ready yet,
Nor shall we need his help these fourteen Days:

Within
Within that space, you may have drawn together
Your Tenants, Friends, and neighbouring Gentlemen.

Glend. A shorter time shall send me to you, Lords:
And in my Conduct shall your Ladies come,
From whom you now must steal, and take no leave,
For there will be a World of Water shed,
Upon the parting of your Wives and you.

Hot. Methinks my Moiety, North from Burton here;
In quantity equals not one of yours:
See, how this River comes me cranking in,
And cuts me from the best of all my Land,
A huge half Moon, a monstrous Cantle out.
I’ll have the Current in this place damm’d up:
And here the Smug and Silver Trent shall run
In a new Channel, fair and evenly:
It shall not wind with such a deep Indent,
To rob of so rich a Bottom here.

Glend. Not wind? It shall, it must, you see it doth.

Mort. Yes, but mark how he bears his Course,
And runs me up, with like advantage on the other side,
Gelding the opposing Continent as much,
As on the other side it takes from you.

Wor. Yes, but a little Charge will trench him here,
And on this North-side win this Cape of Land,
And then he runs straight and even.

Hot. I’ll have it so, a little Charge will do it.
Glend. I’ll not have it alter’d.
Hot. Will not you?
Glend. No, nor you shall not.
Hot. Who shall say me nay?
Glend. Why, that will I.
Hot. Let me not understand you then, speak it in Welsh.
Glend. I can speak English, Lord, as well as you,
For I was train’d up in the English Court:
Where, being but young, I framed to the Harp
Many an English Ditty, lovely well,
And gave the Tongue a helpful Ornament;
A Virtue that was never seen in you.

Hot. Marry, and I am glad of it with all my Heart;
I had rather be a Kitten, and cry mew.

Than
Than one of these same Meete-ballad-mongers,
I had rather hear a Brazen Candlestick tun'd,
Or a dry Wheel grate on the Axel-tree,
And that would set my Teeth on Edge,
Nothing so much as mincing Poetry;
'Tis like the forc'd Gate of a shuffling Nag.

Glend. Come, you shall have Trent turn'd.

Hot. I do not care; I'll give thrice so much Land
To any well-deserving Friend;
But in the way of Bargain, mark ye me,
I'll cavil on the ninth Part of a Hair.
Are the Indentures drawn? Shall we be gone?

Glend. The Moon shines fair,
You may away by Night:
I'll haft the Writer, and withal,
Break with your Wives, of your departure hence:
I am afraid my Daughter will run mad,
So much the doteth on her Mortimer.

[Exit.

Mort. Fie, Cousin Percy, how you cross my Father.

Hot. I cannot chuse; sometime he angers me,
With telling me of the Moldwarp and the Ant,
Of the Dreamer Merlin, and his Prophecies;
And of a Dragon, and a finless Fisht,
A clip-wing'd Griffin, and a moulten Raven,
A couching Lion, and a ramping Cat,
And such a deal of skimble-skamble Stuff,
As puts me from my Faith, I tell you what,
He held me last Night, at least nine Hours,
In reck'ning up the several Devils Names,
That were his Lackeys:
I cry'd him, and well, go too,
But mark'd him not a word. O, he is as tedious
As a tired Horse, a railing Wife,
Worse than a smoaky House. I had rather live
With Cheefe and Garlick in a Windmils far,
Than feed on Cares, and have him talk to me,
In any Summer-house in Chriftendom.

Mort. In faith he was a worthy Gentleman;
Exceeding well read, and profited,
In strange Concealments:
Valiant as a Lion, and wondrous affable,
And as bountiful as Mines of India.
Shall I tell you, Cousin,
He holds your Temper in a high respect,
And curbs himself, even of his natural Scope;
When you do cross his Humour; 'faith he does,
I warrant you, that Man is not alive,
Might so have tempted him, as you have done,
Without the taste of Danger, and Reproof.
But do not use it oft, let me intreat you.

Mort. In faith, my Lord, you are too willful blame,
And since your coming hither, have done enough,
To put him quite besides his Patience:
You must needs learn, Lord, to amend this fault;
Though sometimes it shews Greatness, Courage, Blood;
And that's the dearest grace it renders you;
Yet oftentimes it doth present harsh Rage,
Defect of Manners, want of Government,
Pride, Haughtiness, Opinion, and Disdain:
The least of which, haunting a Nobleman,
Lost in most Hearts, and leaves behind a Stain
Upon the Beauty of all parts besides,
Beguiling them of Commendation.

Hor. Well, I am school'd:
Good-manners be your speed;
Here come our Wives, and let us take our leave.

Enter Glendower, with the Ladies.

Mort. This is the deadly sight that angers me,
My Wife can speak no English, I no Welsh.

Glend. My Daughter weeps, she'll not part with you,
She'll be a Soldier too, she'll to the Wars.

Mort. Good Father tell her, that she and my Aunt Percy
Shall follow in your Conduct speedily,

[Glendower speaks to her in Welsh, and she answers him
in the same.

Glend. She is desperate here:
A peevish self-willed Harlotry,
One that no Persuasion can do good upon.

[The Lady speaks in Welsh!]

Mort.
Mort. I understand thy Looks; that pretty Welsh,
Which thou pow'r'st down from these swelling Heav'ns;
I am too perfect in: And but for shame,
In such a Parly should I answer thee.

[The Lady again in Welsh]

Mort. I understand thy Kises, and thou mine,
And that's a seeble Disputation:
But I will never be a Truant, Love,
'Till I have learn'd thy Language: For thy Tongue
Makes Welsh as sweet as Ditties highly penn'd,
Sung by a fair Queen in a Summer's Bower,
With ravishing Division to her Lute.

Glend. Nay, if thou melt, then will she run mad.

[The Lady speaks again in Welsh]

Mort. O, I am ignorance it fell in this.

Glend. She bids you,
On the wanton Rushes lay you down,
And rest your gentle Head upon her Lap,
And she will sing the Song that pleaseth you,
And on your Eye-lids Crown the God of Sleep,
Charming your Blood with pleasing heaviness;
Making such difference betwixt Wake and Sleep;
As is the difference betwixt Day and Night,
The Hour before the Heav'nly harness'd Team
Begins his golden Progress in the East.

Mort. With all my Heart I'll sit, and hear her sing;
By that time will our Book, I think, be drawn.

Glend. Do so;
And those Musicians that shall play to you,
Hang in the Air a thousand Leagues from hence;
Yet straight they shall be here: Sit, and attend.

Hot. Come, Kate, thou art perfect in lying down:

Come, quick, quick, that I may lay my Head in thy Lap.

Lady. Go, ye giddy Goose.

[The Musick plays.

Hot. Now I perceive the Devil understand Welsh,
And 'tis no marvel he is so humourous:
By'y Lady he's a good Musician.

Lady. Then would you be nothing but Musical,
For you are altogether govern'd by Humours:
Lie still ye Thief, and hear the Lady sing in the.

Hot.
Hot. I had rather hear, Lady, my Brach bowl in Irifh.  
Lady. Would'ft have thy Head broken?  
Hot. No.  
Lady. Then be still.  
Hot. Neither, 'tis a Woman's Fault.  
Lady. Now God help thee.  
Hot. To the Welsh Lady's Bed.  
Lady. What's that?  
Hot. Peace, she sings. [Here the Lady sings a Welsh Song.  
Come, I'll have your Song too.  
Lady. Not mine, in good footh.  
Hot. Not yours, in good footh!  
You swear like a Comfit-maker's Wife, 
Not you, in good footh; and, as true as I live;  
And, as God shall mend me; and, as sure as Day:  
And givest such Sarcenet surey for thy Oaths,  
As if thou never walkst further than Finsbury.  
Swear me, Kate, like a Lady, as thou art,  
A good mouth-filling Oath, and leave Insooth;  
And such protest of Pepper-Ginger-Bread,  
To Velvet-Guards, and Sunday-Citizens.  
Come, sing.  
Lady. I will not sing.  
Hot. 'Tis the next way to turn Tailor, or be Red-breast Teacher: And the Indentures be drawn, I'll away within these two Hours: And so come in, when ye will.  
[Exit.  
Gloe. Come, come, Lord Mortimer, you are as slow,  
As hot Lord Percy is on fire to go,  
By this our Book is drawn: We will but seal,  
And then to Horse immediately.  
Mer. With all my Heart.  
[Exeunt.  

SCENE II.
But be near at Hand,
For we shall presently have need of you. [Exeunt Lords.
I know not whether Heav'n will have it so,
For some displeasing Service I have done;
That in his secret Doom, out of my Blood,
He'll breed Revengement, and a Scourge for me:
But thou dost in thy Passages of Life,
Make me believe, that thou art only mark'd
For the hot Vengeance, and the Rod of Heav'n
To punish my Mis-treadings. Tell me else,
Could such inordinate and low Desires,
Such poor, such base, such lewd, such mean Attempts,
Such barren Pleasures, rude Society,
As thou art match'd withal, and grafted to,
Accompany the Greatness of thy Blood,
And hold their level with thy Princely Heart?

P. Henry. So please your Majesty, I would I could
Quit all Offences with as clear excuse,
As well as I am doubtles I can purge
My self of many I am charg'd withal:
Yet such extenuation let me beg,
As in reproof of many Tales devis'd,
Which oft the Ear of Greatness needs must hear;
By smiling Pick-thanks, and base News-mongers;
I may for some things true, wherein my Youth
Hath faulty wandred, and irregular,
Find Pardon on my true Submission.

K. Henry. Heav'n pardon thee: Yet let me wonder, Harry,
At thy Affections, which do hold a Wing
Quite from the flight of all thy Ancestors.
Thy place in Council thou hast rudely lost,
Which by thy younger Brother is supply'd;
And art almoist an Alien to the Hearts
Of all the Court and Princes of my Blood.
The Hope and Expectation of thy time
Is ruin'd, and the Soul of every Man
Prophetically does fore-think thy Fall.
Had I so lavish of my Presence been,
So common hackney'd in the Eyes of Men;
So stale and cheap to vulgar Company;
Omission, that did help me to the Crown,
Had still kept loyal to Popham's Banishment,
And left me in reputed's Banishment,
A Fellow of no mark nor likelihood.
By being seldom seen, I could not stir,
But like a Comet, I was wondred at;
That Men would tell their Children, This is he.
Others would say, Where? Which is Bullyingbrooke?
And then I stole all Courtesie from Heavn,
And drest my self in such Humility,
That I did pluck Allegiance from Mens Hearts,
Loud Shouts and Salutation from their Mouths,
Even in the Presence of the crowned King.
Thus I did keep my Person fresh and new,
My Presence like a Robe Pontifical,
Ne'er seen, but wondred at; and so my State,
Seldom but sumptuous, shewed like a Feast,
And won by rarenec such Solemnity.
The skipping King, he ambled up and down
With shallow Jeesters, and rash Bavin Wits,
Soon kindled, and soon burnet, carded his State,
Mingled his Royalty with carping Fools,
Had his great Name prophaned with their Scorns,
And gave his Countenance, against his Name,
To laugh at gybing Boys, and stand the push
Of every beardless man's vain comparative:
Grew a Companion to the common Streets,
Enfeoff'd himself to Popularity:
That being daily swallowed by Mens Eyes,
They surrfeited with Honey, and began to loath
The taste of sweetness, whereof a little
More than a little, is by much too much;
So when he had occasion to be seen,
He was but as the Cuckow is in June,
Heard, not regarded; seen, but with Such Eyes;
As thick and deceitful with community,
And no extraordinary gaze,
Such as is bent on Sun-like Majesty,
When it shines seldom in admiring Eyes;
But rather drowz'ed, and hung their Eye-lids down,
Slept in his Face, and rended such aspect
As cloudy Men use to their Adversaries,
Being with his Presence glutted, gorg'd, and full.
And in that very Line, Henry, stand it thou;
For thou hast lost thy Princely Privilege,
With vile Participation. Not an Eye
But is a weary of thy common right,
Save mine, which hath desir'd to see thee more;
Which now doth, that I would not have it do,
Make blind it self with foolish Tenderness.

P. Henry. I shall hereafter, my thrice gracious Lord,
Be more my self.

K. Henry. For all the World,
As thou art to this hour, was Richard' then;
When I from France set forth to Ravenspur;
And even as I was then, is Percy now:
Now by my Scepter, and my Soul to boot,
He hath more worthy Intereft to the State
Than thou the Shadow of Succësion;
For of no Right, nor Colour like to Right,
He doth fill Fields with Harness in the Realm,
Turns Head against the Lion's armed Jaws;
And being no more in Debt to Years than thou,
Leads ancient Lords, and reverend Bishops on
To bloody Battels, and to bruising Arms.
What never-dying Honour hath he got,
Against renowned Douglae, whose high Deeds,
Whose hot Incursions, and great Name in Arms,
Holds from all Soldiers chief Majority,
And Military Title Capital,
Through all the Kingdoms that acknowledge Christ.
Thrice hath the Hot-spur Mars in swathing Cloaths,
This Infant Warrior, in his Enterprizes,
Discomfited great Douglae, ta'en him once,
Enlarged him, and made a Friend of him,
To fill the Mouth of deep Defiance up,
And shake the Peace and Safety of our Throne.
And what say you to this? Percy, Northumberland,
The Arch-Bishop's Grace of York, Douglae and Mortimer,
Capitulate against us, and are up.

Q. But
The First Part of

But wherefore do I tell this News to thee?
Why, Harry, do I tell thee of my Foes,
Which art my nearst and dearest Enemy?
Thou art like enough, through Vassal Fear,
Safe Inclination, and the start of Spleen,
To fight against me under Percy's Pay,
To dog his Heels, and curtse at his Frowns,
To shew how much thou art degenerate.

P. Henry. Do not think so, you shall not find it so:
And Heav'n forgive them, that so much have sway'd
Your Majesty's good Thoughts away from me:
I will redeem all this on Percy's Head,
And in the closing of some glorious Day,
Be bold to tell you, that I am your Son,
When I will wear a Garment all of Blood,
And flain my Favours in a Bloody Mask:
Which wash'd away, shall scowre my Shame with it.
And that shall be the Day, when e'er it lights,
That this same Child of Honour and Renown,
This gallant Hotspur, this all prai'd Knight,
And your unthought-of Harry, chance to meet:
For every Honour sitting on his Helm,
Would they were multitudes, and on my Head
My Shames redoubled. For the time will come,
That I shall make this Northern Youth exchange
His glorious Deeds for my Indigities:
Percy is but my Factor, good my Lord,
To engross up glorious Deeds on my behalf:
And I will call him to so strict account,
That he shall render every Glory up,
Yea, even the slightest Worship of his Time,
Or I will tear the Reckoning from his Heart.
This, in the Name of Heav'n, I promise here:
The which, if I perform, and do survive,
I do beseech your Majesty, may falve
The long-grown Wounds of my Intemperature;
If not, the end of Life cancels all Bonds,
And I will die a hundred thousand Deaths,
Ere break the smallest Parcel of this Vow.

P. Henry. A hundred thousand Rebels die in this:

Thou
Thou shalt have Charge, and Sovereign Trust herein.

Enter Blunt.

How now, good Blunt? Thy Looks are full of speed.

Blunt. So is the Business that I come to speak of.

Lord Mortimer of Scotland hath sent word,
That Douglas and the English Rebels met
The Eleventh of this Month, at Shrewsbury:
A mighty and a fearful Head they are,
If Promises be kept on every Hand,
As ever offered foul Play in a State.

K. Henry. The Earl of Westmorland set forth to Day
With him my Son, Lord John of Lancaster,
For this Advertisement is five Days old.
On Wednesday next, Harry, thou shalt set forward:
On Thursday, we our selves will march.
Our meeting is Bridgenorth: And Harry, you shall march
Through Gloucestershire: By which account,
Our Business valued, some twelve Days hence,
Our general Forces at Bridgenorth shall meet.
Our Hands are full of Business: Let's away,
Advantage feeds them fat, while We delay.  [Exeunt.

SCENE III.

Enter Falstaff and Bardolph:

Fal. Bardolph, am I not fall'n away vilely, since this last Action? Do I not bate? Do I not dwindle? Why my Skin hangs about me like an old Lady's loose Gown: I am withered like an old Apple John. Well I'll repent, and suddenly, while I am in some liking: I shall be out of Heart shortly, and then I shall have no Strength to repent. And I have not forgotten what the inside of a Church is made of, I am a Pepper Corn, a Brewers Horse; the inside of a Church! Company, villainous Company hath been the spoil of me.

Bard. Sir John, you are so fretful, you cannot live long.

Fal. Why there is it; coming me a bawdy Song, to make me merry: I was as virtuously given, as a Gentleman need to be; virtuous enough; sware little, dic'd not above seven times.
times a Week, went to a Bawdy-house not above once in
a Quarter of an Hour, paid Mony that I borrow’d three or
four times; liv’d well, and in good Compass; and now I
live out of all order, out of Compass.

Bard. Why, you are so fat, Sir John, that you must
needs be out of all Compass, out of all reasonable Com-
pass, Sir John.

Eul. Do thou amend thy Face, and I’ll amend my Life.
Thou art our Admiral, thou bearest the Lanthorn in the
Poop, but ’tis in the Nose of thee; thou art the Knight
of the burning Lamp.

Bard. Why, Sir John, my Face does you no harm.

Eul. No, I’ll be sworn; I make as good use of it, as
many a Man doth of a Death’s Head, or a Memento Mori.
I never see thy Face, but I think upon Hell Fire, and Dies
that liv’d in Purple; for there he is in his Robes burning,
if thou went any way given to Virtue. I would swear by
thy Face; my Oath should be, By this Fire: But thou art
altogether given over, and went indeed, but for the Light
in thy Face, the Son of utter Darkness. When thou
rann’t up Gads-hill in the Night to catch my House, if
I did not think thou hadst been an ignis fatuus, or a Ball
of Wild-fire, there’s no Purchase in Mony. O, thou art
a perpetual Triumph, an everlasting Bonfire Light; thou
haft saved me a thousand Marks in Links and Torches,
walking with thee in the Night betwixt Tavern and Ta-
vern; but the Sack that thou haft drunk me, would have
bought me light as good cheap, at the dearest Chand-
ers in Europe. I have maintain’d that Salamander of yours
with Fire. any time this two and thirty Years, Heav’n re-
ward me for it.

Bard. I would my Face were in your Belly.

Eul. So should I be sure to be heart-burn’d.

Enter Hobbs.

How now. Dame Parlet the Hen, have you enquir’d yet
who pick’d my Pocket?

Hob. Why, Sir John, what do you think, Sir John?
Do you think I keep Thieves in my House? I have search’d,
I have enquir’d, so has my Husband, Man by Man, Boy
by Boy, Servant by Servant: The sight of a Hair was ne-
ever lost in my House before.

Eul.
Fal. Ye lie, Hosts; *Rudolph* was shav’d, and lost many a Hair; and I’ll be sworn my Pocket was pick’d; go to, you are a Woman, go.

Host. Who I? I defie thee; I was never call’d so in mine own House before.

Fal. Go to, I know you well enough.

Host. No, Sir *John*: You do not know me, Sir *John*; I know you, Sir *John*; You owe me Mony, Sir *John*, and now you pick a Quarrel to beguile me of it; I bought you a Dozen of Shirts to your Back.

Fal. Dowlas, filthy Dowlas: I have given them away to Bakers’ Wives, and they have made Boulters of them.

Host. Now as I am a true Woman, *Holland* of eight Shillings an Ell: You owe Mony here besides, Sir *John*, for your Diet, and by Drinkings, and Mony lent you, four and twenty Pounds.

Fal. He had his part of it, let him pay.

Host. He? alas! he is poor, he hath nothing.

Fal. How? poor? Look upon his Face: What call you rich? Let him coin his Nose, let him coin his Cheeks, I’ll not pay a Denier. What, will you make a Yonker of me? Shall I not take mine Eafe in mine Inn, but I shall have my Pocket pick’d? I have lost a Seal-Ring of my Grand-father’s, worth forty Mark.

Host. I have heard the Prince tell him, I know not how oft, that that Ring was Copper.

Fal. How? the Prince is a *Jack*, a sneak-Cup, and if he were here, I would cudgel him like a Dog, if he would say so.

Enter Prince Henry marching, and Falstaff meets him, play- ing on his Trunchion like a Fife.

Fal. How now, Lad? is the Wind in that Door? Must we all march?


Host. My Lord, I pray you hear me.

P. Henry. What say’st thou, Mistress Quickly? How does thy Husband? I love him well, he is an honest Man.

Host. Good, my Lord, hear me.

Fal. Prithee let her alone, and lift to me.

P. Henry. What say’st thou, Jack?

Fal. The other Night I fell asleep here behind the Ar-

Q. 4.
ras, and had my Pocket pickt: This House is turn’d Bawdy-houfe, they pick Pockets.

P. Henry. What didst thou lose, Jack?

Fal. Wilt thou believe me, Hal? Three or four Bonds of forry Pound a-piece, and a Seal-Ring of my Grandfather’s.

P. Henry. A Trifle, some eight-penny Matter.

Hof. So I told him, my Lord; and I said, I heard your Grace say so: And, my Lord, he speaks most vilely of you, like a foul-mouth’d Man as he is, and said he would cudgel you.

P. Henry. What! he did not?

Hof. There’s neither Faith, Truth, nor Woman-Hood in me else.

Fal. There’s no more Faith in thee than in a fled’d Pren; nor no more Truth in thee than in a drawn Fox; and for Woman-hood, Maid-Marian may be the Deputy’s Wife of the Ward to thee. Go you nothing, go.

Hof. Say, what thing? What thing?

Fal. What thing? Why a thing to thank Heav’n on.

Hof. I am nothing to thank Heav’n on, I would thou shouldst know it: I am an honest Man’s Wife; and setting thy Knighthood aside, thou art a Knave to call me so.

Fal. Setting thy Womanhood aside, thou art a Beast to say otherwise.

Hof. Say, what Beast, thou Knave thou?

Fal. What Beast, Why an Otter.

P. Henry. An Otter, Sir John, why an Otter?

Fal. Why? she’s neither Fish nor Flesh; a Man knows not where to have her.

Hof. Thou art an unjust Man in saying so; thou, or any Man, knows where to have me, thou Knave thou.

P. Henry. Thou say’st true, Hoftes, and heflanders thee most grossly.

Hof. So he doth you, my Lord, and said this other Day: you ow’d him a thousand Pound.

P. Henry. Sirrah do I owe you a thousand Pound?

Fal. A thousand Pound, Hal? A Million; thy Love is worth a Million: Thou ow’st me thy Love.

Hof. Nay, my Lord, he call’d you Jack, and said he would cudgel you.
Fal. Did I, Bardolph?
Bard. Indeed, Sir John, you said so.
Fal. Yea, if he said my Ring was Copper.
P. Henry. I say 'tis Copper. Dar'st thou be as good as thy Word now?
Fal. Why, Hal, thou know'rt, as thou art but a Man I dare, but as thou art a Prince, I fear thee, as I fear the roaring of the Lion's Whelp.
P. Henry. And why not as the Lion?
Fal. The King himself is to be fear'd as the Lion; do'lt thou think I'll fear thee, as I fear thy Father? Nay if I do, let my Girdle break.
P. Henry. O, if it should, how would thy Guts fall about thy Knees. But, Sirrah, there's no room for Faith, Truth, nor Honesty, in this Bosom of thine; it is all fill'd up with Guts and Midriff. Charge an honest Woman with picking thy Pocket! Why thou whorsom impudent imboast Rascal, if there were any thing in thy Pocket but Tavern Reckonings, Memorandums of Bawdy-Houses, and one poor penny-worth of Sugar-Candy to make thee long-winded; if thy Pocket were enrich'd with any other Injuries but these. I am a Villain; and yet you will stand to it, you will not Pocket up Wrongs. Art thou not ashamed?
Fal. Doft thou hear, Hal? Thou know'rt in the State of Innocency, Adam fell; and what would poor Jack Falstaff do, in the Days of Villainy? Thou seest, I have more Flesh than another Man, and therefore more Fraiety. You confess then you pick't my Pocket!
P. Henry. It appears so by the Story.
Fal. Hoftess, I forgive thee:
Go make ready Breakfast; love thy Husband,
Look to thy Servants, and cherish thy Guests?
Thou shalt find me tractable to any honest Reason:
Thou seest, I am pacify'd still.
Nay, I prithee be gone. [Exit Hoftess.
Now, Hal, to the News at Court for the Robbery, Laid?
How is that answer'd?
P. Henry. O my sweet Beef,
I must still be good Angel to thee,
The Mony is paid back again.
Q. 5
The First Part of

Fal. O, I do not like that paying back; 'tis a double Labour.

P. Henry. I am good Friends with my Father, and may do any thing.

Fal. Rob me the Exchequer the first thing thou do'st, and do it with un-wash'd Hands too.

Bard. Do, my Lord.

P. Henry. I have procured thee, Jack, a Charge of Foot.

Fal. I would it had been of Horse. Where shall I find one that can steal well? O, for a fine Thief, of two and twenty, or thereabout; I am heinously unprovided. Well, God be thanked for these Rebels, they offend none but the virtuous. I laud them, I praise them.

P. Henry. Bardolph.

Bard. My Lord.

P. Henry. Go bear this Letter to Lord John of Lancaster,
To my Brother John. This to my Lord of Westmorland,
Go Peto to Horle; for thou, and I,
Have thirty Miles to ride yet ere Dinner time.

Jack, meet me to Morrow in the Temple-Hall.
At two a Clock in the Afternoon,
There shalt thou know thy Charge, and there receive Mony, and Order for their Furniture.
The Land is burning, Percy stands on high,
And either they, or we, must lower lie.

Fal. Rare Words; brave World,
Houses, my Breakfast, come:
Oh, I could wish this Tavern were my Drum.

[Exeunt;

ACT IV. SCENE I.

Enter Hotspur, Worcester, and Dowglases.

Ext. W ell said, my noble Sess, if speaking Truth
In this fine Age, were not thought Flattery,
Such admiration should the Dowglases have,
As not a Soldier of this Seasons stamp,
Should go so general currant through the World.

By
By Heav'n I cannot flatter: I defie
The Tongues of Soothers. But a braver place
In my Heart's love, hath no Man than your self.
Nay, task me to my Word; approve me, Lord.

Dow. Thou art the King of Honour:
No Man so potent breaths upon the Ground,
But I will hear him.

Enter a Messenger.

Hot. Do So, and 'tis well. What Letters hast thou there?—
I can but thank you.

Meff. These Letters come from your Father.

Hot. Letters from him?

Why comes he not himself?

Meff. He cannot come, my Lord,
He is grievous sick.

Hot. How! Has he the leisure to be sick now,
In such a jangling time? Who leads his Power;
Under whose Government come they along?

Meff. His Letters bear his Mind, not I his Mind.

Wor. I prithee tell me, doth he keep his Bed?

Meff. He did, my Lord, four Days ere I set forth:
And at the time of my Departure thence,
He was much fear'd by his Physician.

Wor. I would the state of time had first been whole;
Ere he by Sickness had been visited;
His Health was never better worth than now.

Hot. Sick now? Droop now? This Sickness doth infect
The very Life-blood of our Enterprize,
'Tis catching hither, even to our Camp.
He writes me here, that inward Sickness—
And that his Friends by deputation
Could not so soon be drawn: Nor did he think it meet
To lay so dangerous and dear a trust
On any Soul remov'd, but on his own.
Yet doth he give us bold Advertisement,
'That with our small Conjunction we should on,
To see how Fortune is disposs'd to us,
For, as he writes, there is no quailing now,
Because the King is certainly pullet
Of all our Purposes. What say you to it?
Hor. Your Father's Sickness is a maim to us.

Hot. A perilous Gash, a very Limb lopt off:
And yet, in faith, 'tis not; his present want
Seems more than we shall find it. Were it good,
To set the exact Wealth of all our States
All at one Caft? To set so rich a Mine
On the nice hazard of one doubtful Hour,
It were not good; for therein should we read
The very Bottom, and the Soul of hope,
The very Lift, the very utmost bound
Of all our Fortunes.

Dow. Faith, and so we should,
Where now remains a sweet Reversion.
We may boldly spend, upon the hope
Of what is to come in:
A comfort of Retirement lives in this.

Hot. A Rendezvous, a Home to flee unto,
If that the Devil and Mischance look big
Upon the Maidenhead of our Affairs.

Hor. But yet I would your Father had been here:
The Quality and Heir of our Attempt
Brooks no Division: It will be thought
By some, that know not why he is away,
That Wisdom, Loyalty, and meer Dislike
Of our Proceedings, kept the Earl from hence.
And think, how such an Apprehension
May turn the Tide of fearful Faction,
And breed a kind of Question in our Cause:
For well you know, we of the offering side,
Must keep aloof from strict arbitrement,
And stop all sight-holes, every loop, from whence
The Eye of Reason may pry in upon us:
This absence of your Father draws a Curtain,
That shews the Ignorant a kind of fear
Before not dreamt of.

Hot. You strain too far.
I rather of his Absence make this use:
It lends a Lustre, and more great Opinion,
A larger Dare to your great Enterprise,
Than if the Earl were here: For Men must think,
If we without his help can make a Head,
To push against the Kingdom; with his help,
We shall o’erturn it topic-turvy down.
Yet all goes well, yet all our Joints are whole;

Dom. As Heart can think:

There is not such a word spoke of in Scotland,
As this Dream of Fear.

Enter Sir Richard Vernon.

Hot. My Cousin Vernon, welcome by my Soul.

Ver. Pray God my News be worth a welcome, Lord,
The Earl of Westmorland, seven thousand strong,
Is marching hither-wards with Prince John.

Hot. No harm; what more?

Ver. And further, I have learn’d,
The King himself in Person hath set forth,
Or hitherwards intended speedily,
With strong and mighty Preparation.

Hot. He shall be welcome too,
Where is his Son?
The nimble-footed Mad-cap, Prince of Wales,
And his Comrades, that daft the World aside,
And bid it pass?

Ver. All furnish, all in Arms,
All plum’d like Estridges, that wing the Wind,
Baited like Eagles, having lately bath’d,
Glittering in Golden Coats, like Images,
As full of Spirit as the Month of May,
And gorgeous as the Sun at Midsummer,
Wanton as youthful Goats, wild as young Bulls:
I saw young Harry, with his Beaver on,
His Cushes on his Thighs, gallantly arm’d,
Rise from the Ground like feather’d Mercury,
And vaulted with such Eafe into his Seat,
As if an Angel dropt down from the Clouds,
To turn and wind a fiery Pegasus,
And witch the World with noble Horsemanship.

Hot. No more, no more;
Worse than the Sun in March,
This Praise doth nourish Agues; let them come,
They come like Sacrifices in their trim,
All to the fire-ey'd Maid of smoaky War,
All hot, and bleeding, will we offer them;
The mailed Mars shall on his Altar sit
Up to the Ears in Blood. I am on fire,
To hear this rich Reprisal is so nigh,
And yet not ours: Come, let me take my Horse;
Who is to bear me like a Thunder-bolt,
Against the Bosom of the Prince of Wales.
Harry to Harry shall, and Horse to Horse
Meet, and ne'er part, 'till one drop down a Coarse!
Oh, that Glendower were come.

Ver. There is more News:
I learn'd in Worcester, as I rode along,
He cannot draw his Power this fourteen Days.

Dow. That's the worst Tidings that I hear of, yet!

Wor. Ay, by my Faith, that bears a frosty Sound.

Hor. What may the King's whole Battle reach unto?

Ver. To thirty thousand.

Hot. Forty let it be,
My Father and Glendower being both away,
The Power of us may serve so great a Day.
Come, let us take a Muster speedily:
Dooms-day is near; die all, die merrily.

Dow. Talk not of dying, I am out of fear
Of Death, or Death's Hand, for this one half Year.

[Exeunt.

SCENE II.

Enter Falstaff and Bardolph.

Fal. Bardolph, get thee before to Coventry; fill me a
Bottle of Sack, our Soldiers shall march through: We'll
to Sutton-cop-hill to Night.

Bard. Will you give me Mony, Captain?

Fal. Lay out, lay out.

Bard. This Bottel makes an Angel.

Fal. And if it do, take it for thy Labour; and if it
make twenty, take them all, I'll answer the Coynage.
Bid my Lieutenant Peto meet me at the Towns end.

Bard. I will, Captain; farewell.

[Exit.

Fal.
Fal. If I be not ashamed of my Soldiers, I am a fowc’d Gurnet: I have mis-us’d the King’s Pesf damnably. I have got, in exchange of an hundred and fifty Soldiers, three Hundred and odd Pounds. I pres me none but good Householders, Yeomens Sons; enquire me out contracted Batchelors, such as had been ask’d twice on the Banes: Such a Commodity of warm Slaves, as had as lieve hear the Devil, as a Drum; such as fear the Report of a Caliver, worse than a struck-Fowl, or a hurt wild Duck. I pres me none but such Toasts and Butter, with Hearts in their Bellies no bigger than Pins Heads, and they have bought out their Services: And now my whole Charge consists of Ancients, Corporals, Lieutenants, Gentlemen of Companies, Slaves as ragged as Lazarus in the painted Cloth, where the Glutton’s Dogs licked his Sores; and such as indeed were never Soldiers, but discarded unjust Servingmen, younger Sons to younger Brothers: Revoluted Tapsters and Offlers, Trade-fall’n, the Cankers of a calm World, and long Peace; ten times more dishonourable, ragged, than an old-fac’d Ancient; and such have I to fill up the Rooms of them that have bought out their Services; that you would think that I had a hundred and fifty tatter’d Prodigals, lately come from Swine-keeping, from eating Draff and Husks. A mad Fellow met me on the Way, and told me, I had unloaded all the Gibbets, and prest the dead Bodies. No Eye hath seen such skar-Crows: I’ll not march through Coventry with them, that’s flat. Nay, and the Villains march wide betwixt the Legs, as if they had Gyves on; for indeed, I had the most of them out of Prison. There’s but a Shirt and a half in all my Company; and the half Shirt is two Napkins tack’d together, and thrown over the Shoulders like a Herald’s Coat without Sleeves; and the Shirt, to say the Truth, fioll’n from my Hoft of St. Albans; or the Red-noze Landkeeper of Daintry. But that’s all one, they’ll find Linnen enough on every Hedge.

Enter Prince Henry, and Westmorland.

P. Henry. How-now, blowen Jack? how now, Quilt?
Fal. What, Hal? How now, mad Wag, what a Devil do'ft thou in Warwickshire? My good Lord of Westmoreland, I cry you mercy, I thought your Honour had already been at Shrewsbury.

West. 'Faith, Sir John, 'tis more than time that I were there, and you too; but my Powers are there already. The King, I can tell you, looks for us all; we must away all to Night.

Fal. Tut, never fear me, I am as vigilant as a Cat, to steal Cream.

P.Henry. I think to steal Cream indeed, for thy theft hath already made thee Butter; but tell me, Jack, whose Fellows are these that come after?

Fal. Mine Hal, mine.

P.Henry. I did never see such pitiful Rascals.

Fal. Tut, tut, good enough to ToS: Food for Powder, food for Powder; they'll fill a Pit, as well as better; turn Man, mortal Men, mortal Men.

West. Ay, but Sir John, methinks they are exceeding poor and bare, too beggarly.

Fal. Faith, for their Poverty, I know not where they had that; and for their Barenness, I am sure they never learn'd that of me.

P.Henry. No, I'll be sworn, unless you call three Fingers on the Ribs, bare. But, Sirrah, make haste. Percy is already in the Field.

Fal. What, is the King encamp'd?

West. He is, Sir John, I fear we shall stay too long.

Fal. Well, to the latter end of a Fray, and the beginning of a Feast, fits a dull Fighter, and a keen Gueft.

[Exeunt.

**SCENE III.**

Enter Hot-Spur, Worcester, Dowglas, and Vernon.

Hot. We'll fight with him to Night.

Wor. It may not be.

Dow. You give him then Advantage.

Per. Not a whit.
Hot. Why say you so? Looks he not for Supply?
Ver. So do we.
Hot. His is certain, ours is doubtful.
Wor. Good Cousin be advis'd, sir not to Night.
Ver. Do not, my Lord.
Dow. You do not counsel well;
You speak it out of Fear, and cold Heart.
Ver. Do me no slander, Douglas: By my Life,
And I dare well maintain it with my Life,
If well-respected Honour bid me on,
I hold as little Counsel with weak Fear,
As you, my Lord, or any Scot that this Day lives.
Let it be seen to Morrow in the Battel,
Which of us fears.
Dow. Yea, or to Night.
Ver. Content.
Hot. To Night, say I.
Ver. Come, come, it may not be.

I wonder much, being Men of such great Leading as you
That you foresee not what Impediments
Drag back our Expedition; certain Horse
Of my Cousin Vernon's are not yet come up,
Your Uncle Worcester's Horse came but to Day,
And now their Pride and Mettle is asleep,
Their Courage with hard Labour tame and dull,
That not a Horse is half the half of himself.
Hot. So are the Horses of the Enemy
In general, journey-bated, and brought low:
The better part of ours are full of rest.
Wor. The number of the King's exceedeth ours:
For God's sake, Cousin, stay 'till all come in.
The Trumpet sounds a Parley. Enter Sir Walter Blunt;
Blunt. I come with gracious Offers from the King,
If you vouchsafe me hearing, and respect.
Hot. Welcome, Sir Walter Blunt: And would to God
You were of our Determination,
Some of us love you well; and even those some
Envy your great Deservings, and good Name,
Because you are not of our Quality,
But stand against us like an Enemy.

_Blunt._ And Heav'n defend, but still I should stand so,
So long as out of Limit, and true Rule,
You stand against anointed Majesty.

But to my Charge.—The King hath sent to know
The Nature of your Grieves, and whereupon
You conjure from the Breast of civil Peace,
Such bold Hostility, teaching his dutious Land
Audacious Cruelty. If that the King
Have any way your good Deserts forgot,
Which he confesseth to be manifold,
He bids you name your Grieves; and with all speed
You shall have your Desires, with Interest:
And Pardon absolute for your self, and these,
Herein mislaid by your Suggestion.

_Est._ The King is kind:
And well we know, the King
Knows at what time to Promise, when to Pay.
My Father, my Uncle, and my self,
Did give him that fame Royalty he wears:
And when he was not fix and twenty strong,
Sick in the World's regard, wretched and low,
A poor unminded Out-law, sneaking home,
My Father gave him welcome to the Shore:
And when we heard him swear, and vow to God,
He came to be but Duke of Lancaster,
To sue his Livery, and beg his Peace,
With Tears of Innocency, and terms of Zeal:
My Father, in kind Heart and Pity mov'd,
Swore him assistance, and perform'd it too.
Now, when the Lords and Barons of the Realm
Perceiv'd Northumberland did lean to him,
They more and less came in with Cap and Knee,
Met him in Boroughs, Cities, Villages,
Attended him on Bridges, stood in Lanes,
Laid Gifts before him, proffer'd him their Oaths,
Gave him their Heirs, as Pages followed him,
Even at the Heels, in golden Multitudes.
He presently, as Greatness knows it self.
Steps me a little higher than his Vow
Made to my Father, while his Blood was poor,
Upon the naked Shore at Ravensburg:
And now, forsooth, takes on him to reform
Some certain Edicts, and some straight Decrees;
That lay too heavy on the Commonwealth;
Cries out upon Abuses, seems to weep
Over his Country's Wrongs; and by his Face,
This seeming Brow of Justice, did he win
The Hearts of all that he did angle for.
Proceeded further, cut me off the Heads
Of all the Favourites, that the absent King
In Deputation left behind here,
When he was personal in the Irish War.

Blunt. Tut, I came not to hear this.

Hot. Then to the Point.

In short time after, he depos'd the King,
Soon after that, depriv'd him of his Life:
And in the Neck of that, task'd the whole State;
To make that worse, suffer'd his Kinsman March,
Who is, if every Owner were right plac'd,
Indeed his King, to be engag'd in Wales,
There, without Ransom, to lie forfeited:
Disgrac'd me in my happy Victories,
Sought to intrap me by Intelligence,
Ratted my Uncle from the Council Board,
In Rage dismis'd my Father from the Court;
Broke Oath on Oath, committing Wrong on Wrong;
And in conclusion, drove us to seek out
This Head of Safety; and withal, to pry
Into his Title; the which we find
Too indirect, for long continuance.

Blunt. Shall I return this Answer to the King?

Hot. Not so, Sir Walter.

We'll withdraw a while:
Go to the King, and let there be impawn'd
Some surety for a safe Return again:
And in the Morning early shall my Uncle
Bring him our Purpose; and so farewell.
Blunt. I would you would accept of Grace and Love.
Hot. And't may be, so we shall.
Blunt. Pray Heav'n you do.

SCENE IV.

Enter the Archbishop of York, and Sir Michell.

York. Hic. good Sir Michell, bear this sealed Brief
With wings hast to the Lord Marshal,
This to my Cousin Scroop, and all the rest
To whom they are directed.
If you knew how much they do import,
You would make haste.

Sir Michell. My good Lord, I guess their Tenour;
York. Like enough you do.
To Morrow, good Sir Michell, is a Day,
Wherein the Fortune of ten thousand Men
Must bide the Touch. For, Sir, at Shrewsbury,
As I am truly given to understand,
The King with mighty and quick raised Power,
Meets with Lord Harry; and I fear, Sir Michell,
What with the Sickness of Northumberland,
Whose Power was in the first Proportion;
And what with Owen Glendower's Absence thence,
Who with them was rated firmly too.
And comes not in, over-rul'd by Prophecies,
I fear the Power of Percy is too weak,
To wage an instant Trial with the King.

Sir Michell. Why, my good Lord, you need not fear,
There is Douglass, and Lord Mortimer.

York. No, Mortimer is not there.
Sir Michell. But there is Morsake, Vernon, Lord Harry Percy,
And there is my Lord of Worcester,
And a Head of gallant Warriors,
Noble Gentlemen.

York. And so there is, but yet the King hath drawn
The special Head of all the Land together:
The Prince of Wales, Lord John of Lancaster,
The noble Westmorland, and warlike Blunt;
And many more Corivals, and dear Men
Of Estimation, and command in Arms.

Sir Michell. Doubt not, my Lord, he shall be well oppos'd.

York. I hope no less: Yet needful 'tis to fear,
And to prevent the worst, Sir Michell speed;
And if Lord Percy thrive not, ere the King
Dismiss his Power, he means to visit us;
For he hath heard of our Confederacy,
And, 'tis but Wisdom to make strong against him:
Therefore make haste, I must go write again
To other Friends; and so farewell, Sir Michell. [Exeunt.

ACT V. SCENE I.

Enter King Henry; Prince of Wales, Lord John of Lancaster;
Earl of Wiltmorland, Sir Walter Blunt, and Falstaff.

K. Henry. How bloodily the Sun begins to peer
Above yon busky Hill: The Day looks pale
At his distemperature.

P. Henry. The Southern Wind
Doth play the Trumpet to his Purposes,
And by his hollow whistling in the Leaves,
Foretels a Tempest, and a blustering Day.

K. Henry. Then with the Losers let it sympathize,
For nothing can seem sower to them that win.
[The Trumpet sounds.

Enter Worcester.

K. Henry. How now, my Lord of Worcester? 'Tis not well,
That you and I should meet upon such Terms,
As now we meet. You have deceiv'd our Truits,
And made us doff our easie Robes of Peace,
To crush our old Limbs in ungentle Steel:
This is not well, my Lord, this is not well.
What say you to it? Will you again unknit
This churlish Knot of all-abhorred War;
And move in that obedient Orb again,
Where you did give a fair and natural Light,
And be no more an exhal'd Meteor,
A Prodigy of Fear, and a Portent
Of broached Mischief, to the unborn Times?

Wor. Hear me, my Liege:
For mine own Part, I could be well content
To entertain the Lag-end of my Life
With quiet Hours: For I do protest,
I have not sought the Day of this dislike.

K Henry. You have not sought it; how comes it then?

Ed. Rebellion lay in his way, and he found it.

P. Henry. Peace, Chewet, peace.

Wor. It pleas'd your Majesty, to turn your Looks
Of Favour, from my Self, and all our House;
And yet I must remember you, my Lord,
We were the first, and dearest of your Friends:
For you, my Staff of Office did I break
In Richard's Time, and posted Day and Night
To meet you on the way, and kiss your Hand;
When yet you were in place, and in account
Nothing so strong and fortunate, as I:
It was my self, my Brother, and his Son,
That brought you home, and boldly did out-dare
The danger of the time. You swore to us,
And you did swear that Oath at Doncaster,
That you did nothing purpose 'gainst the State,
Nor claim no further, than your new fal'n Right;
The Seat of Gaunt, Dukedom of Lancaster.

To this, we swore our Aid: But in short Space,
It rain'd down Fortune, showering on your Head,
And such a Flood of Greatnes fell on you,
What with our help, what with the abient King,
What with the Injuries of wanton Time,
The seeming Sufferances that you had born,
And the contrarious Winds that hald the King
So long in the unlucky Irish Wars,
That all in England did repulse him dead;
And from this swarm of fair Advantages,
You took occasion to be quickly food,
To gripe the general Sway into your Hand:
Forgot your Oath to us at Doncaster,
And being fed by us, you told us so,
As that ungentle Gull, the Cuckow's Bird,
Useth the Sparrow, did oppress our Nest,
Grew by our Feeding, to so great a Bulk,
That even our Love durst not come near your Sight;
For fear of swallowing; but with nimble Wing
We were inforc'd for safety's sake, to fly
Out of your Sight, and raise this present Head,
Whereby we stand opposed by such means
As you your self have forg'd against your self,
By unkind Usage, dangerous Countenance,
And violation of all Faith and Truth
Sworn to us in your younger Enterprize.

K. Henry. These things indeed you have articulated,
Proclaim'd at Market Crosses, read in Churches,
To face the Garment of Rebellion
With some fine Colour, that may please the Eye
Of fickle Changelings, and poor Discontents,
Which gape, and rub the Elbow at the News
Of hurly burly Innovation:
And never yet did Insurrection want
Such Water-colours, to impaint his Cause;
Nor moody Beggars, starving for a Time
Of pell mell Havock, and Confusion.

P Henry. In both our Armies, there is many a Soul
Shall pay full dearly for this Encounter,
If once they join in trial. Tell your Nephew,
The Prince of Wales doth join with all the World
In praise of Henry Percy: By my Hopes,
This present Enterprize set off his Head,
I do not think a braver Gentleman,
More Active, Valiant, or more valiant Young,
More daring, or more bold, is now alive,
To grace this latter Age with noble Deeds.
For my Part, I may speak it to my Shame,
I have a Truant been to Chivalry,
And so, I hear, he doth account me too:
Yet this before my Father's Majesty,
I am content that he shall take the odds
Of his great Name and Estimation,
And will, to save the Blood on either side,
Try Fortune with him, in a single Fight.

K. Henry. And, Prince of Wales, so dare we venture thee;
Albeit, Considerations infinite
Do make against it: No, good Worcester, no,
We love our People well; even those we love
That are mis-led upon your Cousin’s Part:
And will they take the Offer of our Grace;
Both he, and they, and you, yea, every Man
Shall be my Friend again, and I’ll be his.
So tell your Cousin, and bring me word
What he will do. But if he will not yield,
Rebuke and dread Correction wait on us,
And they shall do their Office. So be gone,
We will not now be troubled with Reply.
We offer fair, take it advisedly. [Exit Worcester;

P. Henry. It will not be accepted, on my Life.

The Douglas and the Hot spur both together,
Are confident against the World in Arms.

K. Henry. Hence therefore, every Leader to his Charge:
For on their Answer will we set on them:
And God befriend us, as our Cause is just. [Exeunt.

Manent Prince Henry and Falstaff.

Fal. Hal, if thou see me down in the Battel,
And befriend me, so; ’tis a point of Friendship.

P. Henry. Nothing but a Colossus can do thee that Friend-
Say thy Prayers, and farewell. [ship:

Fal. I would it were Bed time, Hal, and all well.

P. Henry. Why, thou owest Heav’n a Death.

Fal. ’Tis not due yet: I would be loth to pay him before
his Day. What need I be so forward with him that
calls not on me? Well, ’tis no Matter, Honour pricks me on.
But how if Honour pricks me off when I come on?
How then? Can Honour set to a Leg? No. Or an Arm?
No. Or take away the Grief of Wound? No. Honour
hath no Skill in Surgery then? No. What is Honour? A
word. What is that word Honour? Ayre; a trim reck-
oning. Who hath it? He that dy’d a Wednesday. Doth
he feel it? No. Doth he hear it? No. Is it insensible
then? Yea, to the dead. But will it not live with the
living?
living? No. Why? Detraction will not suffer it, therefore
I'll none of it. Honour is a meer Scutcheon, and so ends
my Catechism.

[Exit.

SCENE II.


Wor. O no, my Nephew must not know, Sir Richard;
The liberal kind Osher of the King,

Ver. 'Twere best he did.

Wor. Then we are all undone.

It is not possible, it cannot be,
The King would keep his Word in loving us,
He will suspeét us still, and find a time
To punish this Offence in other Faults:
Suspicion, all our Lives, shall be stuck full of Eyes;
For Treason is but trusted like the Fox,
Who ne'er fo tame, so cherish'd, and lock'd up,
Will have a wild trick of his Ancestors;
Look how we can, or fad, or merrily,
Interpretation will misquote our Looks,
And we shall feed like Oxen at a Stall,
The better cherish'd, still the nearer Death.
My Nephew's Trespass may be well forgot,
It hath the excuse of Youth, and heat of Blood,
And an adopted Name of Privilege,
A hare-brain'd Hot-spur, govern'd by a Spleen:
All his Offences live upon my Head,
And on his Father's. We did train him on,
And his Corruption being ta'en from us,
We as the Spring of all, shall pay for all:
Therefore, good Cousin, let not Harry know,
In any case, the Offer of the King.

Ver. Deliver what you will, I'll say 'tis so.

Here comes your Cousin.

Enter Hot-spur and Dowglass.

Hot. My Uncle is return'd:
Deliver up my Lord of Westmorland.
Uncle, what News?

Wor. The King will bid you Battel presently.

Dow. Defie him by the Lord of Westmorland.
Hot. Lord Dowglas; go you and tell him so.
Dow. Marry and shall, and very willingly.

[Exit Dowglas.

Wor. There is no seeming Mercy in the King.
Hot. Did you beg any? God forbid.
Wor. I told him gently of our Grievances,
Of his Oath-breaking; which he mended thus,
By now forswearing that he is forsworn,
He calls us Rebels, Traitors, and will scourge
With haughty Arms, this hateful Name in us.

Enter Dowglas.

Dow. Arm, Gentlemen, to Arms, for I have thrown
A brave Defiance in King Henry's Teeth:
And Westmorland that was ingag'd did bear it,
Which cannot chuse but bring him quickly on.
Wor. The Prince of Wales stept forth before the King;
And, Nephew, challeng'd you to single Fight.

Hot. O, would the Quarrel lay upon our Heads,
And that no Man might draw short Breath to Day,
But I and Harry Monmouth. Tell me, tell me,
How shew'd his Talking? Seem'd it in Contempt?
Ver. No by my Soul: I never in my Life
Did hear a Challenge urg'd more modestly,
Unless a Brother should a Brother dare,
To gentle Exercise and proof of Arms.
He gave you all the Duties of a Man,
Trim'd up your Praises with a princely Tongue;
Spoke your Deservings like a Chronicle,
Making you ever better than his Praise,
By still dispraising Praise, valu'd with you:
And which became him like a Prince indeed,
He made a blushing Cical of himself,
And chid his trev'ant Youth so with a Grace,
As if he master'd there a double Spirit
Of teaching and of learning instantly:
There did he pause. But let me tell the World,
If he out-live the Envy of this Day,
England did never owe so sweet a Hope,
So much misconstrued in his Wantonness.

Hot. Cousin, I think thou art enamoured
On his Follies; never did I hear
Of any Prince so wild at Liberty.
But be he as he will, yet once ere Night
I will embrace him with a Soldier’s Arm,
That he shall shrink under my Courtesie.
Arm, arm with speed. And Fellows, Soldiers, Friends;
Better consider what you have to do,
Than I, that have not well the gift of Tongue,
Can lift your Blood up with Persuasion.

Enter a Messenger.

Mess. My Lord, here are Letters for you.

Hot. I cannot read them now.

O Gentlemen, the time of Life is short:
To spend that Shortness basely were too long;
Tho’ Life did ride upon a Dial’s Point,
Still ending at the Arrival of an Hour.
And if we live, we live to tread on Kings:
If die; brave Death, when Princes die with us.
Now for our Consciences, the Arms are fair,
When the Intent for bearing them is just.

Enter another Messenger.

Mess. My Lord, prepare, the King comes on apace.

Hot. I thank him, that he cuts me from my Tale,
For I profess not talking: Only this,
Let each Man do his best. And here I draw my Sword,
Whose worthy Temper I intend to stain
With the best Blood that I can meet withal,
In the Adventure of this perilous Day.
Now Esperance, Percy, and set on:
Sound all the lofty Instruments of War.
And by that Muse, let us all embrace:
For Heav’n to Earth, some of us never shall

A second time do such a Courtesie.

They embrace, then Execute. The Trumpets sound, the
King entreat with his Power; Alarm to the Battel. Then
enter Dowglas and Sir Walter Blunt.

Blunt. What is thy Name, that in Battel thus thou crosseth
What Honour doft thou seek upon my Head?

Dow. Know then, my name is Dowglas;
And I do haunt thee in the Battel thus,
Because some tell me that thou art a King.

Blunt. They tell thee true.

Dow. The Lord of Stafford dear to Day hath bought
Thy Likeness; for instead of thee, King Harry,
This Sword hath ended him, so shall it thee,
Unless thou yield thee as a Prisoner.

Blunt. I was not born to yield, thou haughty Scot,
And thou shalt find a King that will revenge
Lord Stafford’s Death.

Exe. Blunt is slain, then enter Hot-spur.

Hot. O Douglas! hast thou fought at Holmedon thus,
I never had triumphed o’er a Scot.

Dow. All’s done, all’s won, here breathless lies the King.

Hot. Where?

Dow. Here.

Hot. This Douglas? No, I know this Face full well:
A gallant Knight: his name was Blunt,
Sensibly furnish’d like the King himself.

Low. Ah! Fool go with thy Soul whither it goes,
A borrow’d Title hast thou bought too dear.

Why didst thou tell me, that thou wert a King?

Hot. The King hath many marching in his Coats.

Dow. Now by my Sword, I will kill all his Coats,
I’ll murther all his Wardrobe Piece by Piece,
Untill I meet the King.

Hot. Up and away.

Our Soldiers stand full fairly for the Day. [Exeunt.

Alarm, enter Falstaff solus.

Fal. Though I could scape shot-free at London, I fear
the Shot here: Here’s no scorning, but upon the Pate. Soft,
who art thou? Sir Walter Blunt? there’s Honour for you;
here’s no Vanity; I am as hot as molten Lead, and as
heavy too: Heav’n keep Lead out of me, I need no more
Weight than mine own Bowels. I have led my Rag-o-
Muffins where they are pepper’d; there’s not three of my
Hundred and fifty left alive, and they for the Towns end
to beg during Life. But who comes here?

Enter Prince Henry.

P. Henry. What, standst thou idle here! lend me thy Sword,
Many a noble Man lies stark and stiff

Under
Under the Hoofs of vaunting Enemies,
Whose Deaths are unreveng'd. Prithee lend me thy Sword.

Fal. O Hal, I prithee give me leave to breath a while.
Turk Gregory never did such Deeds in Arms, as I have
done this Day. I have paid Percy, I have made him sure.
P. Henry. He is indeed, and living to kill thee:
I prithee lend me thy Sword.

Fal. Nay, Hal, if Percy be alive, thou get'lt not my
Sword: but take my Pistol if thou wilt.
P. Henry. Give it me: What, is it in the Cafe?

Fal. Ay Hal, 'tis hot. There's that will sack a City.

[The Prince draws out a Bottle of Sack.]
P. Henry. What, is it a time to jest and dally now?

[Throws it at him, and exit.]

Fal. If Percy be alive, I'll pierce him; if he do come
in my way, so; if he do not, if I come in his, willingly,
let him make a Carbonado of me. I like not such teasing
Honour as Sir Walter hath: Give me Life, which if I can
save, so; if not, Honour comes unlook'd for, and there's
an end.

[Exit.

SCENE III.

Alarm, Excursions, Enter the King, the Prince, Lord John
of Lancaster, and the Earl of Westmorland.

K. Henry. I prithee, Harry, with draw thy self, thou bleed-
est too much: Lord John of Lancaster, go you with him.

Lan. Not I, my Lord, unless I did bleed too.
P. Henry. I beseech your Majesty make up,
Left your Retirement do amaze your Friends.

K. Henry. I will do so;
My Lord of Westmorland, lead him to his Tent.

West. Come my Lord, I'll lead you to your Tent.
P. Henry. Lead me, my Lord! I do not need your Help,
And Heav'n forbid a shallow Scratch should drive
The Prince of Wales from such a Field as this,
Where stain'd Nobility lies trodden on,
And Rebels Arms triumph in Maccacres.

Lan. We breath too long; come Cousin Westmorland,
Our Duty this Way lies, for Hav'n's fake come.

R 3

P. Henry.
The First Part of

P. Henry. By Heaven thou hast deceiv'd me, Lancaster,
I did not think thee Lord of such a Spirit:
Before, I lov'd thee as a Brother, John;
But now, I do respect thee as my Soul.

K. Henry. I saw him hold Lord Percy at the Point,
With lusher Maintenance than I did look for
Of such an ungrown Warrior.

P. Henry. O this Boy, lends Matter to us all. [Exit.
Enter Douglass.

Douglass. Another King? They grow like Hydra's Heads:
I am the Douglass fatal to all those
That wear those Colours on them. What art thou
That counterfeit'st the Person of a King?

K. Henry. The King himself, who, Douglass, grieves at
Heart
So many of his Shadows thou hast met,
And not the very King. I have two Boys
Seek Percy and thy self about the Field;
But seeing thou fall'st on me so luckily
I will save thee: So defend thy self.

Douglass. I fear thou art another Counterfeit;
And yet in faith thou be'st thee like a King;
But mine I am sure thou art, who e'er thou be,
And thus I win thee. [They fight. The King being in Danger,

Enter Prince Henry.

P. Henry. Hold up thy Head, vile Scot, or thou art like
Never to hold it up again: The Spirits
Of valiant Sherly, Stafford, Bhart, are in my Arms;
It is the Prince of Wales that threatens thee,
Who never promiseth, but means to pay.

[They fight. Douglass flyeth.

Chearly, my Lord; how fares your Grace?
Sir Nicholas Gamsey hath for Succour sent,
And I had Cusion: I'll to Cifon freight.

K. Henry. Stay, and breathe a while.
Thou hast redeem'd my lost Opinion,
And shew'd thou mak'st some tender of my Life
In this fair Rescue thou hast brought to me.

P. Henry. O Heav'n, they did me too much Injury;

That
That ever said I hearkned to your Death.
If it were so, I might have let alone
The insulting Hand of Douglas over you,
Which would have been as speedy in your end,
As all the poisonous Potions in the World,
And sav'd the treacherous Labour of your Son.

K. Henry. Make up to Clifton, I'll to Sir Nicholas Garsye.

Enter Hot-Spur.

Hot. If I mistake not, thou art Harry Marmouth.
P. Henry. Thou speakest as if I would deny my Name.
Hot. My Name is Harry Percy.
P. Henry. Why then I see
A very valiant Rebel of that Name.
I am the Prince of Wales; and think not, Percy,
To share with me in Glory any more:
Two Stars keep not their Motion in one Sphere,
Nor can one England brook a double Reign,
Of Harry Percy and the Prince of Wales.

Hot. Nor shall it, Harry, for the Hour is come
To end the one of us; and would to Heavn
 Thy Name in Arms were now as great as mine.
P. Henry. I'll make it greater, ere I part from thee,
And all the budding Honours on thy Crest
I'll crop, to make a Garland for my Head.

Hot. I can no longer brook thy Vanities.  [Fight.

Enter Falstaff.

Fal. Well said, Hal, to it Hal. Nay, you shall find no
Boys play here, I can tell you.

Enter Douglas, he fights with Falstaff, who falls down
as if he were dead. The Prince kills Percy.

Hot. Oh Harry thou hast robb'd me of my Youth:
I better brook the Loss of brittle Life,
Than those proud Titles thou hast won of me,
They wound my Thoughts worse than thy Sword my Flesh:
But Thought's the Slave of Life, and Life Time's Fool;
And Time, that takes Survey of all the World,
Must have a stop. O, I could prophezie,
But that the Earth, and the cold Hand of Death,
Lyes on my Tongue: No, Percy, thou art Dust,
And Food for ——

[Dies.
P. Henry.
P. Henry. For Worms, brave Percy. Farewel, great Heart:
I'll weav'd Ambition, how much art thou shrunk!
When that this Body did contain a Spirit,
A Kingdom for it was too small a Bound:
But now two Paces of the vilest Earth
Is room enough. This Earth that bears thee dead,
Bears not alive so flout a Gentleman.
If thou wert sensibl.e of Courtesie,
I should not make so great a show of Zeal.
But let my Favours hide thy mangled Face,
And even in thy behalf, I'll thank my self
For doing these fair Rites of Tenderness.
Adieu, and take thy Praife with thee to Heav'n,
Thy Ignominy sleep with thee in the Grave,
But not remembred in thy Epitaph. [He seers Falstaff.
What! Old Acquaintance! Could not all this Flesh
Keep in a little Life? Poor Jack, farewel,
I could have better par'd a better Man.
O, I should have a heavy misf of thee,
If I were much in love with Vanity.
Death hath not struck so fat a Deer to Day,
Though many a dearer in this bloody Fray:
Imbower'd will I see thee by and by,
'Till then, in Blood by noble Percy lye.

Exit. Falstaff rifes.

Fal. Imbower'd! If thou imbowl me to Day, I'll give
you leave to Powder me, and eat me too to Morrow.
Twas time to counterfeit, or that hot Termagant Scor had
paid me fct and lot too. Counterfeit?—I am no coun-
terfeit; to die, is to be a Counterfeit, for he is but the
Counterfeit of a Man, who hath not the Life of a Man:
But to counterfeit dying, when a Man thereby liveth, is
to be no Counterfeit, but the true and perfect Image of
Life indeed. The better part of Valour, is Discretion; in
the which better part, I have saved my Life. I am afraid
of this Gun-Powder Percy, though he be dead. How if
he should Counterfeit too, and rife? I am afraid he would
prove the better Counterfeit; therefore I'll make him
sure; yes, and I'll swear I kill'd him. Why may not he
rise as well as I? Nothing confutes me but Eyes, and no
Body,
Body sees me. Thércfore, Sirrah, with a new Wound in your Thigh come you along with me.

[Takes Hot-Spur on his Back.]

Enter Prince Henry and John of Lancaster.

P. Henry. Come Brother John, full bravely haft thou Thy Maiden Sword [fiesht

Lan. But soft, who have we here?

Did you not tell me this fat Man was dead?

P. Henry. I did, I saw him dead,

Breathles, and bleeding on the Ground: Art thou alive,

Or is it Fantasie that plays upon our Eye-light?

I prihhee speak, we will not trust our Eyes

Without our Ears. Thou art not what thou seemst.

Fal. No, that’s certain; I am not a double Man; but if

I am not Jack Falstaff, then am I a Jack: There is Percy,

if your Father will do me any Honour, so; if not let him

kill the next Percy himself. I look either to be Earl or

Duke, I can assure you.

P. Henry. Why, Percy I kill’d, my self, and saw thee dead.

Fal. Did’t thou? Lord, Lord, how the World is given
to Lying! I grant you I was down, and out of Breath,
and so was he, but we rose both at an instant, and fought
along Hour by Shrewsbury Clock: If I may be believed, so;
if not, let them that should reward Valour bear the Sin up-
on their own Heads. I’ll take’t on my Death I gave him
this Wound in the Thigh: if the Man were alive, and
would deny it, I would make him eat a piece of my
Sword.

Lan. This is the strangest Tale that e’er I heard.

P. Henry. This is the strangest Fellow, Brother John.

Come bring your Luggage nobly no your Back:

For my part, if a Lie may do thee grace,

I’ll gild it with the happiest Terms I have.

[A Retreat is founded.]
I'll grow less; for I'll purge, and leave Sack, and live cleanly, as a noble Man should do. [Exit.

SCENE IV.

The Trumpets sound: Enter King Henry, Prince of Wales; Lord John of Lancaster, Earl of Westmorland, with Worcester and Vernon Prisoners.

K. Henry. Thus ever did Rebellion find Rebuke. Ill-spirited Worcester, did we not send Grace, Pardon, and Terms of Love to all of you? And would'st thou turn our Offers contrary? Misufe the Tenor of thy Kinsman's Tryst? Three Knights upon our Party slain to Day, A noble Earl and many a Creature else Had been alive this Hour,
If like a Christian thou had'st truly born, Betwixt our Armies, true Intelligence.

Wor. What I have done, my Safety urg'd me to,
And I embrace this Fortune patiently,
Since not to be avoided, it falls on me.

K. Henry. Bear Worcester to death, and Vernon too. Other Offenders we will pause upon.


How goes the Field?

P. Henry. The noble Scot, Lord Dowglas, when he saw
The Fortune of the Day quite turn'd from him,
The noble Percy slain, and all his Men
Upon the foot of Fear, fled with the rest;
And falling from a Hill, he was so bruiz'd
That the Pursuers took him. At my Tent
The Dowglas is, and I beseech your Grace
I may dispose of him.

K. Henry. With all my Heart.

P. Henry. Then Brother John of Lancaster,
To you this Honourable Bounty shall belong:
Go to the Dowglas, and deliver him
Up to his Pleasure, ransomless and free:
His Valour shewn upon our Crefts to Day,
Hath taught us how to cherish such high Deeds,
Even in the Bosom of our Adversaries.

K. Henry. Then this remains; that we divide our Power;
You Son [John], and my Cousin Westmorland,
Towards York shall bend you, with your dearest speed
To meet Northumberland, and the Prelate Scroop,
Who, as we hear, are busily in Arms.
My self and my Son Harry will towards Wales,
To fight with Glendower, and the Earl of March.
Rebellion in this Land shall lose his way,
Meeting the Check of such another Day;
And since this Business so far is done,
Let us not leave till all our own be won.  [Exeunt]


P. 52. Heb. nod.
P. 82. heat.
P. 87. chūn. v. Eng.
P. 100. the dead king.
P. 115.
P. 118. blank leaf. +.